



CORNELL  
UNIVERSITY  
LIBRARY



BOUGHT WITH THE INCOME  
OF THE SAGE ENDOWMENT  
FUND GIVEN IN 1891 BY  
HENRY WILLIAMS SAGE





# Cornell University Library

The original of this book is in  
the Cornell University Library.

There are no known copyright restrictions in  
the United States on the use of the text.







**RECORDS**  
**OF**  
**PLYMOUTH COLONY.**  
**LAWS.**  
**1623—1682.**



RECORDS  
OF THE  
COLONY  
OF  
NEW PLYMOUTH  
IN  
NEW ENGLAND.

PRINTED BY ORDER OF THE LEGISLATURE OF THE  
COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

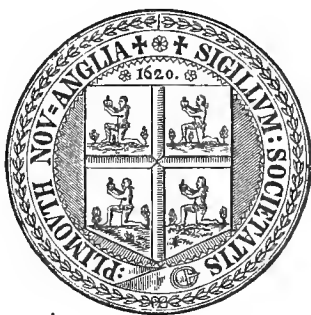
EDITED BY

DAVID PULSIFER,

CLERK IN THE OFFICE OF THE SECRETARY OF THE COMMONWEALTH,  
MEMBER OF THE NEW ENGLAND HISTORIC-GENEALOGICAL SOCIETY, FELLOW OF THE AMERICAN STATISTICAL ASSOCIATION,  
CORRESPONDING MEMBER OF THE ESSEX INSTITUTE, AND OF THE RHODE ISLAND, NEW YORK,  
CONNECTICUT, WISCONSIN AND IOWA HISTORICAL SOCIETIES.

LAWS.

1623—1682.



BOSTON:  
FROM THE PRESS OF WILLIAM WHITE,  
PRINTER TO THE COMMONWEALTH.

1861.

*EW*



N53++  
v.11

A.3120.



*Sage*

117

000000  
000000

## INTRODUCTION.

---

**I**N this volume is contained a copy of the manuscript lettered "PLYMOUTH COLONY RECORDS, LAWS, 1623-1681," consisting of three Parts, I, II, and III, having been so arranged and numbered by the late Benjamin R. Nichols, Esq., who states, in an accompanying note, that "the reason of its being divided into three Parts is, that it was before contained in several volumes."

The manuscript volume is principally in the handwriting of Secretary Morton. Pages 5 to 44, of Part I, inclusive, are almost entirely in the handwriting of Edward Winslow, Governor. Pages 45 to 73 appear to be in the handwriting of Nathaniel Sowther. Pages 2, 3, and 4, and the Orders of the General Court commencing 20th October, 1646, page 73, and ending on page 76, were written by an unknown hand. The remainder of the volume, commencing with page 77, Part I, is in the handwriting of Secretary Morton.

Portions of the Orders on the second and third pages, which by time and accident have become illegible, are restored from a copy of these Orders in the first volume of Deeds; and a manuscript volume of the Laws belonging to the town of Scituate has been of great service in supplying some deficiencies and illegible portions; all of which additions and corrections, whether in the text or margin, are printed in brackets [ ], and in some cases with the letter S. appended.

The Laws were revised in 1636, 1658, and 1671. In 1673 the Court "ordered that nothing shall stand in force in our written booke of lawes; but what the printed lawes Refer vnto."

In several instances, as they were repealed or amended, the changes were made in the manuscript by erasures or interlineations. These alterations are generally preserved in the printed volume.

The first settlers of Plymouth, who came over in the *May-Flower*, intending to settle near Hudson's River, being fraudulently dealt with and

“brought so far to the northward, the season being sharp, and no hopes of their obtaining their intended port; and thereby their patent being made void and useless, as to another place: being at Cape Cod upon the eleventh day of November, 1620, it was thought meet for the more orderly carrying on of their affairs and accordingly by mutual consent they entered into a solemn combination, as a body politic, to submit to such government and governors, laws and ordinances, as should by a general consent, from time to time be made choice of, and assented unto. The contents whereof followeth.

In the name of God, amen. We whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread sovereign Lord King James, by the Grace of God, of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, etc. Having undertaken for the glory of God, and advancement of the Christian faith, and the honor of our King and country, a voyage to plant the first colony in the northern parts of Virginia; do by these presents solemnly and mutually, in the presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politic, for our better ordering and preservation, and furtherance of the ends aforesaid; and by virtue hereof, do enact, constitute, and frame such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions, and officers, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the colony; unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witness whereof, we have hereunto subscribed our names, at Cape Cod, the eleventh of November, in the reign of our sovereign Lord King James of England, France, and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland the fifty-fourth, Anno Dom. 1620.”

In the edition of *Morton's New England's Memorial* published by the Congregational Board of Publication in Boston, 1855, from which the above is taken, the names of the signers will be found.

Afterwards they had sundry Commissions made and confirmed by the Council established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering, and governing of New England in America, to John Peirce and his Associates, (whose name they only made use of, and whose associates they were,) and on the thirteenth of January, 1629, they procured letters patent, signed by the Earl of Warwick, in the behalf of the rest of the Council, which were granted to William Bradford, and

his heirs and associates, and by him surrendered in 1640, in public court, to Nathaniel Sowther, in the name and for the use of the whole body of freemen.

By a Resolve of the Legislature, passed on the fifth day of April, 1836, it was ordered, that fifteen hundred copies of the Laws of the Old Colony should be published for the use of the Commonwealth, which was done under the supervision of Hon. William Brigham, to which he added the Book of General Laws of New Plymouth, printed in the year 1672, and the Charter of the Council established at Plymouth, in the County of Devon, the Compact made on board of the May-Flower, with other valuable documents, compiled and arranged with critical care and discrimination by the learned Editor.

The Committee appointed by the General Court in 1818, consisting of Rev. James Freeman, D. D., and Benjamin R. Nichols and Samuel Davis, Esqs., to examine the Plymouth Colony Records, &c., in their report say that they "have not been able to discover whether any arrangement was made respecting these records before the union of Plymouth with Massachusetts, or by the Province afterwards." The following memorial and order thereon, in vol. 88, page 391, of the Massachusetts Archives, furnish the desired information on that subject.

"Boston Novem<sup>r</sup> y<sup>e</sup> 9<sup>th</sup> 1710

To His Excelency Joseph Dudley Esq<sup>r</sup> Gover<sup>r</sup> of Her Majesties Prouince of y<sup>e</sup> Massachussets Bay in New-England, y<sup>e</sup> Honourable y<sup>e</sup> Council, and Representatiues in General Court now Assembled and setting in Boston afore<sup>s</sup>d

The memorial of us y<sup>e</sup> Subscribers Justices of y<sup>e</sup> Peace in y<sup>e</sup> seueral Countys of Plymouth Barnstable and Bristoll Humbly sheweth

That y<sup>e</sup> Antient Records of y<sup>e</sup> late Colony of New-Plymouth, upon y<sup>e</sup> change of Gouerment, and Uniting y<sup>e</sup> late Colonys of Massachussets and Plimouth, were left in y<sup>e</sup> hands of M<sup>r</sup> Samuel Sprague of Marshfield, who was y<sup>e</sup> last Secretary of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Colony of Plimouth, and so Remain'd in his hands until his death, which happened some time in September last.

That upon y<sup>e</sup> death of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Sprague, y<sup>e</sup> General Quarter Sessions of y<sup>e</sup> Peace within y<sup>e</sup> County of Plymouth, Considering y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Records lay much Exposed, not being in any sworne officers hands, did at their Sessions in September afore<sup>s</sup>d, Order y<sup>t</sup> Colonel Nathanael Thomas, should take y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Records into his Care and Custody until further Order should be taken concerning them, and thereupon y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Colonel

Thomas took y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Records into his Custody, and keeps them for y<sup>e</sup> p<sup>r</sup>sent, expecting some further and speedy care and order to be taken concerning them.

That we are Humbly of Opinion y<sup>t</sup> it will be most agreeable and *and* satisfactory to y<sup>e</sup> Generalty of y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> Late Colony of Plymouth, y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Records may be kept and lodg'd in y<sup>e</sup> Town of Plymouth, which was y<sup>e</sup> Head Town of y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Colony of Plymouth, and where y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Records were wont to be kept.

We Therefore Pray y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Great and General Court, to take y<sup>e</sup> Premises into their Consideration, and Order y<sup>t</sup> some sutable person may be appointed and Sworne for y<sup>e</sup> safe keeping y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Records accordingly, and Granting Coppys as there may be Occation, or otherwise Order concerning y<sup>e</sup> same as y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Court in their wisdome shall think fit. And we shall Euer pray as in duty Bound/

NATH<sup>LL</sup> PAINE  
JOHN CUSHING  
JN<sup>O</sup> OTIS

9<sup>o</sup> Nov<sup>r</sup> 1710/ In Council/.

Read, and Ordered That the Bookes, Records and files of the General Court of the late Colony of New-Plymouth, be committed to the Custody of the Clerk of the Inferiour Court of the County of Plymouth for the time being he dwelling in Plymouth a perfect Schedule thereof being made, with an Indent to be passed for the same to the Justices of the said Court. And that the Clerk be Impowred to Transcribe and Attest Copys of the said Records, for any that shall desire the same upon paying the Establish'd Fees.

Sent down for concurrence,

ISA<sup>A</sup> ADDINGTON Sec<sup>r</sup>y

In the House of Representatives

Nov<sup>r</sup> 10 : 1710. Read & Concurr'd.

JOHN CLARK Speaker."

The undersigned, having in preparing the copy for the press, and in the examination of the proof-sheets carefully compared the whole three times with the original manuscript, is confident that this volume is accurate in every particular.

MARCH 7, 1861.

DAVID PULSIFER.



## MARKS AND CONTRACTIONS.

---

A Dash - (or straight line) over a letter indicates the omission of the letter following the one marked.

A Curved Line ~ indicates the omission of one or more letters next to the one marked.

A Superior Letter indicates the omission of contiguous letters, either preceding or following it.

A Caret ^ indicates an omission in the original record.

A Cross x indicates a lost or unintelligible word.

All doubtful words supplied by the editor are included between brackets, [ ].

Some redundancies in the original record are printed in *Italics*.

Some interlineations, that occur in the original record, are put between parallels, || ||.

Some words and paragraphs, which have been cancelled in the original record, are put between ‡ ‡.

Several characters have special significations, namely:—

<p>@, — annum, anno.</p> <p>ā, — an, am, — curiā, curiam.</p> <p>ā, — mātrate, magistrate.</p> <p>ḃ, — ber, — numḃ, number; Robt, Robert.</p> <p>č, — ci, ti, — acčon, action.</p> <p>čō, — tio, — jurisdicčōn, jurisdiction.</p> <p>č, — cre, cer, — acs, acres; clericč, clericus.</p> <p>đ, — đđ, delivered.</p> <p>ē, — Trēr, Treasurer.</p> <p>ē, — committē, committee.</p> <p>ġ, — ġñal, general; Georgġ, George.</p> <p>ḥ, — chr, charter.</p> <p>ī, — begīg, beginīg, beginning.</p> <p>ł, — łre, letter.</p> <p>m̄, — mm, mn, — com̄ittee, committee.</p> <p>m̄, — recoḿdačōn, recommendation.</p> <p>m̄, — mer, — formly, formerly.</p> <p>m̄, — month.</p> <p>n̄, — nn, — Peñ, Penn; año, anno.</p> <p>n̄, — Dñi, Domini.</p> <p>n̄, — ner, — manñ, manner.</p> <p>ō, — on, — mentiō, mention.</p> <p>ō, — mō, month.</p> <p>ḡ, — par, por; ḡt, part; ḡtion, portion.</p>	<p>p, — per, par, pur, pear, — psuite, pursuite; appd, appeared; pson, person; pte, parte.</p> <p>p, — pro, — pporčōn, proportion.</p> <p>ḡ, — pre, — ḡsent, present.</p> <p>q, — qstion, question.</p> <p>ḡ, — esḡ, esquire.</p> <p>ř, — Aprř, April.</p> <p>š, — š, session; šd, said.</p> <p>š, — ser, — švants, servants.</p> <p>ł, — ter, — neutł, neuter; secretł, secretary.</p> <p>č, — captč, captain.</p> <p>ũ, — uer, — seřal, seueral; goũ, governor.</p> <p>ũ, — aboũ, aboue, above.</p> <p>ř, — ver, — seřal, several.</p> <p>ř, — ver, verse, verses.</p> <p>ř, — řn, when.</p> <p>y<sup>e</sup>, the; y<sup>m</sup>, them; y<sup>n</sup>, then; y<sup>r</sup>, their; y<sup>s</sup>, this; y<sup>t</sup>, that.</p> <p>z, — us, — vilibz, vilibus.</p> <p>č, — es, et, — statutč, statutes.</p> <p>č, &amp;č, &amp;c<sup>a</sup>, — et cætera.</p> <p>vizł, — videlicet, namely.</p> <p>/ — full point.</p>
---	---



# CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
LAWS. PART I, . . . . .	3
LAWS. PART II, . . . . .	71
LAWS. PART III, . . . . .	148
GENERAL INDEX, . . . . .	261



PLYMOUTH RECORDS.

*Laws.*

PART I.





# PLYMOUTH RECORDS.

---

[The present volume is divided into three parts. Of these, Part I., being the more ancient, contains the original Laws, Orders, &c., of the Colony, from 1623 to 1657. On the first page is written "Plymouths ancient [book] of Lawes. 1623." Parts II. and III. contain the Laws as revised, re-enacted, and published in the year 1658. Part III. also contains enactments down to the year 1682.

The following pages were not written upon, namely: Part I. 1, 23 (with the exception of two lines), 28, 29, 30, 41 (with the exception of three words), 42, 84, 86, 94. Part II. 56; by mistake the next page is numbered 60. Part III. 21 (excepting six words), 94, 114, 116, 122, 124, 126, 128, 130, 132, 137, 140, 142, 144, 146, 148, 158.

The laws passed from 1683 to 1686, and from 1689 to June 1691, are printed in Volume VI., none being passed by the General Court during their "unjust interruption and suspension therefrom by the illegal arbitrary power of S<sup>r</sup> Edmond Andros;" that is, from 1686 until June 1689, when they reassumed their former way of government, and continued in the exercise and enjoyment of it until the Colony was annexed to Massachusetts, in the year 1691.—D. P.]

---

\* Orders agreed on at severall times for the Gen- [PART I.]  
erall good of the Colony and the Better goveřment \*2  
and prefervation of the fame.

**I**T was ordained 17 day of Decemb<sup>r</sup> An<sup>o</sup> 1623 by t[he Court] then held that all Criminall facts, and also all [matters] of trespasses and debts betweene man & man should [be tried] by the verdict of twelve Honest men to be Impanelled by Authority in forme of a Jury upon their oaths.

It was decreed by the Court held the 29 of March An<sup>o</sup>: 1626: That for the preventing of such inconveniences as do & may befall the plantation by the want of Timber. That no man of what condition soever sell or transport any mañer of works as frames for houses planks boards shipping shallops boats cannoos or whatsoever may tend to the distruction of timber afores<sup>d</sup> how little soever the quantity be without the Consent approbation

[PART I.]

and liking of Governour and Councill. And if any be found faulty herein and shall Imbarque or any way convey to that end to make sale of any the goods aforesaid Expressed or Intended by this Decree the same to be forfeited and a fine of twice the vallue for all so sold to be duly taken by the Governour for the use and benefitt of the Company.

It was further decreed the day 9 year above written for the preventing of such abuses as do and may arise amongst us that no handy-craftsman of what profession soever as Taylors Shoemakers Carpenters Joyners Smiths Sawyers or whatsoever w<sup>ch</sup> do or may reside or belong to this plantation of Plimouth shall use their science or trades at home or abroad for any strangers or forreigners till such time as the necessity of the Colony be served. Without the consent of the Governour and Councill: the brach thereof to be punished at their discretion:

It was ordained the s<sup>d</sup> 29 of March 1626: for the preventing scarcity as alsoe for the farthering of our trade that no corne beans or pease be transported Imbarqued or sold to that end to be Conveyed out of the Colony without the leave and licence of the governour 9 counsell. The breach whereof to be punished with los of the goods so taken or p[roued] to be sold: and the seller farther fined or punished or bot[h] at the discession of the Gov<sup>r</sup> and Councill.

It was agreed upon by the whole Court held the sixth [of Janua<sup>r</sup> 1627 that from hence] forward no dwelling house [was to be couered with any kind of thatche, as straw, reed 9c. but with either bord, or pale 9 the like; to wit: of all that were to be new built in the towne.]

Plimouth: \*The 3<sup>d</sup> of January, 1627: it was agreed in a full Cour[t about di-  
\*3 vision] of lands as followeth.

Imp<sup>r</sup>. That the first division of the acres should stand and continue f[irme according] to the former division made unto the possessors thereof and to their heires for ever: ffree Liberty being Reserved for all to gett fire wood [thereon] but the Timber trees were excepted for the owners of the ground.

2<sup>ly</sup> That the 2 division should consist of 20 acres to every person and to Contain five in breadth 9 four in length and so accordingly to be di[vided] by lott to every one which was to have share therein.

3<sup>ly</sup> The Ground to be judged sufficient before the Lots were drawne and the rest to be left to coñion use.

4<sup>ly</sup> This being done, that for our better subsistance and convenience those grounds which are nearest the Town, in whose lott soever they fall shall be

used by the whole for the space of 4 years from the date hereof: viz<sup>t</sup> first that the Right owner make choice of twice that quantity he shall or may [use] within the s<sup>d</sup> terme and then to take to him such neighbours as shall have need & he think fitt: but if they cannot agree then the Govern<sup>r</sup> and Council may appoint as they think meet: provided that the woods [be] ordered for felling & lopping according as the owner shall appo[int:] for neither fire wood nor other timber either for building or fen[cing] or any other use is to be felled or caryed off of any of these ~ without the owners leave & license, but he is to preserve [them] to his best advantage.

[PART I.]

That what soever the surveighers judge sufficient shall stand wi[thout] contradiction or opposition and every man shall Rest Contented [with] his lott.

That after the purchasers are served as afores<sup>d</sup>; that then such p[lan]ters as are heirs to such as dyed before the Right of the land was [yield]ed to the Adventurers have also 20 acres a person p[ro]portionable to their Right Layed out in part of their Inheritance.

That first they shall begin where the acres of the first division end and Lay out that to the Eele River so far as shall be thought fitt by the Surveighors, and Returne to the north side of the Tow[n] and so p[ro]ceed accordingly, and that they leave all great Tim[ber] swamps for common use.

That fflowing fishing and Hunting be frec:

That the old path ways be still allowed and that eve[ry] man be allowed a conveanient way to the water where[soever] the lott fall:

\*Lastly that Every man of the Surveighers have a peck of Corne for Every share of land layed out by them to be paid by the owner thereof when the same is layd out.

The names of the layers out were these

WILLIAM BRADFORD	FRANCIS COOKE
EDWARD WINSLOW	JOSHUA PRATT
JOHN HOWLAND	EDWARD BANGS

5<sup>ly</sup>6<sup>ly</sup>7<sup>ly</sup>8<sup>ly</sup>9<sup>ly</sup>

\*4

[PART I.]

\* New Plymouth Noṽbr 15. 1636

\*5

**W**HEREAS at his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Court held the [4<sup>th</sup> & 5<sup>th</sup>] of Octo<sup>br</sup> in the 12<sup>th</sup> yeare of the raigne of our [Sov.] Lord Charles by the grace of God King of Engl. Scotl. ffr. & Irel. Defendor of the ffaith &c I[t was] ordered that M<sup>r</sup> William Brewster M<sup>r</sup> Ral[ph] Smith M<sup>r</sup> John Done & John Jenny for the [Town of Plymouth, Jonathan Brewster & Chris[topher] Wadsworth for Duxburrough, & James C[udworth] & Anthony Annable for Scituate should be [added] to the Goṽr & Assistants as Co<sup>m</sup>mittees for the whole body of this Co<sup>m</sup>on weale should meete together the 15<sup>th</sup> of Noṽbr at Plymouth aboue men<sup>co</sup>nded & there to puse all the lawes orders & constitu<sup>co</sup>ns of the Planta<sup>co</sup>ns w<sup>th</sup>in this Governm<sup>t</sup> that so those that are still fitting [might] be established, those that time hath made [un]necessary might be rejected & others that were wanting might be preped that so the nex[t] Court they might be established.

Now being assembled according to the said [order] and having read the Combina<sup>co</sup>n made at [Cape] Cod the 11<sup>th</sup> of Novbr 1620 in the yeare of [the] raigne of our late Sov. L. King James of Engl. ffr. [&] Irel. the eighteenth, & of Scotland the fifty [fourth] as also our letters Patents confirmed by [the] honorable Councill his s<sup>d</sup> Ma<sup>ties</sup> established & [granted] the 13<sup>th</sup> of January 1629 in the fife yeare of the raigne of our sov. Lord King Charles. And finding that as freeborne subjects of the State of Engl. we hither came indewed w<sup>th</sup> all & singular the priviledges belong<sup>g</sup> to such, in the first place we thinke good that it be establish[ed] for an act That according

Imp<sup>s</sup>  
Act I. to the & due priviledge of the subject aforesaid no imposicon law or ordnance be made or imposed vpon vs by ourselves [or others at] present or to come but such as shall be made [or] imposed by consent according to the free liberties [of the] State & Kingdome of Engl. & no otherwise.

\*6

\*That whereas before expressed we finde a solemne & binding Combina<sup>co</sup>n as also l<sup>rs</sup> Patents derivatory from his Ma<sup>tie</sup> of Eng. our dread Sov. for the ordering of a body politick w<sup>th</sup>in the severall limits of this Patent viz<sup>t</sup> from Cowahasset to the utmost [bounds] of Puckanokick [westw]ard & all that [tract] of land southward to the [souther]ne ocean w<sup>th</sup> all & singular lands rivers havens waters creeks ports fishings fowlings &c. By vertue whereof we ordaine institute and appoint the first Tuesday in March every yeare for the elec<sup>co</sup>n of such officers as shall be thought meet for the guiding & governm<sup>t</sup> of this Corpora<sup>co</sup>n.

This is altered afterwards to the first Teusday in June yearely by a gef<sup>l</sup>-all Court.



That at the day & time appointed a Goŵr & seaven Assistants be chosen to rule & governe the said plantacons w<sup>th</sup>in the said limits for one whole yeare & no more. And this eleccon to be made onely by the freemen according to the former custome. And that then also Constables for each pt & other inferior officers be also chosen.

[PART I.]

Act 2.

That in every eleccon some one of the Assistants or some other sufficient pson be chosen Treasurer for the yeare present whose place it shall be to receiue in whatsoever sum or sums shall apperteine to the Royalty of the place either coming in by way of fine amerceam<sup>t</sup> or otherwise And shall improue the same for the publick benefitt of this Corporacon by order of the Governm<sup>t</sup>. As also to giue a just account thereof to the ensuing Treasurer & to the Goŵr when ever he shall demand it. or the Court when they appoint.

3

Clarke of the Court.

That a ~~Secretary~~ also be chosen for the yeare.

That also one be chosen to the office of Coroner to be executed as neere as may be to the laws & practise of the kingdome of Engl. & to continue one yea[re.]

\*The Office of the Goŵr

\*7

The office of the Goŵr for the time being consi[sts in] the execucon of such laws & ordnanc[es] as are or shall be [made] & established for the good of this Corporacon according [to the] severall bownds & limits thereof. vizt: In calling togeth[er] or advising w<sup>th</sup> the Assistants or Councill of the said Corporacon upon such materiall occasions (or so seeming to h[im,] as time shall bring forth. In w<sup>ch</sup> assembly & all other the Goŵr to propound the occasion of the Assembly & ha[ve] a dowble voice therein. If the Assistants iudge the case too great to be discided by them, & refer it to the Generall Court, then the Governor to suffion a Court by warning all the ffreemen aforesaid that are then extant, and there also to propownd cawses, and goe before the Assistants in the examinacon of p<sup>t</sup>iculars, and to propound such sentence as shall be determined. ffurther it shall be lawfull for him to arrest & comit to ward any offenders provided that w<sup>t</sup> all convent spede he shall bring the cawse to hearing either of the Assistance or Generall Court according to the nature of the offence. Also it shall be lawfull for him to examine any suspicious psons for evill against the Colony, as also to intercept or op[pose] such as he conceiveth may tend to the overthrow of the same. And that this Office continue one whole yeare & no more w<sup>th</sup>out renewing by eleccon.

[PART I.]

## \*The Oath of the Govr.

\*8

You shall sweare to be truly loyall to ~~our Sovereigne Lord King Charles~~  
~~the State & Govern<sup>t</sup> of England as it now stands~~  
 his heires & successors. Also according to that measure of wisdome vnder-  
 standing & discerning given unto you faithfully equally & indifferently w<sup>th</sup>out  
 respect of p<sup>er</sup>sons to administer justice in all cases com<sup>ing</sup> before you as the  
 Governour of New Plymouth. You shall in like maner faithfully duly &  
 truly execute the lawes & ordnanc<sup>e</sup> of the same, And shall labor to ad-  
 vance & further the good of the Colonies & Planta<sup>ti</sup>o<sup>n</sup>s w<sup>th</sup>in the limits  
 thereof to the utmost of yo<sup>r</sup> power and oppose any thing that shall seeme  
 to hinder the same. So helpe you God who is the God of truth & punisher  
 of falsehood.

## The oath of a freeman.

You shall be truly loyall to ~~our Sov<sup>r</sup>. Lord king Charles~~ his heires &  
~~the State & Govern<sup>t</sup> of England as it now stands~~  
 successors. You shall not speake or doe, devise or advise any thing or  
 things act or acts directly or indirectly by land or water, that doth shall  
 or may tend to the destructi<sup>o</sup>n or overthrow of this p<sup>re</sup>nt planta<sup>ti</sup>o<sup>n</sup>s Colonies  
 or Corpora<sup>ti</sup>o<sup>n</sup> of New Plymouth, Neither shall you suffer the same to be  
 spoken or done but shall hinder oppose & discover the same to the Gov<sup>r</sup>  
 & Assistants of the said Colony for the time being or some one of them.  
 You shall faithfully submit unto such good & wholesome laws & ordnanc<sup>e</sup> as  
 either are or shall be made for the ordering & governm<sup>t</sup> of the same, and  
 shall endeavor to advance the growth & good of the severall <sup>plantations</sup> Colonies w<sup>th</sup>in  
 the limit<sup>e</sup> of this Corpora<sup>ti</sup>o<sup>n</sup> by all due meanes & courses. All w<sup>ch</sup> you  
 promise & sweare by the name of the great God of heaven & earth simply  
 truly & faithfully to p<sup>er</sup>forme as you hope for help fr<sup>o</sup>m God who is the God of  
 truth & punisher of falsehood.

\*9

## \*The office of an Assistant.

The Office of an Assistant for the time being consisteth in appearing at  
 the Governours s<sup>es</sup>sions, and in giving his best advice both in publick Court &  
 private Councell [with] the Gov<sup>r</sup> for the good of the Colonies w<sup>th</sup>in the lim-  
 it[s] of this Governm<sup>t</sup>. Not to disclose but keepe secret such things as con-  
 cerne the publick good, and shall be thought meet to be concealed by the  
 Govern<sup>r</sup> & Councell of Assistants: In hauing a speciall hand in the examina-  
 ti<sup>o</sup>n of publick offenders, and in contriving the affaires of the Colony. To  
 haue a voice in the censuring of such offenders as shall not be brought to

publick Court. That if the Governor haue occasion to be absent from the Colony for a short time, by the Go<sup>v</sup>r w<sup>th</sup> consent of the rest of the Assistants he may be deputed to govern<sup>r</sup> in the absence of the Governour. Also it shall be lawfull for him to examine & comit to ward where any occasion ariseth where the Gov<sup>r</sup> is absent, provided the p<sup>son</sup> be brought to further hearing w<sup>th</sup> all convenient speede before the Governour or the rest of the Assistants. Also it shall be lawfull for him in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> name to direct his warrants to any Constable w<sup>th</sup>in the Government who ought faithfully to execute the same according to the nature & tenure thereof. And may binde over p<sup>sons</sup> for matters of crime to answe<sup>r</sup> at the next ensuing Court of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> after the fact comitted or the p<sup>son</sup> apprehended.

[PART I.]

## \*The Oath of the Assistants.

\*10

Yee shall all sweare to be truly loyall to our Sov<sup>r</sup>. Lord King Charles his heires & Successors Also ye shall faithfully truly & justly according to that measure of discerning & discretion God hath given you be assistant to the Go<sup>v</sup>r for this p<sup>re</sup>nt yeare for the execu<sup>cion</sup> of justice in all cases & towards all p<sup>sons</sup> com<sup>ing</sup> before you w<sup>th</sup>out p<sup>ti</sup>allity according to the nature of the Office of an Assistant read unto you. Moreover yee shall diligently duly & truly see that the Lawes & Ordnanc<sup>e</sup> of this Corpora<sup>cion</sup> be faithfully executed; and shall labor to advance the good of the severall Planta<sup>cion</sup>s w<sup>th</sup>in the limits thereof, and oppose any thing that shall hinder the same <sup>by all due meanes and courses</sup> ~~to the utmost of your power~~ So help you God who is the God of truth & punisher of falsehood.

The Oath of any residing w<sup>th</sup>in the Govern<sup>mt</sup>.

You shall be truly loyall to our Sover. Lord the King his heires & Successors. And whereas you make choice at p<sup>re</sup>nt to reside w<sup>th</sup>in the Govern<sup>mt</sup> of new Plymouth, You shall not doe or cause to be done any Act or Acts directly or indirectly by land or water that shall or may tend to the destru<sup>cion</sup> or overthrow of the whole, or any the severall Colonies w<sup>th</sup>in the said govern<sup>mt</sup> that are or shall be orderly erected & established but shall contrariwise hinder oppose & discover such intents & purposes as tend thereunto to the Governor for the time being or some one of the Assistants w<sup>th</sup> all convenient speede. You shall also submit unto & obey such good & wholesome lawes Ordinanc<sup>e</sup> & Officers as are or shall be established w<sup>th</sup>in the severall limits thereof. So helpe you God who is the God of truth & punisher of ffalsehood.

[PART I.]

\*The Oath of a Constable.

\*11

You shall sweare to be truly loyall to our ~~Soveraigne Lord King Charles the sixth and Government of England as it now stands.~~

his heires & Successors, wh~~x~~ (you shall faithfully serue in the office of a Constable in the ward of for this p̄nt yeare according to that measure of wisdome understanding & discretion God hath given you. In w<sup>ch</sup> time you shall diligently

The

see that (his Ma<sup>ties</sup>) peace comāded be not broken, but shall carrie the p̄son or p̄sons offending before the Governōr of this Corporacōn or some o[ne] of his Assistants, and there attend the heari[ng] of the Case and such order as shall be given [you]. You shall apprehend all suspitious p̄sons, and bring them before the said Goṽr or some one of his Assistants as aforesaid. You shall duly & truly serue such warrants & giue such sūm[on]s as shall be directed unto you frō the Goṽr or Assistants before mençoned, and shall labo[ur] to advance the peace & happines of this Corporacōn & oppose any thing that shall seeme to annoy the same by all due meanes & course[s.] So helpe you God who is the God of truth & punisher of falsehood.

Election of officers at the genall Courts.

\*12

\*That the annuall elecçōn of Officers before expressed be at a Generall Court held in his Māties name of Engl. And that the Goṽr in due season by warrant directed to the severall Const̄ in his Māties name aforesaid giue warning to the ffreemen to make their apparence : And that all other our Courts warrants, summons or comāds by way of justice be all done directed & made in the name of his Majesty of England aforesaid our dread Soveraigne.

fyne of non appanee.

And for default in case of apparence at the Elecçōn before mençoned w<sup>th</sup>out due excuse each delinquent to be amerced in 3 ff. sterl.

Repealed June 25, 1645.

q<sup>r</sup>

That if at any time any shall be elected to the office of Governor & will not hold according to the elecçōn that then he be amerced in 20<sup>th</sup> starling ffine.

Repealed June 1645.

That if any elected to the office of Assistant refuse to hold according to elecçōn that then he be amerced in ten pownds starling ffine.

Repealed x 1639.

That in case one & the same p̄son should be elected Goṽr a second yeare having held the place the foregoing yeare it should be lawfull for him to refuse w<sup>th</sup>out any amercem<sup>t</sup> unless they can prevaile w<sup>th</sup> him by entreaty.

\*That the Governm<sup>t</sup> vizt the ge<sup>n</sup>all Courts & Courts of Assistants be held at Plymouth, ~~ℳ that the Gov<sup>r</sup> hold his dwelling there for the p<sup>r</sup>nt yeare~~ except such Inferio<sup>r</sup> Courts as for some matters shalbe allowed by this Court in other places of this Gov<sup>r</sup>ment.

Courts where kept/  
This clause repealed at March Court, 1642.  
\*13

That a great Quest be pannelled by the Gov<sup>r</sup> and Assistants or the major pt of them & warned to serue the king by enquiring into the abuses & breaches of such wholsome lawes & ordnanc<sup>ℳ</sup> as tend to the preserva<sup>o</sup>n of the peace & good of the subject. And that they present such to the Court as they either finde guilty or ~~probably suspect~~ that so th[ey] may be p<sup>r</sup>secuted by the Gov<sup>r</sup> by all due meanes.

Grand Jury how pannelled.

It is enacted That no p<sup>r</sup>sentment hereafter shalbe exhibited to the Grand Enquest to be brought to the Bench except it be donn vpon oath and that it shalbe lawfull for any of the Assistants to administer an oath in such case.

March 2<sup>a</sup> 1640.

and a whipping post

That in every Constablerick there be a paire of stocks erected. ~~Also a cage~~ w<sup>ch</sup> shall be of competent strength to detaine a prisoner, & these to be erected in such place as shall be thought meet by the severall neighborhoods where they concerne vpon the penalty of x<sup>s</sup> for any towneship w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe defectiue herein.

Stocks & whipping posts.

That the Constable see~~s~~ the high waies for man & beast be made & kept in convenient repaire & therefore ~~be~~ also appointed surveighor for the liberty he is chosen. ~~That Two Surveighers in every Constablerick be chosen each yeare to see that the high waies be mended competently~~ And if it fall out that a way be wanting upon due complaint That then the Governour panell a Jewry & upon Oath charge them to lay out such way as in conscience they finde most beneficiall for the Com<sup>o</sup>n weale & as little prejudice as may be to the p<sup>r</sup>ticular /

This p<sup>t</sup> is repealed.

\*That it be lawfull for the Governour as well to pannel such the king<sup>ℳ</sup> subjects of good report that are ffreeholders & no ffreeman upon Jewry to doe service to his Ma<sup>tie</sup> as well as such as haue taken up their ffreedome if thought convenient.

Who to be pannelled in Jewryes.

\*14

That the lawes & ordnanc<sup>ℳ</sup> of the Colony & for the Governm<sup>t</sup> of the same be made onely by the ffreemen of the Corporacon & no other. provided that in such rates & taxa<sup>o</sup>n<sup>s</sup> as are or shall be laid upon the whole they be w<sup>th</sup>out p<sup>r</sup>tiallity so as the ffreeman be not spared for his freedome, but the levy be equall. And in case any man finde himselfe aggrieved that his complaint may be heard & redressed if there be due cause.

Lawes made by y<sup>e</sup> ffreemen.

[PART I.] That an oath of Allegiance to the King & fidelity to the Governm<sup>t</sup> & the sev. Colonies therein be taken of every pson that shall live w<sup>th</sup>in or under the same.

oath of fidelity to all.

Tryalls by Jury. \*15 \*That All trialls whether Capitall or between man & man be tryed by Jewryes according to the president<sup>l</sup> of the law of Engl. as neer as may be.

Godnoure & 2 assistants determine cases sub. 40<sup>r</sup>. That the Go<sup>v</sup>r & two Assistant<sup>l</sup> at the lest shall as occasion shall be offered in time convenient determine in such triviall cases vi<sup>t</sup> under forty shilling<sup>l</sup> between man & man as shall come before them as also in offence of smale nature shall determine doe & execute as in wisdome God shall direct them.

Offence Capitall. Capitall offence lyable to death.

Treason or rebellion against the pson of the King State or Co<sup>m</sup>on wealth either of England or these Colonies.

Willfull Murder.

Solemn Compaction or conversing w<sup>th</sup> the divell by way of witchcraft conjuration or the like.

Willfull & purposed burning of ships howses.

Sodomy, rapes, buggery.

Adultery to be punished.

offence criminall. Altered.

\*16 \*~~Adultery~~ ffornica<sup>o</sup>n & other uncleane carriages to be punished at the discretion of the Majestrates according to the nature thereof.

ffornica<sup>o</sup>n before contract or marriage.

The stealing or attempting to steale ships boat<sup>l</sup> munico<sup>n</sup> or other things of that nature to be punished according to the determina<sup>o</sup>n of the Majestrates.

sale of lands acknowledged before one of Assistants. That all sales exchanges gift<sup>l</sup> morgages leases or other Conveyance<sup>l</sup> of howses & land<sup>l</sup> the sale to be acknowledged before the Go<sup>v</sup>r or any one of the Assistants & co<sup>m</sup>mitted to publick Record and the fees to be payd.

marke of Cattle. That every mans marke of his Cattle be brought to the towne booke where he liues & that no man giue the same, but shall alter any other bought by him & put his owne upon them.

land after Greenew<sup>ch</sup> hold. That Inheritance do descend according to the co<sup>m</sup>endable custome of Engl. & hold of Est Greenew<sup>ch</sup>.

That If the husband die the wife <sup>shal</sup> ~~to~~ have a third pt of his landℓ [PART I.]  
<sup>her</sup> during <sup>and</sup> her life, ~~And if he die w<sup>th</sup>out will to have also a 3<sup>d</sup> of his goodℓ~~ a wiues p<sup>t</sup> of lands ℓ goods.  
 to be at her owne disposeng  
~~but by will may wholly be disposed of by the husband, as he please.~~

That One Co<sup>m</sup>on standard to be used by all for weight ℓ measure W<sup>th</sup> ℓ meas- ures.  
 And that according to Winchester w<sup>ch</sup> is the standard of Engl.

\*That No Warre nor league of peace be made by a[ny] p<sup>t</sup>icular p<sup>er</sup>son or of warre & leauges.  
 p<sup>er</sup>sons but such as shall be agreed ℓ determined in and by a Generall Court, Confirmed.  
 except in such case of eminent danger as a Court cannot be called or \*17  
 su<sup>m</sup>oned.

That in case necessity require to send forcℓ abroadℓ ℓ there be not vol- Souldiers pressed. Confirmed.  
 unteers suffi<sup>c</sup> offered for the service then it be lawfull for the go<sup>v</sup>no<sup>r</sup> ℓ As-  
 sistants to presse in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> name by their warrant directed to the Con-  
 stables. Prouided if any that shall goe returne maymed ℓ hurt he shalbe  
 mayntayned competently by the Colony duringe his life. And also that if  
 there shalbe neede of horses for the Countreys service it shalbe lawfull for  
 the Go<sup>v</sup>n<sup>r</sup> ℓ Assistantℓ likewise to presse horses for such service by the × ×  
 paying them for them or taking order for their payment.

That concerning misdemeanors as any shall be convicted in Court of  
 any p<sup>t</sup>icular to be Censured by the bench according to the nature of the  
 offence as God shall direct them.

That none be allowed to marry that are under the covert of parentℓ but Marriage.  
 by their consent ℓ approba<sup>c</sup>o<sup>n</sup>. but in case consent cannot be had then it shall  
 be w<sup>th</sup> the consent of the Gove<sup>r</sup>, or some assistant to whom the p<sup>er</sup>sons are  
 knowne whose care it shall be to see the marriag be fitt before it be allowed  
 by him. And after approba<sup>c</sup>o<sup>n</sup> be three severall times published before the  
 solemnising of it. or els in places where there is no such meetings that con-  
 tractℓ or agreementℓ of marriage may be so published, that then it shalbe  
 lawfull to publish them by a writing thereof made and set vpon the usuall  
 publike place for the space of fiteene days. p<sup>ro</sup>vided that the writing be vnder  
 some majestratℓ hand or by his order.

That all such as dept any his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Courtℓ before they be dismissed Dep<sup>t</sup>ing Courte.  
 w<sup>th</sup>out due leaue be amerced in three shillings ster<sup>t</sup>.

[PART I.]  
 Timber of  
 swamps.

That no man make sale or sell out of the Colonys any kind of board℄ planck℄ or Timber that hath been growing in any the swamps that are reserved for publick use w<sup>th</sup>out leaue, but shall onely so doe of such as arise out of his owne prop grownd℄.

Particular  
 armes.  
 \*18

\*That each pson for himselfe ℄ accord to Jan. 2<sup>d</sup> 1632 haue peece powder ℄ shott viz<sup>t</sup> a suffiç musket or other serviceable peece for war w<sup>th</sup> bandeleroes sword ℄ other appurtenanc℄ for himselfe ℄ each man serv<sup>t</sup> he keepeth able to beare Armes. And that for himselfe ℄ each such pson under him he be at all times furnished w<sup>th</sup> two pownd℄ of powder and ten pownd℄ of bullet℄ ℄ for each default to forfeit ten shillings.

Since this tyme it is agreed upon by the Comissioners that it shalbe but one pound of powder ℄ foure pound℄ of bulletts w<sup>th</sup> match foure fathome for eich matchcock peece.

q<sup>r</sup>

That no sheepe be sould out of the Colonys if ~~competent~~ price will be heere given for them.

Plymouth.

It is further enacted that whereas formerly a smale moyety of land was allotted to each ffamily for their convenient subsistance in the towne of Plymouth vizt to each pson an acre, ℄ that now the said Acres lie void the ancient inhabitant℄ being for the most pt removed from thence: Insomuch that as formerly they were the meanes of subsisting in towne now the ppriety of psons in them elsewhere seated hinder others from comīng into the towne: by w<sup>ch</sup> meanes the said towne is like to be dispeopled It was therefore agreed upon by the mutuall consent of the whole (two psons onely excepted) That all ℄ every such pson ℄ psons should ℄ did surrender ℄ cast up their right in the said Acres that they may be disposed of to such as doe or shall inhabite the said towne of New Plymouth as also other the wast grownd℄ about the said Towne by such an orderly ℄ equall course as shall be thought meet by the Go<sup>v</sup>r ℄ Cowncell, And that the said Go<sup>v</sup>r ℄ his Assist<sup>ant</sup>℄ thinke of some equall course to satisfie such as haue purchased any ℄ the psons not able to make satisfacçōn.

1633 Oct 23  
 Act 3.  
 Plymouth  
 weare.

\*19

\*That whereas God by his pvidence hath cast the ffish [called] alewiues or herring℄ in the midst of the towne of new Plymouth. And that the grownd thereabout hath been wor[ne] out by the whole to the daṃage of those that now inhabite the same. It is therefore enacted That the said herrings Alewiue℄ or shadd℄ comōnly used in the setting of Corne be appropriated to such as doe or shall inhabite the Towne of Plymouth aforesaid. And



that no other haue any right or propriety in the same saue onely for bait for fishing, and that by such an orderly course as shall be thought meet by the Goŵr & Assistant℄ [PART I.]

That the wills & Testam<sup>t</sup>℄ of such as die be pꝛved orderly before the Goŵr & Assistant℄ w<sup>th</sup>in one moneth after the decease of the Testator And that a full Inventory duly valued be presented w<sup>th</sup> the same before t<sup>rs</sup> of Administraçõn be granted to any of all the good℄ & chattels of the said p<sup>rs</sup>ons. Also if in case any man die w<sup>th</sup>out will his good℄ be by his wife or others neerest to him inventoried & duly valued & presented to the Goŵr & Assistant℄ w<sup>th</sup>in one moneth after the decease of the said p<sup>rs</sup>on so dying. And if it be a single p<sup>rs</sup>on w<sup>th</sup>out kindred heer resident That then the Goŵr appoint some to take a just Inventory of the same & to present the same upon Oath to be true & just as in other the cases before mençõned. Testam<sup>t</sup>℄  
Act 4.

\*That in case it fall out that any die more indebted then their estates of good℄ & Chattels amount unto If the p<sup>rs</sup>on so deceased haue bought any land℄ in his life·time to the impaying of his estate otherwise, That the land℄ so bought be sold to make satisfacçõn to the Creditors: But whereas a porçõn is disposed of to each for the subsistance of him or herselfe & ffamily, That such land℄ remaine to the survivors his or her heires ℄c no seisure being allowed the creditors in that case. 1633 Jun. 2.  
Act 4.  
Lands of de  
sceasd to pay  
debt℄.  
\*20

That whatsoever daṁage coms to any by Cows·goat℄ mares sheepe or any of those kindes by comīng into their corne or gardens be made good by the owners of the said Cattle as it shall be valued by two of the neighbours. And that it shall be lawfull upon each such trespasse to impownd the Cattle trespassing till due satisfaccon be made.

\*That no man keepe more swine then he can ordinarily keepe about his owne place, and that they be dowbly rung or at lest sufficiently wrong that they roote not up & destroy the medows ℄c And if in case any shall finde himselfe aggrieved & require the yoaking of any unruly swine, by reason of damage he is like to sustaine then to forfeit for every such default p<sup>·</sup>weeke besides the daṁage five shilling℄. Swine.  
more pag. 48.  
51.  
\*21

Also if in case any be fownd unrung (or unyoaked after notice as before) q<sup>r</sup> then to forfeit upon discovery of it for each swine 2℄ & for every weeke after any shall so continue five shilling℄ the one half to come to the p<sup>rs</sup>on so find-<sup>o</sup>ing & discovering them, the other half to the Towneship to w<sup>ch</sup> the owner belong℄. Also that all pigg℄ at or before ten week℄ old shall be rung. And

[PART I.]

upon suffiç notice to the next justice of the peace he to grant warrant to the Constable to straine any of these fines. The time of yoking to continue from mid June to Sept. ult. if required. But if any lose their ringℓ or yoakes the first notice to be w<sup>th</sup>out fine.

Purchasers  
lands.  
more follow-  
eth. \*22

\*That whereas as well the landℓ w<sup>th</sup>in this patent as the muniçõn ℓc was bought by way of purchase by diverse the Inhabitantℓ of new Plymouth and that the said purchasers are possessed but of smale pporçõns of land ℓ many of them meane. It is therefore thought meet that the said purchasers shall hold ℓ haue reserved for themselues ℓ their heires so much land in such place ℓ placℓ as they shall judge meete ℓ convenient for themselues ℓ their heires aforesaid.

q<sup>r</sup>

land to chil-  
dren.

That such children as are heer borne ℓ next unto them such as are heer brought up under their parentℓ ℓ are come to age of discretion allowed, ℓ want landℓ for their accomodaçõn be provided for iu place convenient before any that either come from England or elsewhere. then to seeke as they are.

q<sup>r</sup>

purchasers  
land.  
q<sup>r</sup>

That place ℓ placℓ convenient reserved for the said purchasers ℓ their heires. They surrender the remainder of the landℓ to be disposed of w<sup>th</sup>in the limitℓ of the hrs patent dated

to W. B. ℓ his associatℓ  
to the Governm<sup>t</sup> consisting of the Majestrates ℓ ffreemen of this Corporaçõn.

\*23

\*That a convenient forme for Register of mens ptiç holds be heer incerted.

ffishing fowl-  
ingℓ ℓ hunt-  
inge.

\*24

\*That fishing fowling hawking hunting be freely allowed provided if any damage come to any pticular by the prosecuçõn of such game restituçõn be made or the case actionable. But if any man desire to improve a place ℓ stock it w<sup>th</sup> fish of any kinde for his private use it shall be lawfull for the Court to make such a grant ℓ forbid all others to make use of it.

Pownde.

That every Constablerick haue a suffiç pownd to <sup>impound</sup> ~~imprison~~ Cattle that shall transgresse any such orders [as] are or shall be made.

A law added for a pound breach.

Heardinge.

That no man doe heard either his owne Cattle or other mens to the prejudice of any at or neere his or their howse upon their land but upon due notice ℓ warning shall reforme it or the case be actionable.

That whoever shall kill a Wolfe & make it suffiç knowne to the Goṽr or some assistant shall haue four bushell of Corne to be rayseed of the Constable-  
rick or liberties. [PART I.]  
Killing wolffs.

That w<sup>t</sup>ever daṁage come to any by Cowes, goat℄ mares sheepe or hog℄  
by breaking into mens suffiç. inclosures. It shall be lawfull for the p<sup>u</sup>sons sc  
damniſied to impownd them, and two indifferent men to view the daṁage w<sup>ch</sup>  
accordingly shall be given & payd. Trespases.

\*That no guns or Iron traps be sett unles in p<sup>u</sup>tiç inclosures & that not  
neere any high way. Iron traps.  
\*25

That no serv<sup>t</sup> coṁing out of his time or other single p<sup>u</sup>son be suffered  
to keepe howse or be for him or themselues till such time as hee or they be  
competently provided of Armes & muniçōn according to the order of the  
Colonies. And that if any such be yet wanting they be provided as afore-  
said or else provide themselues such masters as may provide for them. And  
that to be done forthw<sup>th</sup> upon due warning. March 2<sup>d</sup> 1636.  
Servants &  
single psons.

That none be suffered to retale wine strongwater or beere either w<sup>th</sup>in  
doores or w<sup>th</sup>out except in Inns or Victualling howses allowed. And that no  
beere be sold in any such place to exceed in price two pence the Winches-  
ter quart. Retaylors of  
wine & beere.

That such as either drinke drunke in their p<sup>u</sup>sons or suffer any to drinke  
drunke in their howses by enquired into amongst other misdemeanors &  
accordingly punished or fined or both by the discreçōn of the bench. q<sup>r</sup>  
Druncknes.

That the children & serv<sup>t</sup>℄ of such as dwell neer any victualling howse  
be not entertayned or suffered by the m<sup>r</sup> of the s<sup>d</sup> howse there to drinke &  
spend their time but if any such thing can be proved it be esteemed a mis-  
demeanor punishable in the s<sup>d</sup> Victualler & to be enquired into. q<sup>r</sup>

\*That such serv<sup>t</sup>℄ as come out of their times and are by their Coṽ<sup>t</sup>℄ to  
haue land℄ haue onely fiue acres apeece at p<sup>u</sup>nt And that, if they be fownd  
fit to occupie it for themselues in some convenient place. Lands to serv<sup>t</sup>  
\*26

That none be allowed to be howsekeeps or build any Cottages or  
dwelling howses till such time as they be allowed by the Goṽr or some one  
or more Cowncell of Assist℄. housekeep<sup>r</sup>  
who.

[PART I.]  
lands to serv<sup>ts</sup>.

That from this time forward whoever shall cov<sup>t</sup> to giue landℓ by Indenture to their serv<sup>ts</sup>ℓ at the expira<sup>ō</sup>n of their service shall make good the same out of their pp landℓ, the Governm<sup>t</sup> being free frō any such Cov<sup>ts</sup>ℓ ℓ therefore not to be expected.

Purchasers & freeme of Plymouth.

That the towne of Plymouth viz<sup>t</sup> the purchasers ℓ ffreemen. haue lib<sup>doe</sup>erty of themselues to dispose of the lands that are or shall belong unto them to such they thinke meet to receiue in unto them, And also to make such orders for their convenient ℓ more cōfortable subsistance as shall by them be thought most meet ℓ convenient provided they be not contrary to the publick ordnancℓ of the Governm<sup>t</sup>

Scituates liberty.

That Scituate be allowed the like liberties ℓ to dispose of the growndℓ between the North River ℓ Cowehasset provided they have recourse to Plymouth in case of Justice.

lands given to psons who liue not vpon the same.  
q<sup>r</sup>

\*That whereas landℓ are given ℓ g[ranted] to psons upon supposall of their living upon them for the maintenance ℓ strength of society. If it fall out that psons shall not occupie any such landℓ but dept from the same place, such former grant or grantℓ to be of none effect but shall returne ℓ be otherwise disposed of by the Governm<sup>t</sup> in generall or Towneship in pticular as it shall fall out.

\*27

Holy dayes.  
q<sup>r</sup>

That it be in the power of the Governor ℓ Assist<sup>s</sup> to comānd solemn daies of humilia<sup>ō</sup>n by fasting ℓc and also for thankesgiving as occasion shall be offered.

Misdemeanors p<sup>s</sup>entable.

That all such misdemeanōrs of any pson or psons as tend to the hurt ℓ detriment of society Civility peace ℓ neighbourhood be enquired into by the grand Enquest ℓ the psons presented to the Court that so the disturbers thereof may be punished ℓ the peace ℓ welfare of the subject comfortably preserved.

Office ℓ fees of the Messenger.  
\*31

\*The Office of the Messenger

To be ready at the Governours or any the Assistants warning to doe such service as shall be appointed for the good of the severall Colonies w<sup>th</sup>in this Governm<sup>t</sup> ℓ to be esteemed as a publick officer to doe ℓ execute according to the nature of such warrantℓ as shall be directed to him in any pt thereof. [As Constable for the speciall ward belonging to Plymouth, viz<sup>t</sup> from Jones river sowthward so far as any inhabite at p<sup>r</sup>nt. As Jaylor to keepe such as shall be comitted. And either to execute such punishm<sup>t</sup> as shall be inflicted by publick censure, or cause it to be done.] To giue warning of such mar-

riages as shall be approved by authority. To seale those measures & weight℄ that be allowed. & to measure out such lands as shall be ordered by the Govern<sup>or</sup> or Governm<sup>t</sup>. [PART I.]

The ffees allowed.

ffor comittment ij<sup>s</sup> vj<sup>d</sup> for releasement ij<sup>s</sup> vi<sup>d</sup>

ffor ordinary warning w<sup>th</sup>in his speç. Constablerick 6<sup>d</sup>

ffor imprisonm<sup>t</sup> 2sh<sup>s</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> p day

The halfe of all fines not exceeding 6sh<sup>s</sup>

ffor giving notice of wedding℄ xij<sup>d</sup>

ffor serving any execuçõn 2sh<sup>s</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> his ordinary fee ℄ 6<sup>d</sup> in the £ extraord<sup>r</sup>, but if the place be far to goe then 2<sup>d</sup> a mile.

ffor sealing of measures 4<sup>d</sup> a peece.

ffor weight℄ 2<sup>d</sup>

ffor measuring of land according to the distance & trouble of the same ℄ his paines therein not to be valued w<sup>th</sup> co<sup>m</sup>õn labor but as a publick officer that attend℄ the duties of his place.

\*The Oath of the Messenger.

\*32

You shall be truly loyall to our Sovereigne Lord the King his heires & successors. You shall duly truly and faithfully waite upon pforme & execute the Office of you are called unto, seeking by all due means the welfare of the severall Colonies w<sup>th</sup>in this Governm<sup>t</sup> of New Plymouth: Attending such order, obeying such warrant℄, & doing such service as the Governour for the time being or any his Assistant℄ shall require, either in the behalfe of our Sov. Lord the King or between man & man as the case requireth for the peace & tranquillity of the place. You shall to the utmost of yo<sup>r</sup> power safely keepe such prisoners as are comitted to yo<sup>r</sup> custody and inflict or execute such sentence as shall be awarded Also such weight℄ & measures as shall be brought unto you shall as neere as may be make agreeable w<sup>th</sup> the standard comitted to yo<sup>r</sup> trust, and shall onely take such fees as are allowed w<sup>th</sup>out fraud or oppression. You shall also faithfully duly & truly serue our Sover. Lord the K. in the Office of a Constable in the ward of New Plymouth, wherein you shall see that his Ma<sup>ties</sup> peace comãded be not broken: but shall apprehend any that shall disturbe the same, and bring him or them before the Go<sup>v</sup>r or some one of the Assistant℄ for the time being, and there attend such order as shall be given. All w<sup>ch</sup> or cause it to be done.

pmise to

you shall faithfully obserue & doe. So helpe you God who is the God of truth & punisher of falsehood.

[PART I.]

[\*33]

\*A forme to be placed before the Record℄ of the severall inheritanc℄ granted to all ℄ every the King℄ subject℄ inhabiting w<sup>thin</sup> the Governm<sup>t</sup> of new Plymouth.

**W**HEREAS John Carver Will. Bradford Edw. Wynslow William Brewster Isaack Allerton and divers others the subject℄ of our late Sov. Lord James by the grace of God King of Engl. Scotl. ffrance ℄ Irel. Defender of the ffaith ℄c. did in the eighteenth yeare of his raigne of Engl. ffrance ℄ Ireland, and of Scotl. the fifty fowr w<sup>ch</sup> was in the yeare of our Lord God 1620 undertake a voyage into that pt of America called Virginia or New Engl. thereunto adjoyning, there to erect a plantaçõn ℄ Colony of English, intending the glory of God, the inlargem<sup>t</sup> of his Mâties dominions and the speciall good of the English Naçõn.

And whereas by the good providence of our gracious God the said John Carver Will Bradford Edward Wynslow William Brewster Isaack Allerton ℄ their Associat℄ arived in new England aforesaid in the harbour of Cape Cod or Paomet scituate ℄ being in new Engl. aforeçd where all the said psons entred into a Civill combinaçõn being the eleaventh of No<sup>v</sup>b in the yeare afore mençõned as the subject℄ of our said Sov. Lord the King to become a Body-politick binding ourselues to obserue such lawes ℄ ordinanc℄ and obey such Officers as from time to time should be made ℄ chosen for our welordering ℄ guidance. And thereupon by the favor of the Almighty began the

\*34 the first Colony in New Engl. (\*there being then no other w<sup>thin</sup> the said Continent) at a place called by the natiues Apaum ats Patuxet, but by the English New-Plymouth. All w<sup>ch</sup> land℄ being void of Inhabitant℄, we the said John Carver Will. Bradford Edward Wynslow William Brewster Isaack Allerton ℄ the rest our Associat℄ entring into a league of peace w<sup>th</sup> Massassowat since called Woosamequin Prince or Sachim of those pt℄, He the said Massassowat freely gaue them all the land℄ adjacent to them ℄ their heires for ever, acknowledging himselfe content to become the subject of our Sovereigne Lord the King aforesaid his heires ℄ Successors, And taking pteçõn of us the said John Carver William Bradford Edw Wynslow Will Brewster Isaack Allerton and their Associat℄ the naturall subject℄ of our Sov. Lord the King aforeçd. But having no speciall ðrs Patent℄ for the said pt℄ of New Engl. but onely the generall leaue ℄ liking of his Ma<sup>ty</sup> aforesaid for the free exercise of the leaue ℄ liberty of our Conscienc℄ in the publick worship ℄ service of God whereever we should settle: Being therefore now settled ℄ requiring speciall licence ℄ Co<sup>m</sup>mission from his Mâtie for the ordering

our affaires under his gracious pteccōn had sundry Commissions made & confirmed by his s̄d Māties Councell for New Engl. to John Peirce & his Associatℓ (whose name we onely made use of & whose Associatℓ we were) in the late happy & memorable raigne of our said Sovereigne Lord King James. But \*finding our selues still streightned and a wil[lingnes] in the Honorable Councell aforesaid to enlarge us, ptly in regard of the many difficulties we had undergone, and ptly in regard of the good service we had done as well in relieving his Māties subjectℓ as otherwaies we procured a further enlargem<sup>t</sup> under the name of Wilt Bradford aforesaid, & his Associatℓ (whose name we likewise used & whose Associatℓ as formerly we still are.) By vertue of w<sup>ch</sup> h<sup>rs</sup> Pattentℓ liberty is given unto us derivatory from our Sov. Lord King Charles bearing date the thirteenth of January 1629 being the fift yeare of his raigne of Engl. Scotl. ffraunce & Irel. &c and signed by the right Hoūble Robt Earle of Warwick in the behalfe of the rest of his Maties s̄d Councell for New Engl. & sealed w<sup>th</sup> their Comōn Seale allowed To frame & make Orders Ordnancℓ & Constitucōns for the ordering disposing & governing of our psons, and distributing the lands w<sup>th</sup>in the said limitℓ to be holden of his Mātie his heires & Successors as of his Mannor of East Greenw<sup>ch</sup> in the Cownty of Kent in free & comōn soccage & not in Capite nor by knightℓ service, vīz<sup>t</sup>. All that pt of New Engl. in America & tract & tractℓ of landℓ that lie w<sup>th</sup>in or between a certaine Rivolett or Rundlett there comōnly called Coahasset a<sup>ts</sup> Conahasset towards the North & the river comōnly called Naragunset river towardℓ the Sowth, and the great Westerne Ocean towards the East, & between & w<sup>th</sup>in a streight line directly extending up into the maine land towards \*the West from the mouth of the said River called Naragunsett River to the utmost limitℓ & bowndℓ of a Cowntrey or place in New Engl. comōnly called Pokenacutt a<sup>ts</sup> Puckenakick a<sup>ts</sup> Sawaamset Westward, and another like strait line extending it selfe directly from the mouth of the said River called Coahasset a<sup>ts</sup> Conahasset towardℓ the west so far up into the maine land westwards as the utmost limitℓ of the said place or Countrey comōnly called Pokenacutt a<sup>ts</sup> Puckenakick a<sup>ts</sup> Sawaamset doe extend together w<sup>th</sup> one halfe of the said River called Naragunsettℓ & the said Rivolet or rundlet called Coahasset a<sup>ts</sup> Conahasset And all landℓ Rivers waters havens creekℓ portℓ fishingℓ fowlingℓ & all hereditam<sup>tl</sup> pfittℓ Cōmodities & emolum<sup>tl</sup> whatsoever scituate lying & being or arising w<sup>th</sup>in or between the said limitℓ & bowndℓ or any of them. ffurthermore all that tract of land or pt of New Engl. or pt of America aforesaid w<sup>ch</sup> lieth w<sup>th</sup>in or between & extendeth itselfe from the utmost limitℓ of Cobbisecontee a<sup>ts</sup> Comaseconte w<sup>ch</sup> adjoyneth to the river of Kenebeke a<sup>ts</sup> Kenebekike towa<sup>rds</sup> the westerne Ocean, & a

[PART I.]

\*35

\*36



[PART I.]

place called the falls at Nequamkike in America aforesaid & the space of fifteen English miles on each side the said River commonly called Kenebeck River & all the said river called Kenebeck that lieth w<sup>th</sup>in the said limit & bownd Eastward Westward Northward or Sowthward last aboue mençoned, & all land & grownd & soyles Rivers waters fishing & hereditam<sup>tl</sup> & p<sup>ft</sup>itt<sup>l</sup> \*whatsoever scituate lying & being, arising happening or accrewing or w<sup>ch</sup> shall arise happen or accrew in or w<sup>th</sup>in the said limit & bownd or either of them, together w<sup>th</sup> free ingresse egressse & regresse w<sup>th</sup> ships boat & shallops & other vessels frō the Sea commonly called the westerne Ocean to the said River called Kenebeck & frō the said River to the said Westerne Ocean Together w<sup>th</sup> all prerogatives right & Royalties Jurisdiccōns priviledges ffranchises liberties & Immunities & also marine liberty w<sup>th</sup> the Escheat & Casualties thereof (the Admiralty Jurisdiccōn excepted) w<sup>th</sup> all the interest right title claime & demand whatsoever w<sup>ch</sup> the said Cowncell & their Successors now haue or ought to haue or may haue & require heerafter in or to any the said porçōn or tract of land heereby mençoned to be granted or any the premises in as free large ample & beneficiall manner to all intent & construcōns and purposes whatsoever as the said Cowncell by vertue of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> said h<sup>rs</sup> pattent may or can grant. To haue & to hold the said tract & tract of land & all & singular the premises aboue mençoned to be granted w<sup>th</sup> their & every of their appurtenanc & to the said William Bradford his heires associat & assignes for ever to the onely prop & absolute use & behoofe of the said Wilf Bradford his heires Associat & Assignes for ever. Yielding & paying unto our said Sov. Lord the King his heires & Successors for ever one fift pt of the Oare of the Mines of Gold & silver & one other fift pt thereof to the President & Cowncell w<sup>ch</sup> shall be had possessed \*and obtayned w<sup>th</sup>in the precinct aforesaid for all servic & demands whatsoever. allowing the s<sup>d</sup> W. Bradford his Associat & assignes & every of them his & their ffactor & agent & tenant & serv<sup>tl</sup> And all such as he or they shall send & employ about his s<sup>d</sup> p<sup>tic</sup>ular plantaçōn shall & may frō time to time freely & lawfully goe & returne trade & traffick as well w<sup>th</sup> the English as any the natiues w<sup>th</sup>in the p<sup>ci</sup>nts aforesaid w<sup>th</sup> liberty of fishing upon any pt of the Sea Coast & Sea shores of any the Seas or Iland & adjacent & not being inhabited or otherwaies disposed of by order of the said president & Cowncell. fforbidding all others to traffick w<sup>th</sup> the natiues or inhabite any the said limit w<sup>th</sup>out the speciall leaue of the s<sup>d</sup> W. Bradford his heires or Associat & allowing the said W. Bradford his heires & Associat to take apprehend seise & make prize of all such p<sup>sons</sup> their ships & good & as shall attempt to inhabite or trade w<sup>th</sup> the salvage people as afore s<sup>d</sup> & c.

Moreover whereas in the first beginning of this Colony divers merch<sup>tl</sup>



ℓ others of the City of London ℓ elsewhere adventured divers sums of money  
 w<sup>th</sup> the said John Carver Wilk Bradford Edw Wynslow William Brewster  
 Isaack Allerton ℓ the rest their Associatℓ on certaine termes of ptnership  
 to continue for the terme of seaven yeares. The s̄d terme being exspired,  
 The Plantaçõn by reason of the manifold losses ℓ crosses by Sea ℓ land in the  
 beginning of so great a worke being largely indebted, ℓ no meanes to pay  
 the said debtℓ but by the sale of the whole: And the same being put to sale,  
 We the said \*Wilk Bradford Edw. Wynslow, Wilk B[rewster] Isaack Allerton  
 ℓ other our Associatℓ the Inhabitants of New Plymouth ℓ elsewhere being  
 loath to be deprived of our labors bought the same for ℓ in consideraçõn  
 of eighteen hundred powndℓ starling v̄tzt all ℓ singular the priviledges landℓ  
goodℓ buildingℓ Chattels Ordnance muniçõn or whatsoever apptayned to the  
said plantaçõn or the adventurers w<sup>th</sup> all ℓ singular the priviledgℓ thereunto  
belonging as appeareth by a deed between the said Isaack Allerton then  
agent for the said Wilk Bradford ℓ his Associatℓ on the one pt, and John  
Pocock Robt Keyne Edward Basse James Sherley ℓ Joh. Beauchamp on the  
other pt being thereunto deputed by the said merchantℓ ℓ the rest adven-  
turing as aforesaid as appeareth by a deed bearing date the sixt of November  
in the third yeare of the raigne of our Sov. Lord Charles by the grace of God  
King of Engl. Scotl. ffrance ℓ Irel. ꝑc. Anno Dom. 1627. Be it knowne  
therefore unto all men by these p̄nts That according to our first intentℓ for  
the better effecting the glory of God, the enlargem<sup>t</sup> of the dominions of our  
said Sov. Lord the King, and the speciall good of his Subjectℓ, by vertue as  
well of our Combinaçõn aforesaid as also the severall grantℓ by us procured  
in the names of Joh. Peirce and Wilk Bradford their heires ℓ Associatℓ,  
together w<sup>th</sup> our lawfull right in respect of vacancy donaçõn or purchase of  
the natiues, and our full purchase of the Adventurers before expressed, haue  
given unto allotted assigned ℓ granted to all ℓ every pson ℓ psons whose  
name or names shall follow upon this publick Record such p̄porçõn or p̄-  
porçõns of growndℓ w<sup>th</sup> all ℓ singular the priviledges ther[eunto] \*belonging  
as aforesaid to him or them his or their heires ℓ Assignes successively for ever  
to be holden of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> of Engl. his heires ℓ successors as of his Mannor  
of East Greenw<sup>ch</sup> in the Cownty of Kent in free ℓ cōmon Soccage ℓ not in  
Capite nor by Knightℓ service. Yielding ℓ payng to our said Sov. Lord the  
King his heires ℓ Successors for ever one fift pt of the Oare of the Mines of  
Gold ℓ silver ℓ one other fift pt to the President ℓ Cowncell w<sup>ch</sup> shall be had  
possessed and obtayned as aforesaid. And whatsoever landℓ are granted to  
any by the said Wilk Bradford, Edw Wynslow Wilk Brewster Isaack Aller-  
ton ℓ their heires ℓ associatℓ as aforesaid being acknowledged in publick Court

[PART I.]

\*39

\*40



\*At the generall Court held at New Plymouth the 3<sup>d</sup> of January 1636 in the xij<sup>th</sup> yeare of the Raigne of o<sup>r</sup> Souaigne Lord Charles by the grace of God of England ꝙ. Kinge defendor of the fayth ꝙ. before Edward Winslowe gen<sup>l</sup> Goūnour W<sup>m</sup> Bradford Thomas Prynce John Alden Steeven Hopkins W<sup>m</sup> Collyer Tymothy Hatherley and John Browne Gentl<sup>e</sup> Assistants ꝙ.

[PART I.]

\*45

**W**HERAS M<sup>r</sup> Hatherley in the behalfe of the Church of Scituate informed this Court That the place (for ought they can yet discern) is too streate for them to reside comfortably vpon and that the lands adjacent are very Stony and not convenient to plant vpon whereby they are disabled to receiue any moore neighbours for their more comfortable societie. It is therefore consented vnto and agreed vpon by the Court That the said Inhabitant<sup>l</sup> of Scituate shall haue libertie to seeke out a convenient place for their resideing w<sup>th</sup>in the Colony, and to giue notice thereof to the Goūnour and Assistant<sup>l</sup> that they may cause the same to be veiwed, and if the same shalbe thought conveyent then to be graunted vnto them, vnlesse there shalbe some other lands found fitt to be layd to them for their moore comfortable subsistance at Scituate.

Scituate, a plantation.

It is also ordered by the Court that the Cutt at Greenes Harbōr for a boate passage shalbe made eighteene foote wide and sixe foote deepe. And for the manner how the same shalbe donn for the better ordering thereof it is referred to the Gouvern<sup>r</sup> and Assistant<sup>l</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the help of John Winslowe Jonathan Brewster John Barnes ꝙ Christopher Waddesworth aswell to pportion euery man equally to the charge thereof as also to order men that shall worke thereat, that tenn men may worke together there at once, and that the Goūnour or whom he shall appoynt shall ouersee the same that it may be well pformed.

The Cutt at Marshfield to be enlarged.

It is also ordered ꝙ enacted by the Court that the Inhabitant<sup>l</sup> of New Plymouth shall haue liberty to meete together to make orders for the herdinge of their Cattle ꝙ such other thinges as shalbe needfull for their moore neighbourly liueing together.

Plymouth to make orders.

\*It is ordered by the Court That the Corne of John Jenney Thomas Willet ꝙ Georg Watson seized by the Goūnour to the vse of the Collony by vertue of a for<sup>m</sup> lawe: shalbe referred to the Bench to deale therein as they shall see cause.

\*46

It is ordered by the Court That M<sup>r</sup> Collyer M<sup>r</sup> Hopkins M<sup>r</sup> Browne M<sup>r</sup>

Treaty aboute the trade.

[PART I.] Done John Jenney Jonathan Brewster John Winslowe & Thomas Willett shall treat w<sup>th</sup> those that haue the trade in theire handℓ & to p<sup>r</sup>pare such conclusions conċning the same That the Court being made acquainted therew<sup>th</sup> and approueing thereof may conclude the same w<sup>th</sup> them.

At the Genall Court held the vij<sup>th</sup> March 1636  
Mr Bradford Gou<sup>r</sup>nor.

Shooting in  
night.

Approved.

IT is concluded vpon by the Court that if any shall shoote of a peece at any fowle or otherwise in the night tyme betwixt day light and day light shall forfeite twenty shillings for euery shott to be payd to the Treasurer to the use of the Collony, except he shoote at a Wolfe, or for the fyndinge of some man lost.

Allarum.

Approved.

It is also concluded vpon by the Court That three peeces shott of distinctly one after another shalbe for an allarum. And two peeceℓ to giue warning of some howse on fier.

Mill at  
Plimouth.  
\*47

\*It is concluded vpon by the Court That Mr John Jenney shall haue liberty to erect a Milne for grinding and beating of Corne vpon the brooke of Plymouth to be to him & his heires for euer. And shall haue a pottle of Corne toule vpon euery bushell for grinding the same for the space of the two first yeares next after the said Milne is erected, and afterwardℓ but a quart at a bushell for all that is brought to the milne by others, but if he fetch it & grind it himself or by his servantℓ then to haue a pottle toule for euery bushell as before.

Ladders.

Approved.

fforasmuch as great Losses haue heretofore happened by fyer whereby men haue had their houses and goods w<sup>th</sup>in the same vtterly consumed, w<sup>ch</sup> might haue benee p<sup>r</sup>vented in some good measure if Ladders could haue benee had neere hand. It is therefore enacted by the Court That euery housholder w<sup>th</sup>in this Colony & gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue one sufficient ladder or ladders at least about his house w<sup>ch</sup> will reach y<sup>e</sup> top vpon penalty of euery such default to forfeite tenn shillings to be leavyed to the use of the Governm<sup>t</sup>.

Inhabitants of  
Plimouth.

Approved.

It is enacted by the Court That noe pson or psons hereafter shalbe admitted to liue and inhabite w<sup>th</sup>in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of New Plymouth w<sup>th</sup>out the leaue and likeing of the Gou<sup>r</sup>nor or two of the Assistantℓ at least.

It is enacted by the Court That there shalbe a watch of foure men hyred to keepe watch at New Plymouth at the Publick charge for the safety of the person of the Goſn<sup>r</sup> And the Towne of New Plymouth to add more men vnto them to strenghen them as need shall require.

[PART I.]

Watch for y<sup>e</sup> safety of Govern<sup>t</sup>.

\*At the genall Court the second of Octobr: 1637.

\*48

**I**T is enacted by the Court that sixscore and twelue fishes shalbe accounted to the hundred of all sortℓ of fishes.

C of fish. Approved.

It is enacted by the Court That all Swine w<sup>th</sup>in these Colonies shalbe sufficiently ringed after they shalbe tenn weeks old, and if that any shalbe complayned of to be vnruely, that then they be yeoked vpon the penalty of six pence for euery swine that shalbe found vnringed and not presently ringed vpon warneing giuen thereof, and this to be donn by the first of Nouember next.

Swine.

q<sup>r</sup>Taunton began here to be added to this booke. June 5<sup>th</sup> 1638.

~~It is enacted by the Court That no housholder w<sup>th</sup>in this Goſm<sup>t</sup> shall take any seruant coming out of his tyme or other seruant (that is not of manuell trade) into partnership w<sup>th</sup> him vpon penallty to forfeite fine poundℓ sterℓ for euery such default, except he shalbe allowed by the Goſn<sup>r</sup> ℓ Assistantℓ so to doe, And that all contractℓ for seruantℓ for any tyme shalbe recorded before the Goſn<sup>r</sup> or some one of the Assistants, ℓ the Clarke to haue foure pence for his paynes. And that none shall hire a seruant vnder half a yeare.~~

The act about firing woodℓ was altered this Court.

Whereas there is a great abuse in takeing of Tobaccoe in very vnciuill manner openly in the Towne streets and as men passe vpon the heigh wayes as also in the feildℓ and as men are at worke in the woods ℓ feilds to the neglect of their labours and to the great reproach of this Goſment It is therefore enacted by the Court That if any shalbe found or seene takeing Tobaccoe in the streets of any Towne w<sup>th</sup>in the Colonys of this Goſment or in any barne or outhouse or by the heigh wayes ℓ not aboue a mile from a dwelling house or at his worke in the feilds where hee doth not dyne or eate his meate That euery such pson or psons so offending shall forthw<sup>th</sup> pay xij<sup>d</sup> for euery such offence as o<sup>r</sup> as he or they shall so offend, and ℓ shalbe lawfull vpon informaçon for the Constable of the Towneship or next to the place where such offence shalbe committed to distrayne his goods for yt if he refuse to pay it vpon demand, And for Boyes and seruantℓ that shall offend

Septemb<sup>r</sup> 4<sup>th</sup> 1638.

[PART I.] herein (℥ haue nothing ~~to~~ pay) to be set in the ~~stocks~~ for the first default and for the second to be whipt.

App'ved.  
firing of  
woods.

Whereas many haue sustayned great damage by the indiscreet firing of the woods, It is by this p<sup>r</sup>nt<sup>e</sup> order forbidden to any to set fyre on them except betweene the first day of the month of february and the middest of the month of Aprill And that whatsoeu<sup>r</sup> damage cometh to any by the breach of this order in firing the woods otherwise to be made good by the delinquent and whensoeu<sup>r</sup> any are justly occasioned to fyre the same they shall giue warneing to the neighbours aboute them and If any p<sup>r</sup>son fire y<sup>e</sup> woods y<sup>t</sup> hath noe iust cause so to doe he shall forfeite x<sup>s</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> countries vse or be whipt.

Septembr 4<sup>th</sup>  
1638.  
North fferry.  
\*49

\*Whereas there is greate need of a fferry boat to be erected to transport men and cattell ouer the North Riuer many complaineing of the want thereof and such as passed that way were at great charge ℥ put to many inconveniences for want thereof ffor the redressing whereof It is enacted by the Court That there shalbe xij<sup>d</sup> for euery famyly levyed throughout the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment toward℥ the charges of the building of two vessells or boat℥ for the transporta<sup>cion</sup> of men and cattell ouer the said Riuer at the now passage place And that M<sup>r</sup> Jonathan Brewster shall haue the keeeping and the p<sup>r</sup>fit℥ of the said fferry to haue and to hold to him and his heires foreuer, and shall build and from tyme to tyme mayntaine two sufficient boat℥ or vessells one for the carrying of men and another for carrying of cattell ou<sup>r</sup> the said North Riuer w<sup>th</sup> a sufficient man or two to attend them And shall haue these rates for the first yeare viz<sup>t</sup> for a man ij<sup>d</sup> for a horse and his rider vj<sup>d</sup> for a beast vj<sup>d</sup> for swine and goates ij<sup>d</sup> a peece. And after the first yeare for a man ij<sup>d</sup> for a horse ℥ his rider vj<sup>d</sup> for a beast iiij<sup>d</sup> and for a goate or swine j<sup>d</sup> of all men of w<sup>t</sup> planta<sup>cion</sup> soeu<sup>r</sup>.

Septembr 1638.  
Bridges.

Whereas there is great necessyty of a bridg ouer the South Riuer another ouer Joanes Riuer and another ouer the Eele Riuer It is enacted by the Court That the Inhabitants of Scituate shall build a bridg ouer the South Riuer and that the Inhabitant℥ of Sandweech and Mattacheese or Yarmouth shall build a bridg ouer the Eele Riuer and the Inhab<sup>ant</sup>℥ of the Townships of Plymouth and Duxborrow shall build a bridg ouer Joanes Riuer All w<sup>ch</sup> said bridges to be made passable for horsemen and footemen. and that there be a fferry boate kept in the interim to carry men ouer Joanes Riuer especially at the Court tymes or other speciall occations.

\*Whereas there is greate abuse complained of by buying and regratinge goods and commodities w<sup>ch</sup> come in boates & vessels to be sould in diuers places w<sup>th</sup>in this Gouerment and selling the same againe in the same townes & markett℄ to the disapoynting of the necessyities of many and oppressing them in the price when their necessyities do constraine them to buy them at any price. It is enacted by the Court That none shall so buy any goods or comōdyties coming to be sould at any Towne w<sup>th</sup>in this Goūment by land or water to engrosse them into their hands to thend the price may be enhanuced by selling them againe in the same towne or markett, (except he buy by whole sale to retayle the same againe at reasonable gaine the abuse to be enquired of by the Grand enqueste, & vpon their p<sup>r</sup>sentm<sup>nt</sup> to be censured by the discretion of the Bench.

[PART I.]  
 Septbr 4: 1633.  
 \*50

Whereas diuers p<sup>r</sup>sons are come to dwell in seūall plantaçōns w<sup>th</sup>in this goūment w<sup>th</sup>out leaue of the Gouer<sup>nt</sup> or takeing the Oath of fidelitie contrary to the act℄ of this Court and because there are not majestrat℄ dwelling in such plac℄ to exhibite the said Oath vnto them It is therefore enacted by the Court That such of the Assistant℄ as the Goū<sup>nt</sup> shall think fitt shalbe especially assigned to repaire to such plac℄ and to require the said Oath of them and for such as shall refuse to take yt That they be appoynted to repaire to the Court at Plymouth: And that such as shalbe appoynted to be ymployed herein or in any other publike businesse haue their charges borne by the Publike.

Decembr 4<sup>th</sup>  
 1633.  
 Oath of fidelity  
 administered  
 by some mag-  
 istrate.

Whereas diuers p<sup>r</sup>sons vnfit for marriage both in regard of their yeong yeares as also in regard of their weake estate, some practising the enveagle- ing of mens daughters & maids vnder gardians (contrary to their pent℄ & gardians likeing) and of mayde servants w<sup>th</sup>out leaue and likeing of their masters It is therefore enacted by the Court That if any shall make any motion of marriage to any mans daughter or mayde servant not haueing first obtayned leaue and consent of the pent℄ or master so to doe shalbe punished either by fine or corporall punishment or both, at the discretion of the bench & according to the nature of the offence.

Marriage.  
 confirmed.

It is also enacted that if a motion of marriage be duly made to the master and through any sinister end or couetous desire hee will not consent therevnto Then the cause to be made knowne vnto the Majestrat℄ and they to set downe such order therein as vpon examinaçōn of the case shall appeare to be most equell on both p<sup>t</sup>s.

confirmd.

[PART I.]  
 Millners &  
 tolle.  
 confirmd.

\*51

\*It is enacted by the Court That the Milner of Scituate shall not take aboute the sixteenth part of a bushell for grinding such Corne as is brought vnto the Milne. And whereas there are diuers other Milnes w<sup>th</sup>in this Colony who are allowed competent toule for grinding and do not grind Corne as they ought to doe It is enacted by the Court that such millners shall either grind their Corne sufficiently or els that vpon complaint to the Court thereof and the thing procued the miller shall pay for euery such defált vj<sup>d</sup> for euery bushell to the pty greeued and vj<sup>d</sup> to the Treasurer for the collonies use.

Repealed the  
 Septemb<sup>r</sup>  
 Court 1639.

~~It is enacted by the Court according to the form act<sup>l</sup> of this Court concerning labourers wages That a labourer shall haue xij<sup>d</sup> a day & his dyett or xvij<sup>d</sup> a day w<sup>th</sup>out dyett & not aboute throughout the gouernment.~~

q<sup>r</sup>  
 Swine.

It is enacted by the Court That Swyne may be vnringed from the first Tewsdays in December to the first Tewsdays in March following notwithstanding the form<sup>d</sup> ordinance to the contrary.

Transportinge  
 psens into  
 Patent.  
 confirmd.

It is enacted by the Court That if any master of a Boate shall bring any passengers or suffer any to be brought in his Boate into any plantaçõn w<sup>th</sup>in the Gouernment, (and not haue leaue so to doe either from the Gouernment or Committees of the place) shall keepe them whilst they stay and recarry them and their goods to the place from whence they came.

Dyettinge in  
 Ordinaries.  
 confirmd.

fforasmuch as greate inconvenienc<sup>l</sup> haue been occasioned by yeong men and other labourers that haue dyeted in Inns and Alehouses especially who haue had other houses to repaire vnto in the same Towne It is therefore enacted by the Court That none shall dyett in Inns or Alehouses nor haunt them w<sup>ch</sup> are in the Townes they liue in nor make them the ordinary place of their aboade.

March 5<sup>th</sup>  
 1638.  
 \*52  
 confirmd.

\*Concerning the fferryman at the North riuer It is ordered & concluded vpon by the Court That if hee shall carry onely one man both of the North and South Riuer hee shall haue foure pence, but if there be moore then one to set ouer then hee shall haue but two pence a peece for as many as he can carry at once, and likewise that he shall haue ij a pson for e<sup>n</sup> for carrying them ouer the north riuer.

Who to exer-  
 cise Armes.

Concerning such as are allowed to exercise men in Armes in the se<sup>u</sup>all Townes w<sup>th</sup>in this gouernment the Court doth order as follow<sup>th</sup>.



That Mr William Vassell & W<sup>m</sup> Hatch shall exercise the Inhabitant<sup>ℓ</sup> of Scituate in their Armes. [PART I.]

That Captaine Poolé shall exercise the Inhabitants of Cohannett in their Armes.

That Captaine Standish shall be for Plymouth.

ffor Duxborrow	-	-	Leiftennant Holmes
ffor Sandwich	-	-	John Blakemore
ffor Yarmouth	-	-	Wilt <sup>m</sup> Palmer
ffor Barnestable	-	-	Mr Tho <sup>m</sup> Dimmack
ffor Marshfeld	-	-	Mr Nathaniell Thomas.

It is enacted by the Court that there shall be as many of the Inhabitant<sup>ℓ</sup> of Scituate in number w<sup>ch</sup> are not ffreemen added to the ffreemen there ffor ordering and concluding the Townes affaire for fenceing of ground<sup>ℓ</sup> hearding of Cattle and such like occations, or els the whole Towne to meete together to doe it.

\*Whereas complaint was made that the ffreemen were put to many incon-  
 veniencies and great expences by their continuall attendance at the Court<sup>ℓ</sup>  
 It is therefore enacted by the Court for the ease of the sefall Colonies and  
 Townes w<sup>th</sup>in the Go<sup>u</sup>ment That euery Towne shall make choyce of two of  
 their ffreemen and the Towne of Plymouth of foure to be Committees or  
 Deputies to joyne w<sup>th</sup> the Bench to enact and make all such lawes and ordi-  
 nances as shall be judged to be good and wholesome for the whole Provided  
 that the lawes they doe enact shall be ppounded one Court to be considered  
 vpon vntill the next Court, and then to be confirmed if they shall be approoued  
 of (except the case require p<sup>r</sup>sent confirma<sup>o</sup>n) And ℓ if any act shall be con-  
 firmed by the Bench and Committees w<sup>ch</sup> vpon further delibera<sup>o</sup>n shall proue  
 p<sup>r</sup>judiciall to the whole That the ffreemen at the next elec<sup>o</sup>n Court after  
 meeting together may repeale the same and enact any other vsefull for the  
 whole And that euery Towneship shall beare their Committees charges and  
 that such as are not ffreemen but haue taken the Oath of fidelitie and are  
 masters of famylies and Inhabitant<sup>ℓ</sup> of the said Townes as they are to beare  
 their pt in the charges of their Committees so to haue a vote in the choyce  
 of them. p<sup>r</sup>vided they choose them onely of the ffreemen of the said Towne  
 whereof they are: but if any such Co<sup>m</sup>ittees shall be insufficient or trouble-  
 some that then the Bench and thother Comittees may dismisse them and the  
 Towne to choose other ffreem<sup>n</sup> in their place.

March 5<sup>th</sup> 1638. \*53  
 Towne Deputies.

[PART I.]

\*54

\*M<sup>r</sup> B[r]adford Gour<sup>r</sup>At the geñall Court held the 4<sup>th</sup> June 1639.

d

IT is enacted by the Court That if any man shall sell or lend any kynd of guns peeces or pistolls or any shott leade or powder to any Indian hee shalbe punished for yt at the discretion of the Bench.

qr

It is enacted by the Court That euery housholder w<sup>th</sup>in the Goũment shall sowe one Rodd of ground square at least w<sup>th</sup> hemp or flax yearely and some one in euery Towne to bee appoynted to see the same down and p<sup>r</sup>sent it to the Court in June yearely.

Markett℥ ℥ fayres.

confirmed  
3<sup>d</sup> Septemb<sup>r</sup>  
1639.  
Approved.

It is enacted by the Court that there shalbe a markett kept at Plymouth euery Thursday and a faire yearely the last Wensday in May ℥ to continue two dayes and a faire at Duxborrow the first Wensday in October yearly ℥ to continne two dayes for all cattell ℥ comodities.

Sept. 3 1639.  
Idlness.

Approved.

ffor the p<sup>r</sup>venting of Idlness and other euells occasioned thereby It is enacted by the Court That the Grand Jury men of euery Towne shall haue power w<sup>th</sup>in their seũall Towneshippes to take a speciall view and notice of all manner of p<sup>r</sup>sons marryed or single dwelling w<sup>th</sup>in their seũall Townes that haue smale meanes to mayntaine them and are suspected to liue idly ℥ loosely ℥ to require an account of them how they liue, And such as they fynd delinquent and cannot giue a good account thereof vnto them that they cause the Constable to bring them before the Goũn<sup>r</sup> and Assistant℥ at Plymouth the first Court of Assistant℥ after such delinquent℥ shalbe found out. That such course may be taken w<sup>th</sup> them as in the wisdome of the Goũment shalbe adjudged just and equall.

Townes to  
make orders.  
\*55

Allowed.

\*It is also enacted and concluded by the Court That all the Towneshippes w<sup>th</sup>in this Governm<sup>t</sup> allowed or to be allowed shall haue liberty to meete together and to make such Towne orders as shalbe needfull and requisite for the hearing of cattell and doing such other things as shalbe needfull for the mayntenance of good neighbourhood, and to set penalties vpon delinquent℥ Prouided that their orders be not repngnant nor infringing any publike act℥ And that the fines and penalties shalbe disposed of afterwards to their p<sup>r</sup>ticuler Townes p<sup>r</sup>uided also that the fyne℥ exceed not the sum of tenn shillings for any one fyne.

It is also enacted that the Trade shalbe continued in m<sup>r</sup> Bradford and his ptners hande during the terme w<sup>ch</sup> is till Novemb<sup>r</sup> come twelue months and that m<sup>r</sup> Bradford shall haue y<sup>e</sup> 80<sup>li</sup> waight of beauer giuen the Colony for the first yeares p<sup>ro</sup>fit for xxxv<sup>li</sup> sterl. [PART I.]

Acte considered vpon this Court

That there be fourty pounde yearely equally leyed by the Townes w<sup>ch</sup> in the Govern<sup>mt</sup> to be allowed the Govern<sup>mt</sup> for the tyme beinge towarde the defraying of the charge of the place and to be encreased hereafter as need shall require. referred to the next Court.

That the Committees shall conferr w<sup>th</sup> the freemen & giue in the next Court how the lande shalbe disposed of whether as before or by any other way.

\*Acte made and confirmed at the genall Court the 3<sup>d</sup> March 1639.

\*56

**T**HAT no servant comeing out of England or elsewhere and is to serue a master for some tyme be admitted his freedome or to be for himself vntill he haue serued forth his tyme either w<sup>th</sup> his master or some other although hee shall buy out his tyme, except he haue bene a house keeper or master of a famly or meete & fitt to bee so. Serv<sup>ts</sup> comeing out of Engl. Approved.

That no man shall giue, trade, truck or exchange directly or indirectly w<sup>th</sup> the Natiues or Indians (other then English mens seruent) to giue or pay him any money gould or siluer for the same vpon the penalty to forfaite twenty for one by him or her that shall so doe. Trading Guns & powder &c. w<sup>th</sup> natiues. confirmed.

The like penalty also vpon any that shall giue trade truck or exchange w<sup>th</sup> the Natiues for any kynd of millitary Armes as Guns of any leng<sup>th</sup> or sort whatsoever or any shott lead bulletts or powder or sworde daggers or rapiers or mend or repaire any kynd of peece for them or armes to forfaite twenty for one. confirmed.

That the constables That liue remote hence in the further plantaco<sup>ns</sup> shalbe freed from attendance at the genall Courte after they are sworne except there be speciall cause and that if the Constable of any Towne doe goe from hoame he shall depute some other man in his roome vntill his returne provided it bee such p<sup>er</sup>son as hath borne the same place & for default to forfeit ten shillings. Constables & y<sup>er</sup> deputies. Confirmed.

That whosoe<sup>r</sup> shall p<sup>ro</sup>phanely sweare or curse by the name of God or any of his titles Attributes word or workes vpon prooffe thereof made by s<sup>u</sup>rfane swearing & cursing. Confirmed.

[PART I.]

ficient testimony or confession of the party he shall pay for euery such default xij<sup>d</sup> or be set in the stocks so it exceed not the space of three howers or putt in prison according to the nature & quallity of the pson.

Thus far the Majestr. & deputies accorded.

20<sup>th</sup> to the Gov<sup>r</sup>.  
nore.

Whereas in regard that the Gov<sup>r</sup>ment hath often fallne vpon one & the same pson w<sup>ch</sup> hath beene very burdensome vnto him and an impouerishing of his estate The Court doth therefore enacte & conclude that the twenty pound℥ for this yeares benefitt of the trade shalbe payd to the Gov<sup>r</sup> toward℥ his charg℥ in sustayneing the place and that the Townes w<sup>thin</sup> the Gov<sup>r</sup>ment shall add therevnto what euery man shall think meete & conveyent & pay it to the Tresurer for his vse.

Comission to  
Mr Bradford &  
Mr Winslowe.

That the Commission directed to Mr Bradford & Mr Winslow for the setting of the bound℥ betwixt the Two patent℥ of Plymouth & Mattachusett℥ Bay be renewed for six months.

That Cohannett shalbe called Taunton.

Repealed.  
\*57

\*That two sufficient men one of Yarmouth & another of Barnestable be yearely chosen & nominated against the next Court to be joynd w<sup>th</sup> Mr free-man of Sandwich to heare and determine suit℥ and controvsies betwixt pty & pty w<sup>thin</sup> the townships not exceeding three pounds.

Herringe  
weares.

It is enacted by the Court That A hering ware to take fish shalbe erected at Joanes Riuer and that such as will put in their stock or mony at the first for the erecting of the same shall haue an answerable pporcion of gaine & if it proue pjudiciall to the generall, that then vpon payment of the charges to be pulled downe.

The like liberty vpon the like condiçions are graunted to erect wares to take fish At Mortons hole Blewfish Riuer Eagles Nest Greens harbour & the Eele Riuer or any other Creeke.

300<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup>  
Purchasers.

Whereas vpon a pposiçon made by the Grand Inquest at the gefiall Court held the fift day of March 1638 by what vertue & power the Gov<sup>r</sup> and Assistant℥ do gine & dispose of lands either to pticular psons or Townships and Plantaçons wherevpon eū since there hath beene a Cessaçon of the graunt of lands to any psons by the Gov<sup>r</sup>nt: And now vpon heareing and debateing the controuersies matters and differenc℥ about & conçning the same in the Publike Court And whereas there was a larg sunie of money disbursed

by those that held the trade viz<sup>s</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Bradford M<sup>r</sup> Prence Captaine Standish & the rest of their ptners for the enlargment of the Patent of New Plymouth in New England, In consideration that all controüisies & differenc<sup>e</sup> about the same may hereafter cease and determine, whether betwixt the Purchasers, old Commers, ffreemen, or others about the same. The Court hath by mutuall assent & consent of all as well purchasers Old Comers as ffreemen enacted & concluded that there shalbe three hundred pounds ster<sup>t</sup> (or so much as shalbe required not exceeding the said sume of three hundred pound<sup>e</sup>) payd to those that held the trade viz<sup>s</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Bradford M<sup>r</sup> Prence Cap<sup>t</sup> Standish and the rest of the ptners towards the charges of the enlargment of the said Patent if the same shalbe required out of the psonall estat<sup>e</sup> of the said M<sup>r</sup> Bradford M<sup>r</sup> Prence Cap<sup>t</sup> Standish & the rest of the ptners w<sup>ch</sup> said three hundred pounds or lesser sume shalbe levyed vpon the plantaço<sup>n</sup>s by such equall way as shalbe thought meete. And that they Purchasers or old Comers shall make choyce of two or three places for themselues & their heires before the next December Court & that after such choyce made and established All the residue of the land<sup>e</sup> not formly graunted forth either to plantaço<sup>n</sup>s or p<sup>t</sup>icular p<sup>er</sup>sons shalbe assigned & surrendred into the hands of the whole Body of the ffreemen to be disposed of either by the whole Body or by such p<sup>er</sup>sons as shalbe by the whole Body of ffreemen assigned & authorised And that all lands already graunted either to plantaço<sup>n</sup>s or p<sup>t</sup>icular p<sup>er</sup>sons shall stand & remayne firme to them their heires & assignes for euer to whom they are so giuen & graunted Prouided that all lands shalbe now free to graunt to such p<sup>er</sup>sons as stand in neede in the Plantaço<sup>n</sup>s now made saue that there shalbe no more Plantaço<sup>n</sup>s erected vntill the Purchasers haue made their choyce as afores<sup>d</sup>. And \*whatsoever shalbe further materiall & requisite in law for the confirmeing & establishing this act and order It shalbe donn by Counsell to the intents & purposes herein contained & expressed if neede require.

[PART I.]

\*58

It is also enacted by the whole Body of the Court That the Go<sup>u</sup>rn and Assistant<sup>e</sup> shall graunt lands to p<sup>t</sup>icular p<sup>er</sup>sons w<sup>th</sup>in the Townes of Plymouth & Duxborrow as they haue donn formly vntill December next.

It is enacted by the Court That the Prison shalbe erected at Plymouth. Prisone.

It is enacted by the Court That the Messenger shall haue thirty bushells of Corne for the yeare past and thirty bushells for the yeares comeing & to be levyed vpon the whole Go<sup>u</sup>rnment.

It is also enacted & concluded by the Court That Nathaniell Sowther shalbe Clarke of the Court and shall haue thirty pounds p<sup>er</sup> an<sup>n</sup>, besides his

[PART I.] other fees from this tyme forward to be payd him quarterly by the Tresurer  
levying it vpon the whole Collonies.

Townships  
power con-  
firmd.

55

to be con-  
firmd.

Whereas the Townships w<sup>th</sup>in this Goũment haue formly had liberty to meete together and make some Towne Orders w<sup>ch</sup> are thought to bee defectiue for that they conceiued they had not power to make Assesment & rates & taxes for raisinge such necessary expenc<sup>e</sup> as shalbe disbursed about the genall occasions of the Townes conc̄ning the Cōmon wealth It is enacted by the Court That euery Towneshipp shall haue liberty to meete together and make levyes rates & taxes for their townes charges & to distraine such as shall refuse to pay the same vpon warrant from the Court or Gouvernor.

Bounds of Townships by M<sup>r</sup>s

stand.

It is also enacted by the Court That the Goũn<sup>r</sup> and Assistants shall appoynt and set forth the bounds of Townshippes as formly they haue donn.

Acts made & confirmed ˘ the Gen Court the 1<sup>st</sup> Septemb<sup>r</sup> 1640.

Constables to  
warne meet-  
ings.

stand.

**T**HAT the Constables of euery Towne w<sup>th</sup>in the Goũn<sup>t</sup> shall warne the townes men whereof they are to come together as they doe for other townes businesse when the Committees shall think it fitt, aswell to acquaint them with what is p̄pounded or enacted at the Court, as to receiue instrucc̄õns for any other busines they would haue donne.

vnseasonable  
taking of To-  
bacco.  
Stand.

That if any p̄son or p̄sons take tobaccoe whilst they are empanelled vpon a Jurie to forfait fīue shillinges for euery default except they haue giuen vp their verdict, or are not to giue yt vntill the next day or dept the Court by consent.

Trayned who.  
stand.

\*59

\*That the Inhabĩts of euery Towne w<sup>th</sup>in the Gouverment fitt & able to beare armes be trayned (at least) six tymes in the yeare.

repealed.

That all such p̄son and p̄sons as haue sowed any hempe or flaxe according to the form̄ act of the Court, shall not waste the same but shall dresse the said hemp or flax or p̄cure it to be dressed fitt for some good use and p̄serue the seed: And the Cōmittees of the seũall Townes shall see the same so donn the week before the elec̄c̄õn Court and to make report thereof to the Court. Vpon penalty of fīue shillings to be forfeited to the Colonys use for euery Delinquent therein.

At the geñall Court held the 2<sup>d</sup> March 1640. xvj<sup>to</sup> Cañ Rē

[PART I.]

**I**T is enacted by the Court That Greens Harbour shalbe a Township and have all the priueledges of a Township that other Townes haue and that it shalbe called by the name of Rexhame. but now Marshfeild. Greens harbor plantation.

It is enacted by the Court That no p<sup>r</sup>sentment hereafter shalbe exhibited to the Grand Inquest to be brought to the Bench except it be donn vpon oath, and that it shalbe lawfull for any of the Assistants to minister an Oath in such a case. This act is transferred to the other act w<sup>ch</sup> concerns this.  
Stand.

At the geñall Court held the 7<sup>th</sup> Sept<sup>r</sup> 1641.

**I**T is enacted that the Clarke shall haue xx<sup>z</sup> p añ. besidē his other fees and that M<sup>r</sup> Wil<sup>m</sup> Paddy shalbe the Treasurer this yeare and shall pay the Clarke his xx<sup>z</sup> and giue an account of his receiptē and payments at the election Court. Clr. 20<sup>z</sup> p Anñ.

The Rates of the Townes for publicke chargē of y<sup>e</sup> officers

Plymouth	-	-	-	-	05.	00.	00	}
Duxborrow	-	-	-	-	03.	00.	00	
Scituate	-	-	-	-	04.	00.	00	
Sandwich	-	-	-	-	03.	00.	00	
Taunton	-	-	-	-	02.	10.	00	
Barnestable	-	-	-	-	02.	10.	00	
Yarmouth	-	-	-	-	02.	10.	00	
<del>Rexhame</del> Marshfeild	-	-	-	-	02.	10.	00	

25. 00. 00.

\*It is enacted That if any man shall fynd a Mine of Gould siluer leade tinn bras copper or coale that shall proue to be of value or worth, shall haue five pounds for his paynes to be paid in this manner, viz<sup>t</sup>. If it be found in a mans pticuler ground then he to pay it, if in the landē of a Township then the towne to pay it, and if it be on the generall Coñons then to be paid by the whole gouerment And ē if it happen that he that fynds yt or the towne where it is found shall neglect to worke it by the space of a whole yeare next after it is found. Then it shalbe lawfull for the gouerment to appoynt any other man to work it for his owne benefitt. Mynes. \*60

That the Courts of Assistantē are to be kept hereafter euery first Tewesday in the month except at the geñall Courtē and then to be kept the day before. This is altered.

vij<sup>th</sup> Decemb<sup>r</sup> 1641. It is enacted That those that haue releefe from the Townes & haue children and doe not ymploy them That then it shalbe lawfull for the Towne-poore children. ship to take order that those children shalbe put to worke in fitting ymployment according to their strength and abilities. or placed out by the Townes.

Townes pro- vision of powder. stand. That euery Towneship in the gouernment shall p<sup>r</sup>uide a barrell of powder and leade or bulletts answerable, to be kept by some trusty man or men in euery towne that it may be ready for defence in tyme of neede & danger.

we thinke meet to be repealed. That all waights and measures in euery towne w<sup>th</sup>in the go<sup>v</sup>ment be made equall by one therevnto especially appoynted And that a bushell a half bushell a peck and a half peck be p<sup>r</sup>ecured to be made by the Bay standard and that the Grand Jurymen of euery Towne do assist Josuah Pratt in makinge all measures euen accordingly and these to be donn by thend of March next.

\*61 \*The first March 1641.

stand. It is enacted That Scituate shall haue two Constables yearely.

It is enacted ~~That no forraine Tobaccoe be bought and sould to be taken in the Go<sup>v</sup>ment but such as is planted in the Go<sup>v</sup>ment after the first of January next (except what is bought & sold to and from forraine plac<sup>e</sup>.~~

This act was repealed March 1642.

this act stands confirmed. It is enacted That euery Towneship w<sup>th</sup>in this Go<sup>v</sup>ment do carry a competent number of peec<sup>e</sup> fixd & compleate w<sup>th</sup> powder shott & sword<sup>e</sup> euery Lords day to the meetings and one of a house from the first of September to the middle of November except there be some just & lawfull impedym<sup>en</sup>t.

The vij<sup>th</sup> of Septemb<sup>r</sup> 1642.

Wolf traps. meet to be repealed or better ordred. It is enacted by the Court that all the Townes w<sup>th</sup>in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall make wolfe trapps and bayte them and looke vnto them dayly vpon the penalty of x<sup>s</sup> a trap that shalbe neglected. the number that eich Towne is to make is as followeth.

Plymouth five Duxborrow five Scituate foure Sandwich three Taunton two Barnestable three Yarmouth three & Marshfeild two.

That M<sup>r</sup> Nathaniell Thomas shalbe allowed to exercise men in armes for the Towne of Marshfeild.

Military officers Power. q<sup>r</sup> It is enacted &c That those that are appoynted in euery Towne to exercise men in armes shall haue power to set a fyne on such as shall absent themselues vpon the dayes appoynted for exercise if there be not sufficient reason giuen for their absence p<sup>r</sup>uided the fyne be w<sup>th</sup> the consent of the com-



pany so exercised or the major part of them and such fyne to be gathered by the Constable of the place and to be for the benefitt of that company where such fyne shall happen. [PART I.]

That the quarter Court be hereafter held the first Tewesday in June the first Tewesday in September and the first Tewesday in March yearly w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe the Elec<sup>o</sup>n Court and none to be kept in December as for<sup>m</sup>ly and that euery Court shall begin at nine of the clock in the morneing and end at foure in the afternoone And that the monthly Court hereafter be kept euery first Teusday in euery second month. This is altered.

\*Acts made by a ge<sup>n</sup>all Court held the xxvij<sup>th</sup> Septemb<sup>r</sup> 1642. \*62

**T**HAT the Court doth giue power to the Townes to p<sup>p</sup>ound two or three persons to the Court to be in any cheefe place aboute the degree of Serjeant (to exercise their men in armes) & to p<sup>r</sup>sent them to the Court and such as are approued by the Court to be established & such officers to choose their vnder officers w<sup>th</sup> consent of the Body. I  
Military offic<sup>rs</sup>.  
altered.

That the cheefe millitary Co<sup>m</sup>anders of euery Towne haue power to call forth men & to exercise men in their armes and to appoynt dayes, and the Serjeant to giue warneing thereof and to be donn as often as the Court hath appoynted. 2  
Trayninge.  
stand.

That in tyme of feare & danger or suddaine assault of an enemie the millitary Co<sup>m</sup>ander in euery Towne shall haue power to call the souldiers of that Towne together and put them into a posture of warr whose co<sup>m</sup>ands euery souldier shall obey for the defence of the Towneship and that they follow the direcons of the millitary co<sup>m</sup>ander of that towne in keepeing watch and ward. p<sup>r</sup>uided that the ordinary watch be set and appoynted w<sup>th</sup> the Ma<sup>trats</sup> approba<sup>o</sup>n of that towne if there be any. 3  
in times of  
danger.  
Stand.

That the Millitary company haue power together w<sup>th</sup> their cheife co<sup>m</sup>anders to make orders for fineing all such as shall not haue their armes compleat and shalbe defectiue in their apparance & exercise of armes, and to make such orders for furnishing the company w<sup>th</sup> such necessaries as shalbe needfull for the exercise. 4  
To make or-  
ders for fyn-  
inge.  
stand.

That all such millitary fines and forfaitures be levyed & gathered by the Clark of the company & constable or one of them and to bee ymployed to the benefitt of that company. 5  
How such  
fynes to be  
levyed.  
stand.

6 That all Smyths w<sup>th</sup>in the Goſment be compelled to amend and repaire all defectiue armes (brought vnto them) speedly and to take Corne for their pay at reasonable rates: and the smyth refuſeing to anſwere it at his pill.

smiths to amend defectiue armes.

March 7<sup>th</sup> 1642. If hereafter any Inhabitant or Inhabitantℓ of any Towne w<sup>th</sup>in this Receiving Goſ<sup>nt</sup> shall receiue or bring in any p<sup>son</sup> or p<sup>sons</sup> as is apparently likely to be p<sup>sons</sup> into a chargeable to the Towneship (against whom just exception is made at the Towne who are like to be chargeable. tyme of his comeing or w<sup>th</sup>in a month after) w<sup>th</sup>out the consent and assent of stand. the Townesmen in a lawfull gen<sup>all</sup> publike towne meeting the p<sup>tie</sup> or p<sup>ties</sup> that so receiued or brought them shall discharge the Towne of them.

This is to the same effect. stand.

If any p<sup>son</sup> or p<sup>sons</sup> comeing out of England or els where bring any p<sup>son</sup> or p<sup>sons</sup> who by reason of impotency disease or otherwise is apparently likely to be chargeable to the place where hee shall come to inhabite the p<sup>son</sup> or p<sup>sons</sup> so bringing in any such p<sup>son</sup> or p<sup>sons</sup> shall discharge the Towneship of them during the tyme of the diseasedℓ abode there. But in case any Inh<sup>ite</sup> w<sup>th</sup>in this Colony shall bring ouer from England or elsewhere or p<sup>sure</sup> to be sent vnto them any servant or servantℓ w<sup>ch</sup> by Gods p<sup>uidence</sup> shall fall diseased lame or impotent by the way or after they come here, they shalbe mayntayned and p<sup>uided</sup> for by their said masters ℓ during the terme of their service ℓ couenantℓ, although their said masters release them out of their said service, ℓ afterwards to be releued by the Towneship where hee is.

p<sup>sons</sup> for nurture or phisicke. stand.

\*63

\*If any children or elder p<sup>sons</sup> shalbe sent or come from one Towne to another to be nursed schooled or otherwise educated or to a Phisition or Chirurgeon to be cured of any disease or wound ℓc yf they come to stand in need of releefe they shalbe releued and mayntained by the Towneships whence they came or were sent from and not by that Towneship where they are so nursed educated or at cure, And in case they come or he sent from any Towne or place out of this Colony then if the nurse Educator phisic<sup>on</sup> ℓ Chirurgeon take not sufficient securty of the p<sup>sons</sup> to be nursed educated or cured to discharge the Towneship of and from all cost and charge w<sup>ch</sup> shall or may come ℓ befall the said Towneship in w<sup>ch</sup> hee or they is so to be nursed educated or cured Then they the said nurse educator phisic<sup>on</sup> ℓ Chirurgeon as neglectℓ the same shall discharg the said Towneship of them themselues.

Inhabitant who. stand. Vid. pag. 66.

That euery p<sup>son</sup> that liueth ℓ is quietly settled in any Towneship and not excepted against w<sup>th</sup>in the compasse of three months after his comeing, in this case shalbe reputed an Inhab<sup>it</sup> of that place.

That every Towneship shall make competent provision for the maintenance of their poore according as they shall fynd most convenient & sutable for themselves by an order & generall agreement in a publike Towne meeting. [PART I.]  
provision for  
poore.  
And notwithstanding the p<sup>r</sup>miss<sup>s</sup> That all such p<sup>r</sup>son & p<sup>r</sup>sons as are now resident & Inhabitant<sup>l</sup> w<sup>th</sup>in the said Townes shalbe mayntaned & p<sup>r</sup>vided for by them. stand.

Memorand<sup>t</sup> That Jonathan Willis is excepted out of this order that is at Duxborrow for cure & shall not be mayntayned by Duxborrow but by Sandwich whence he came.

Elec<sup>o</sup>n Corte in June.

It is enacted also That the Elec<sup>o</sup>n Court of chooseing officers as Go<sup>v</sup>nt<sup>r</sup> and Assistant<sup>l</sup> shalbe hereafter every first Tewsday in June because that many are hindred from comeing in March by reason of the vnseasonableness of the weather ordinaryly. stand.

It is enacted by the Court That all the Mill<sup>s</sup> w<sup>th</sup>in this Go<sup>v</sup>nt<sup>r</sup> shall p<sup>r</sup>vide and keepe weights and Scales in their Millnes to weigh mens Corne w<sup>th</sup>all. Repealed the  
30<sup>th</sup> august  
1643.

\*June vj<sup>th</sup> 1643.

Whereas it is holden very vnlawfull and of dangerous consequence and it hath beene the constant custome from our first begining That no p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons haue or euer did purchase Rent or hire any lands herbage wood or tymber of the Natiues but by the Majestrates consent. It is therefore enacted by the Court that if any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons do hereafter purchase rent or hyre any land<sup>s</sup> herbage wood or tymber of any of the Natiues in any place w<sup>th</sup>in this Go<sup>v</sup>ment w<sup>th</sup>out the consent & assent of the Court Every such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shall forfeit five pounds for every acre w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe so purchased hyred rented and taken And for wood & tymber to pay five tymes the value thereof to be levyed to the Colonies use. \*64  
Lands hired  
or purchas<sup>d</sup>  
of  
the Indians.  
stand.

It is also ordered by the Court That the Court of Assistants shall not try any matters of waight w<sup>th</sup>out the major part of the Assistant<sup>l</sup> be p<sup>r</sup>sent And also that if there be not foure Assistant<sup>l</sup> w<sup>th</sup> the Gouvernor not to try or end any cause w<sup>th</sup>out the consent of the p<sup>r</sup>ties. Tryalls by the  
Court of As-  
sistants.

March.5<sup>th</sup> 1643. Acts & orders.

The Guns and peeces allowed for service are these viz<sup>t</sup>. Musketts fire locks and matchcock (so that they haue foure fathome of match at all tymes for every matchcock) Calivers, Carbines and fouleing peeces so that they be not aboue foure foote & a half long and not vnder bastard muskett or caliuer bore. Guns allowed  
for servic.  
stand.

[PART I.]

Raters & rules  
thereof.

That in euery Towne there be three or foure men or more chosen by writing their names in papers (as the Ma<sup>trats</sup> are chosen) to rate all the Inhabitant<sup>ℓ</sup> of their Towne according to their estates or faculties that is according to goods lands improoued faculties and psonall abillities, whether the rate be for any of the townes in pticuler or for geñall charges. And by ymprooued land<sup>ℓ</sup> are vnderstood meddow land plowed land & howed lands.

The orders herein to be obserued are these —

ffirst That the Constable shall su<sup>m</sup>on the Townesmen to meette together, & if he neglect when he is thereunto lawfully warned to forfait xx<sup>s</sup>.

confirmed.

2<sup>ly</sup> That if the Townesmen do not meete vpon the Constables warneing & choose raters the Towne to forfait fve pound<sup>ℓ</sup>.

3<sup>ly</sup> That if the Rators so elected do not make the Rate and transcribe and & deliuer or cause to be deliued a cobby thereof to the Constable w<sup>th</sup>in tenn dayes next after their elec<sup>o</sup>n or sooner if the occation shall require to forfait tenn shillings a peece for euery such default.

4<sup>ly</sup> That if the Constable do neglect to gather the said Rate or not cause them to be brought in w<sup>th</sup>in fourty dayes next after he hath the said rate or sooner vpon speciall occation, he shall pay it <sup>ℓ</sup> self, & to be recofied by suite &c.

confirmed in  
the genall  
Court.

\*65

5<sup>ly</sup> \*That the Constable shall haue power to distraine vpon any that shall neglect to pay his rate (being demaunded) & bring it to y<sup>e</sup> place appoynted by him and shall haue xij<sup>d</sup> for his <sup>distres</sup> paynes of euery one as shall by such his neglect put him to distrayne.

Lastly That all fynes and forfeitures w<sup>ch</sup> shall happen for breach of any of these acts & orders shalbe levyed for the geñall use of the Go<sup>u</sup>ernment.

{ The Court found it of necessaryty that these act<sup>ℓ</sup> should  
be of force from this day forward & so are confirmed }

Confirmed.  
Lands of  
P<sup>tn</sup>ers.

That where lands or tennement<sup>ℓ</sup> fall in joynt ptnership either by gift graunt or purchase or otherwise That if any of the ptners do dye before the diuision thereof shalbe made, That the heires & assignes of such as shall so decease shall not be deprived of the right title & interest into such said lands and tennement<sup>ℓ</sup> but shall haue his or their ppor<sup>o</sup>n as duly & equally as any of the Surviuors or their heires or Assignes any act ordinance custome or p<sup>u</sup>ision made to the contrary in any wise notw<sup>th</sup>standing as fully and amply as if diuision thereof had bene form<sup>ly</sup> made.

Marshfield.  
2 Counstable.

Liberty is graunted that the Towne of Marshfeild shall haue two constables one to be on th<sup>o</sup>ther side the South Riuer.

June 5<sup>th</sup> 1644.

[PART I.]

It is enacted by the Court That if any Constable w<sup>th</sup>in the goūment haue occasion to goe out of the Towneship whereof he is Constable for some tyme he shall haue power to procure and depute another in his stead as his deputie to execute his place vntill his returne as effectually as he himself might doe.

Depute Constable.

done before.

That it shalbe lawfull for the Goūnor and Majestratℓ or any of them to direct a summons to any pson w<sup>th</sup>in the Goūment to answeere to any suite comēced against them. and it shalbe as authentick as if it were donn by warrant to attach or arrest them.

Magistrates summons.

stand.

That if any man be warned to serue on the Grand Inquest ℓ shall fayle to come and do the service and take the Oath of fidelty (if he haue not taken it already) shall forfeite xx<sup>s</sup>. to the Colonies use.

Who refuse to serue in the grand jury.

stand.

That if any man shall repaire or amend any guñs or Armes for the Indians he shall forfeite xx for one. It is added to thother act for trading of guñs.

Guns of Indians repaired. stand.

To consider what course shalbe taken for distracted psons and for some to ousee them.

\*The xx<sup>th</sup> August 1644.

\*66

It is enacted That as the watches are set vp by order so they shalbe continued vntill there be order likewise to lay them downe. And that euery watch shalbe set half an hower before the Sunn be set and to continue vntill half an hower after the Sunn is risen except they ward also on the day tyme, and then to continue vntill the same tyme they begann that a fresh watch come to releue them And that for euery man that shall neither come himself nor guide a sufficient watchman in his stead, or lay downe the watch w<sup>th</sup>out due order shall pay ij<sup>s</sup> vjd for euery night to the Colonies use ℓ iiij<sup>d</sup> an hower for euery hower he comes after the watch is sett.

Watches.

stand.

That all those psons in euery Towneship w<sup>th</sup>in this Goūment y<sup>t</sup> haue not taken the Oath of fidelty ℓc. and do refuse to take it dept the Goūment.

stand.

Who refuse y<sup>e</sup> oath of fidelity.

That if a Jury be empauelled for tryall of causes and the pties agree after, yet they shall pay the Jurie.

q<sup>r</sup>

The fynes of such as are defectiue in their Armes.

stand.	[PART I.]	ffor such as are wholly defectiue	-	-	-	-	-	x <sup>s</sup>
		that want a peece	-	-	-	-	-	vj <sup>s</sup>
		that want a sword	-	-	-	-	-	ij <sup>s</sup> vi <sup>d</sup>
		that want pouder	-	-	-	-	-	v <sup>s</sup>
		that want bulletts	-	-	-	-	-	ij <sup>s</sup>
		that want match	-	-	-	-	-	xij <sup>d</sup>

Entering of  
actions.  
stand.

That all actions be entred vpon the warrants or sumons sending forth as-soone as may be.

Presse horses.  
stand.

That it shalbe lawfull for the Goũnr & Assistant℥ to presse horses for the Countreys service, paying the owners for them or takeing order for their payment. But if he miscarry in the service the price of such horse made good to the owner by the Countrey and the horse to be prized at his going forth.

former order in  
pag 63  
explayned.

Whereas it was enacted March 7<sup>th</sup> 1642 That a pson quietly settled in any towne w<sup>th</sup>in this Goũment ℥c. the space of three months should be reputed an Inhabitant there. It is pũided that that act shalbe expounded ℥ construed onely to haue relaçõn to poore psons ℥c. And it is also pũided that that act shall not any wayes enable any pson to be reputed an Inhabitant in any Towneship w<sup>th</sup>in this Goũment that shall or doth refuse to take the Oath of fidellyty ℥c although he hath beene there resident for some tyme.

\*67

\*Acts made att the geũall Court the 3<sup>d</sup> March 1644. 20<sup>o</sup> Carol Rē

Treasurer giue  
his acc<sup>o</sup>.  
stand.

It is enacted That the Treasurer shall at the Eleccõn Court giue in his account℥ of his receipts and payment℥ for his yeare to any that the Court shall appoynt and to be entred vpon record and therevpon he to be discharged.

Genall Court  
in 7<sup>th</sup> altered.  
q<sup>r</sup>

It is enacted That the geũall Court formly holden in Septemb<sup>r</sup> shall hereafter be holden the last Tewsdays in October.

A guard of 2  
halberts.  
q<sup>r</sup>.

It is enacted That there shalbe allowed at the geũall charges a guard of two halbert℥ for the safety of the Goũnors pson at the geũall Court℥.

Surveyors of  
high waies.  
q<sup>r</sup>.

That the Surveyors of the heigh wayes shall giue three dayes warneing to the Teames and other pticuler psons when they are to amend the heigh wayes as often as need shall require pũided that the warne not one teame nor one pson twice before they haue gone ouer all the teames and psons in their towneship And he that shall refuse to come being so warned shalbe brought

to the Court to answer his contempt. And that every Surveyor that shall neglect his duty in repairing the high ways shall forfeite x<sup>s</sup>. to the Colonies use. [PART I.]

~~It is enacted That if any goods or cattell bee taken upon execucon the Officer shall deliuer them to the plaintiffe and if they be above the value of the debt the plaintiff shall render the ouerplus to the defendent w<sup>th</sup>in six dayes next after they are so taken in Countrey pay, but if the defendent can either himself or procure any other to pay the debt otherwise or will giue more for such goods so taken in execucon then they are valued at It shalbe lawfull for the defend<sup>nt</sup> to make his best of them so it be w<sup>th</sup>in the said six dayes next after they are so taken.~~ This act is altered as followeth.  
repealed.

Acts made the fourth of June 1645.

It is enacted That an execucon shalbe made forth at thend of one month after the verdict and judgment is graunted and not before (except the pty be deptyng the Goument) and that the Marshall when hee goeth to serue the execucon shall take one w<sup>th</sup> him chosen by the plaintiff to appraise the goods or cattell taken in execucon and the deffent shall haue liberty to choose another And the Marshall and those two shall apprise the goods or cattells so taken, but if either the Plaintiff or Defendant do neglect or refuse to make such a choyce, then the marshall shall choose two himself and as they or any two of them shall prise them, they shalbe forthwith deliuered to the plaintiff, and if they come to more then the debt and charges shall amount vnto then the plaintiff shall pay the ouerplus to the defendant in Countrey pay w<sup>th</sup>in three dayes next after hee receiueth the said goods at the plaintiffs owne house so that his house be not out of the Goument, but if his house or dwelling bee out of the gouerment then at the Marshalls house or where w<sup>th</sup> most conuenyency the Marshall shall appoynt. Execution graunted whe

\*That all execucons yssuing out of the genall Court℥ or from y<sup>e</sup> Court℥ of Assistant℥ shalbe executed by the Marshall onely. Execution serued p Marshall.

\*68

That the Messenger henceforth be styled or called by the Name of Marshall.

It is enacted ℥ That in case of appeale from one Court to another that vpon the second verdict order or decree execucon shalbe p<sup>s</sup>ently made forth. and the Marshall shall forthw<sup>th</sup> be sent to execute it And ℥ if the Marshall Executions vp<sup>o</sup> appeale.

[PART I.]

desire it and the Court or Goūnor judge it meete a warrant shalbe directed from the Goūnor to two or three or more for the aydeing and assisting of the Marshall in the exccūcion thereof and such p̄sons so sent w<sup>th</sup> him to be paid by the Deffent w<sup>th</sup> the rest of the charges of the said suite.

That Seacunck be called Rehoboath.

Carnall copu-  
latiō

It is enacted ¶ That euery p̄son or p̄sons w<sup>th</sup> shall comitt Carnall Copulācion before or w<sup>th</sup>out lawfull contract shalbe punished either w<sup>th</sup> corporall punishment by whipping or els pay tenn pound℥ a peece fine and be ymprisoned during the pleasure of the Court so it be not aboute three dayes, but if they be or wilbe marryed one to another, then but tenn pounds both and ymprisonment as aforesaid. And by A lawfull contract the Court vnderstands the mutuall consent of two parties w<sup>th</sup> the consent of pent℥ or guardians (if there be any to be had) and a solemme p̄mise of marriage in due tyme to eich other before two competent witnesses. And if any p̄son or p̄sons shall comitt carnall copulācion after contract and before marriage shall both pay fine pound℥ and be both ymprisoned during the pleasure of the Court so it be not aboute three dayes, or els in case they cannot or will not pay the fyne then to suffer corporall punishment by whipping.

Nuncupatiue  
testam<sup>t</sup>℥.

It is enacted that if any man being sick and weake or otherwise (but of disposing memory) do declare his mynd and will concerning the disposing or bequeathing his lands before two or more of the freeholders of the place where hee liues, it shalbe vpon their Oathes recorded and remayne firme according to such devise and bequest.

That all form̄ bargaines made for Corne due before this day shalbe payd by the old measure, except they haue otherwise contracted.

Repealed the  
× of July  
1646.

~~Whereas the last session of this Court it was fully agreed That that bushell agreed vpon by the vnitēd Colonys should be here allowed and no other Whosoeſ therefore after the twentieth day of November next ensuing shall buy or sell receiue pay or deliuer by any other then the said measure of the vnitēd Colonies both buyer and seller shall pay xij<sup>d</sup> a peece for euery such bushell so bought and sold receiued and deliued to the Colonies use assoone as he or they shalbe thereof convicted. And the Smyth to make A seale of two Roman letters namely N E to seale the measures be sides the P.~~



\*That all ordinary Dealers that sell by vnsealed waights and measures w<sup>ch</sup> are not weight and measure by the standard shall loose such waight℥ and measures and make restituçõn to the pties wronged by such want of weight ℥ measure and shall pay to the Colonies vse for euery such default of false weight ℥ measure for the first tyme vj<sup>s</sup> viij<sup>d</sup> and for the second tyme xiiij<sup>s</sup> iiij<sup>d</sup> and for the third tyme xx<sup>s</sup> and such waights and measures to be burnt And that all other waights ℥ measures of other men shalbe answerable to the standard and a pyle of weight℥ of M<sup>ris</sup> Atwoods and her scales shalbe the standard. And for sealeing j<sup>d</sup> for euery weight vnder a quarter of a pound and for all aboue a quarter to vj<sup>li</sup> ij<sup>d</sup> a peece and for all aboue vj<sup>l</sup> to a hundred waight iiij<sup>d</sup>.

[PART I.]  
Vnjust w<sup>ch</sup>  
℥ measures.

\*69

That euery Miller haue two toul dishes viz<sup>th</sup> a quart and a pottle, but to be so made that vpheaped they will hold no more then a quart ℥ a pottle by the new measure allowed and those be sealed by the twentyeth day of the next month or els to pay x<sup>s</sup> p month so long as hee or they keepe them vnsealed after.

Millars toll  
dishes.

That misdemeanors and offences following and the pson or psons thereof duly convict shalbe punished as followeth.

That euery pson or psons that shall wilfully pluck up remooue or deface any land mark or bound betwixt pty and pty that haue beene or shalbe orderly and sufficiently set vp by psons therevnto designed shalbe fyned from xx<sup>s</sup> to fve pounds according to the nature of the offence.

Removinge or  
defacinge land  
m<sup>ks</sup>.

That euery pson or psons that shall wilfully and of set purpose ~~or carelessly~~ carelessly breake downe another mans fence or yate or any comon yate or bridge to the annoyance either of a pticular pson or the genall shall make up such said fence yate or bridg at his owne charg and pay the damage thereby sustayned and be fyned for the first default fifty shillings and for the second default be fyned v<sup>l</sup> and bound to his good behavio<sup>r</sup>.

Breakinge  
fenc<sup>s</sup> or yate.

That euery pson or psons that shall wilfully and of set purpose burne any mans fence or fences shall make good the damage and bee bound to his good behavior.

Burninge  
fences.

That whatsoever servant or apprentice or labourer that shall purloyne or steale or ymbessell his Masters goods shall make double restituçõn either by

Purloyning  
M<sup>r</sup>℥ goods.

[PART I.] payment or servitude as the Court shall judge meete for the first default, and for the second default of the labourer to make double restitu<sup>o</sup>n, and either fynd sureties for his good behavio<sup>r</sup> or be whipt.

Wearinge  
Visors.

Whereas some abuses haue formly broken out amongst us by disguising wearinge visors and strang apparell to laciuous ends & purposes It is therefore enacted That if any pson or psons shall hereafter use any such disguise-ment & visors strang apparell or the like to such laciuous and euell ends and intent, and be thereof convict by due course of law shall pay fifty shillings for the first offence or els be publikely whipt and for the second tyme five pounds or be publikly whipt and be bound to the behavio<sup>r</sup> if the Bench shall see cause.

Forging deeds.  
\*70

\*It is enacted by the Court That whosoever shall forge any deede or writing whereby any estate of lands either of Inheritance or for terme of yeares shalbe passed and the right heires disinhereted and shall pduce or publish the same to such deceitfull end and purpose and be thereof convict by due course of law shall pay the ptie greued double damage and be fyned half so much as the pty greued recouers of him, and in case he be not able to pay it then to be publikly whipt and burned in the face w<sup>th</sup> a Romane F.

stealing or de-  
facinge publick  
Records

That if any Officer or keep of publike Records or writings shall willfully steale imbezell deface or make away any such publik record or writing so committed to publike Record and keepeing or alter any of them or any pt of them by racking out or adding thereto or otherwise shalbe disfranchised loose his Office and burnt in the face except in triuiall cases.

Corruptinge  
publick officers  
of Records.

That if any pson or psons shall endeavour or goe about directly or indirectly to corrupt any officer keepeing any publike Records or writings to procure him to deface corrupt alter race or ymbezell any such publike record or writing shalbe fyned according to the nature of the Offence so it bee not aboue fourty pound, or be whipt.

Debts due by  
booke how to  
be demanded.

Whereas many inconveniencies losses and great controvsies haue and do daily happen by reason of p<sup>t</sup>ended debts some tymes just & sometymes satisfied the charge remayneing still vncancelled some tymes vpon bookes sometymes by papers whereas in truth there is little or nothing really due or remayneing, but through long neglect of demaund, and sometymes slow payment made, much contention doth arise betwixt pty and pty It is there-

fore enacted by the Court That if any man w<sup>ch</sup> either formly hath dwelt or now doth dwell w<sup>th</sup>in this Goument haue any debts now oweing vpon booke or by papers or such like scroules and are not demaunded w<sup>th</sup>in the space of six months next after the first day of November next such bookes papers or scroules shalbe no euedence vpon tryall or recouery of them. And for tyme to come a booke paper or scroole shalbe euedence for the space of one yeare after the making of the debt therein specyfyed or writen and no longer, except the same be otherwise prooued, but for such as go long voyages to Sea to be allowed two yeares.

[PART I.]

Whereas notw<sup>th</sup>standing the free liberty graunted for fishing and fowling It manestly appeareing that the Towne of Sandwich hath receiued p<sup>r</sup>judice by stopping of the passage of the heareing or alwiues to their ware by setting of netts to take Basse by priuate p<sup>r</sup>sons to the genall p<sup>r</sup>judice of the whole Towne It is therefore enacted by the Court That if any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shall p<sup>r</sup>sume to sett any netts in the said Riuer to stopp the passage of the said heareings or Alewiues or hinder their comeing vp to the said ware during their season w<sup>ch</sup> is from the middle of Aprill to the last of May shall forfeite tenn pounds as often as hee or they shall so doe. to the Colonies use.

stopping by netts Sandwich River.

\*March 3<sup>d</sup> 1645.

\*71

It is enacted That the Millitary Officers in euery Towne shall see that the Armes of that Towne be fix & compleat and such as are allowed for length & bore, and to p<sup>r</sup>sent such are defectiue.

Military officer to see the Armes.

July the vj<sup>th</sup> of July 1646.

It is enacted by the Court That the Ma<sup>t</sup>rates and Committees do constantly meete in Court (during the Court tyme) at the hower of seaven of the clock in the morneing in the summer tyme, and at eight in the winter vpon the penalty of vj<sup>d</sup> for euery default made by any & so continue vntill eleauen and then to rise to dinner and after dinner to returne againe and to continue vntill a conveyent hower in the euening as the Gou<sup>r</sup>nor shall think meete, and for euery hower any of them shalbe absent after they are called to pay vj<sup>d</sup> p<sup>r</sup> hower except there be such sufficient reason shewed for their absence that the Court doth allow of. p<sup>r</sup>uided that the first day of the Court Nine of the Clock shalbe the hower to meete at in the morneing.

When Ma<sup>t</sup> & Committees to meete at Courte.

It is enacted by the Court that ~~the~~ Bay new bushell shall not be used to buy or sell by nor any measures made thereby and that the old Iron bound

Bushell.

[PART I.] bushell is established to be the measure and standard for all the Townes w<sup>th</sup>in this Go<sup>v</sup>ment and that all measures used w<sup>th</sup>in the Go<sup>v</sup>ment shalbe made thereby and if any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons do use any other either to buy or sell by they shall pay xij<sup>d</sup> a peece to the Colonies use.

Ordinary  
keep<sup>rs</sup> and Re-  
taylers of wine  
who. & their  
rules.

It is enacted by the Court, That none do keepe victualling or an ordinary or draw wyne by Retayle w<sup>th</sup>in this Go<sup>v</sup>ment but such as are allowed by the ge<sup>n</sup>all Court And that if any victualler or Ordinary keeper do either drink drunck himself or suffer any p<sup>r</sup>son to be druncken in his house they shall pay five shillings a peece And if the victualler or ordinary keeper do suffer any Townesmen to stay drinking in his house aboue an hower at one tyme The victualler or ordinary keep shall pay for euery such default xij<sup>d</sup> and the p<sup>r</sup>son so staying aboue the said hower iij<sup>s</sup> iij<sup>d</sup> And by drunkenesse is vnderstood a p<sup>r</sup>son that either lips or faulters in his speech by reason of o<sup>u</sup>much drink, or that staggers in his going or that vomits by reason of excessiue drinking, or cannot follow his calling The p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons that shalbe found guilty in these or any of them shall for the first default pay five shillings and for the second default tenn shillings to the Colonies use and for the third tyme he shalbe found faulty to be bound to the good behaio<sup>r</sup>. And if hee or they cannot or will not pay the fine or fines then to be sett in the stocks &c.

Military Offi-  
cers how  
chosen.

\*72

\*It is enacted by the Court That in Case any Cheefe Millitary Officer as Captaine Leeffennant or Ensigne be wanting in any Towne w<sup>th</sup>in this Go<sup>v</sup>ment Such Towneship shall present two or three p<sup>r</sup>sons of the fittest they haue for that place to the Court and such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons as shalbe approued of by the Court shalbe established in such place and office And such Cheefe Officers to choose their vnder officers w<sup>th</sup> consent of the Body.

not to lay  
down their  
plac<sup>e</sup> w<sup>th</sup>out  
Court<sup>e</sup> appba-  
tio.

It is enacted by the Court that as the Captaine Leiftennant & Ensigne of a Company are established into their places by the authority and approba<sup>o</sup>n of the Court so such Captaine Leifte<sup>n</sup>ant and Ensigne shall not lay downe their places but by the consent and approba<sup>o</sup>n of the Court vpon the penalty of five pounds for euery Captaine. fifty shillings for euery Leiftennant & fifty shillings for euery Ensigne so laying downe his place w<sup>th</sup>out the leaue and likeing of the Court. And if any Captaine Leiftenn<sup>t</sup> or Ensigne shall neglect to trayne their men on the dayes appoynted or shalbe negligent in his or their places vpon prooffe thereof made shalbe fyned x<sup>s</sup> for euery such default.

It is enacted by the Court That euery Towneship w<sup>thin</sup> this Goũment before the next October Court eich Towneship shall guide two sufficient snap-haunces or firelock peeces two swords and two pouches for euery thirty men they haue in their towneship and so pportionably for their number they are to set forth be the[y] greater or lesser w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe ready at all tymes for service vpon any ocãtion vpon such penalty for euery delinquent as the Court shall judg meete according to the nature of the offence.

[PART I.]  
Publick  
Armes.

fforasmuch as there are certaine cõmon Charges to be disbursed constantly yearre by yearre And forasmuch also as the Countrey is vnwilling to defray the same by way of Rate but rather by way of Excise vpon wines Tobacco &c It is enacted by the Authority of the Generall Court That these Excises shalbe imposed to be payd by all that are lycensed to retayle wines strong water and y<sup>t</sup> sell Tobaccoe <sup>and fish & make fish</sup> as followeth viz<sup>t</sup> vpon euery gallon of spanish wine eight pence euery gallon of ffrench wyne foure pence euery gallon of strong water eightene pence & euery pound of Tobaccoe one penny ~~and for euery chare of fish by strangers haucing liberty to fish at the Cape five shillings~~. And that in euery Towneship w<sup>thin</sup> the Goũment the Receiuer of the Excise nominated & authorised by the Court shall receiue the same. And that euery Retayler of excised goods do repaire to the Receiuer before hee or they shall retayle any such excised goods and make knowne the quantity of them and make payment of the said excise vpon them vnto the said Receiuer foure dayes in the yeare yearely viz<sup>t</sup> the first day of August the first day of Novemb<sup>r</sup> the first day of ffebruã<sup>r</sup> and the first day of May and for strangers p<sup>r</sup>sently out of w<sup>ch</sup> the Receiuer shall haue twelue pence in the pound for gathering and receiueing the same besydes charges of transportaõn defrayed And if any pson retayleing any such excised goods shall neglect or refuse to acquaint the Receiuer of the said Excise therew<sup>th</sup> and not pay the same at the dayes appoynted \*shall pay treble excise for them. And it shalbe lawfull for euery Receiuer of the said Excise in euery Towneship to goe into any Retaylers seller boate or elsewhere into any house to take notice of such goods and the quantity of them as are to be excised And the said Receiuer of the Excise shall make payment thereof yearely to the Treasurer for the tyme being at two dayes in the yeare that is to say the first day of Nouember and the first day of May and in default of the Receiuer either in not receiueing or not paying it to the Treasurer at the dayes appoynted to pay three for one And in default or neglect of payment either in the Receiuer or Retayler such sume or sumes as are growne due w<sup>th</sup> their seũall penalties to be levyed and taken by warrant from the Gouvernor or some one of the Assistant<sup>e</sup>.

\*73  
Excise.

[PART I.]  
 this follows af-  
 ter.

It is enacted by the Court That there shalbe in euery Towne w<sup>th</sup>in this Gouerment A Clark or some one appoynted and ordained to keepe A Register of the day and yeare of the marriage byrth and buriall of euery man weoman and child w<sup>th</sup>in their Towneship.

The wiuēs con-  
 sent to the sale  
 of house or  
 lands.

It is enacted ꝑ. That they Assistantꝑ or any of them shall haue full power to take the acknowledgment of a bargaine and sale of houses ꝓ landꝑ so that they keepe a book thereof and cause them to be recorded w<sup>th</sup> all convenient speed And that the wyfe hereafter come in and consent ꝓ acknowledge the sale also ; but that all bargaines and sales of houses and lands made before this day to remayne firme to the buyer notwithstanding the wife did not acknowledg the same.

Prisoners allow-  
 ance.

It is enacted ꝑ. That the Colonies w<sup>th</sup>in this Gouernment shall allow ij<sup>d</sup> ꝑ day to mayntaine a prisoner comitted for felony or misdemeanorꝑ (if they be not able to mayntaine themselues) and to be payd by the Treasurer, ꝓ allowed vpon his accountꝑ.

Marshalls fee.

It is enacted ꝑ. That the Marshall shall haue two shillings in the pound for gathering of fynes ꝑ. if they be not brought in by the ꝑties themselues.

At a generall Corte, by, the last session of the Eleccōn Corte holden 20<sup>th</sup> October, 1646.

Retaylor of  
 wine vnli-  
 censed who.

**I**T is enacted ꝓ by the Corte ordered that whosoever shall draw out ꝓ sell a lesser quantity or Caske of wine then 10 gallons to any, shalbe accounted a retaylor.

Memorand. to  
 amend this.  
 Retayers not  
 licensed fyned.

That whosoever retails beere, or wine or strong water ꝓ not licensed by order of Courte shalbe fined ꝓ pay for the first default, double the value of what is so sould ꝓ retayled.

Register of  
 births burialls  
 ꝓ marriageꝑ.

It is enacted by the Courte That there shalbe in every Towne within this governm<sup>t</sup> a Cleark or some one appointed ꝓ ordayned to keepe a register of the day ꝓ yeare of the marriage, birth, ꝓ buriall of every man woeman ꝓ child within their towneshippe ꝓ to haue 3<sup>d</sup> a peece for each particular person soe registred, ꝓ further it is enacted, that euery father, or mother, or next in relation shall certify to the Towne cleark or register keeper, the name ꝓ day of the birth of euery child so borne in his house within one moneth after it

is borne, or be fined for \*euery such default three shillings, the one halfe moity thereof to the Governoure, the other halfe moity thereof vnto the s̄d clearke, or register keeper vpon his compt And that euery person married shall signify his & her name with the day vpon w<sup>ch</sup> they were married vnto the said clr or register keeper within one moneth next after the day of his said marriage vpon the like penaltie of 3<sup>s</sup>., the one moity thereof vnto the Governoures vse, & the other vnto the said clr or register keeper vpon his complainte. And alsoe that euery master or m<sup>rs</sup> of the family in w<sup>ch</sup> any person dies or pson next in relation to any person soe dead shall giue notice vnto the said cleark or register keep, the name of the person & day of the s̄d buriall, sub pena, 3<sup>s</sup> the one halfe or moity to the Goūnou's vse, the other to the cleark or register keeper vpon his complaint And the clearke, or register keeper of each Towneshippe shall exhibite a true & pfect Copy fairely written annually at March Courte vnto the s<sup>d</sup> Courte of all the birthes, marriages & burialls of the yeare past, And lastly that the Cleark or register keeper in eūy Towneshipp shall publish all contracts of marriages, & shall haue xij<sup>d</sup> as his fee for euery marriage as hé publisheth orderly.

[PART I.]

\*74

Whereas there is greate abuse in takinge of Tobacco in very vnciuill manner in the streetes & dangerously in out houses, as barnes, stalls aboute hay stackes, Corne stacke & other such places, it is therfore enacted by this Courte, that if any person or persons shalbe founde or seene hereafter takinge tobacco publickly in the open streets of any Towne, (vnles it be souldiers in the time of their trayninge) or in & aboutes barnes, staules, haystacks, corne stacks hay yeards or other such places or out houses, that euery such pson or psons so offendinge shall forfeit & pay to the Townes vse, for the first default xij<sup>d</sup>, for the second ij<sup>s</sup>, & soe for euery such default afterwards ij<sup>s</sup>, & it shalbe lawfull & by this act warrantable for the Counstable of eūy towneshipp w<sup>th</sup>out further warrant, vpon sight or information thereof to dis-traine his or their goods for it as doe refuse to pay it vpon his demand & to be accomptable to the treasurer of what he receiues yearly at the eleccon Corte.

Abusie tak-  
inge Tobacco.

It is enacted that the Marshall shall haue hencefoorth annually threescore bushells of Indian Corne or the full value of it in other Corne (besides his ordinary fees allowed) p<sup>d</sup> vnto him for his wages pportionably to be p<sup>d</sup> out of the sefall towneships by way of rate.

Marshalls  
yearly wages.

It is enacted that if any pson shall hencefoorth cast contempt & reproch on the Marshall or any of his by reason off and concerning his office shalbe fined for eūy such default to the Governmt<sup>e</sup> vse x<sup>s</sup>.

Repechers of  
Mrshall.

[PART I.]

Receiu<sup>r</sup> of ex-  
cise rep<sup>d</sup>ched.

\*75

ffreemen to  
app<sup>r</sup> at the  
genall Courte  
in June & 2  
deputies.

\*And if any person or persons shall henceforth cast contempt or reproch on any receiuer of the excise by reason of & concerninge his said office shalbe fined for euery such default to the govern<sup>t</sup> & vse x<sup>s</sup>.

Whereas the Townes formerly were to send their deputies (w<sup>ch</sup> must arise out of their free men) to attend the 3 generall Court<sup>l</sup> of the yeare for our Sovereaigne Lord the Kinge, now vpon the speciall complainte of the deputies of the Townes soe sent professinge them to be oppressed thereby, It is ordered & enacted that the whole body of free men appeare at the Election Courte w<sup>ch</sup> is the first tuesday in June successiuey, & there to make or repeale such lawes orders & ordinanc<sup>l</sup> as shalbe fownde meete & wholesome for the orderinge of the Govern<sup>t</sup> & that then alsoe they present such deputies as haue bene chosen by their townes accordinge to order formerly established, who are to attend the same, & its seuerall adjourn<sup>t</sup> as the occasions of the Country shall require, & that whatsoever lawes orders & ordinances shalbe made or repealed be at that Courte & the scuerall adjourn<sup>t</sup> thereof onely done & the other Court<sup>l</sup> to attend onely matters of Judicature & the magistrates onely to attend the same.

Townes neg-  
lect' to chuse  
Comittees.

It is enacted that if any township beinge orderly thereto required shall neglect or refuse to elect & chuse Comittees according to the two former orders, the towne so neglectinge or refusinge to be fined to the govern<sup>t</sup> vse 40<sup>s</sup> & euery Committee soe chosen & makes not his psonall appearance in the Courte at the day appointed there to doe his service, be fyned 20<sup>s</sup>. vnles he can shew a reason appued by the Courte.

Grandjurymē  
to view w<sup>ts</sup> &  
measures.

It is ordered that the grandjury men in euery Towneshipp once in the yeare annually doe view all the measures, weight<sup>l</sup> & tolle dishes in their seuerall towneships, & see that they be lawfull according to order, & that every houshoulder haue ladders sufficient according to order & p<sup>s</sup>ent the defect<sup>l</sup>.

Needlesse  
firing woods.

Also that if any person at any time shall fire any the woods, & hath no just occasion so to doe he shalbe fined to the gov<sup>m</sup><sup>t</sup> vse x<sup>s</sup>. or be whipt.

Selling wine or  
strong water to  
Indians.

It is enacted that noe pson whatsoever shall hencefoorth sell wine or stronge water to any Indian, vnles in case of sicknesse or faintnes & then onely with the foreknowledge & consent of a magestrate if there be any in the Towneshipp, or in defect of him with the foreknowledge & consent of the Comittees or grandjurymē of the s<sup>d</sup> township, & but for a smale quantity, & for euery defaulte to pay x<sup>s</sup>. to the Collonies vse.



It is enacted that the towne of Rehoboth shall haue liberty yearely to make choice of 2 freemen of their inhabitants to be assistant & to the magistrate then in beinge for the examininge & tryinge of all matters in difference betweene party & party by a jury of 12 men not exceeding the value & some of 10<sup>l</sup> reservinge liberty to any pty after tryall to \*appeale to the generall Courte at Plimouth, puided that the appeale be made the same day the verdict is brought in, & he that shall appeale doe giue security that if he be cast in the Courte at Plimouth then he shall pay double damages.

[PART I.]  
 Rehoboths  
 liberty.

\*76

And further for the avoydinge of travaile & chardge the freemen of Rehoboth shall for the election of magistrates send their votes by proxies provided their votes be orderly taken in the Towne meetinge & then ymediatly sealed vp & deliuered to the Comitties or grandjurymen who shalbe sent to attend the affaires of the generall Courte & deliuered in Courte by them, vnlesse vpon other weighty occasions, their presence be required by speciall warrant.

Rehoboths  
 liberty in Elec-  
 con.

\*At the 2<sup>cond</sup> session of the generall Court begun at New Plymouth the sixt of June 1649 holden at Plymouth aforsaid the twenty fift of October in the yeare aforsaid before M<sup>r</sup> Wilham Bradford gent. Gouver<sup>r</sup> Wilham Colyare Capitaine Miles Standish Timothy Hatherley John Browne & Wilham Thomas gent. assistants.

\*77

**I**T is Ordered y<sup>t</sup> no Lands bee graunted to any Strangers vntel the bounds bee knowne betwixt Kanetaquet & vs according to order of Parlelament.

That wheras Complaint is made by the Comittees of Scittuaat for y<sup>t</sup> Enacted. their Charges are not borne according to order of Court; The Court haue therfore ordered y<sup>t</sup> a warrant bee directed to the Cunstables of Scittuaat aforsaid to Summon the said Towne together to make a Rate for publick Charges wherin is to bee mensioned the Charges of the said deputies to bee Required by Rate according to the aforsaid order and y<sup>t</sup> seuerall warrants bee directed in like manor to eich Towne within this Gouverment Respectiuey.

Concerning the ppositions made by the deputies assembled about the maior pt of the Court to order the aiornments & desolution of the generall Courts & the making & repealing of lawes; The Gouver<sup>r</sup> thinks it not meet thay bee put to vote vntell the next General Court of election.

of this see  
 more on the  
 other side this  
 this leafe.

That Plymouth haue but two deputies as other Townes.

Repealed.

[PART I.]  
Enacted.

That any such as are p<sup>r</sup>sented by any Towne vnto any Maiestrait within this Gouerment to bee Survayors or Measurers of Land & such as are appointed to try & seale measures & all Towne Clarks shall haue an oath administered vnto them by the said Maiestraite.

Enact.

That at Courts of Election next after the Choise & swearing of Maiestraits and other offecers the generall ocations of the Cuntry wherin Comitties are Requisite bee attended except extreordenary ocation Com in the way.

Enact.

That if any bee orderly warned to work at the hiewayes & shall neglect shall bee ffined for his said neglect 3<sup>s</sup> per day & for euery teame so warned y<sup>t</sup> shall neglect eight shillings per day & y<sup>t</sup> the Survayors of Such Townes wherin such neglect is shall Returne their names to the next Maiestraite y<sup>t</sup> by warrant the said ffines may bee required by the Cunstable of the said Towne for the Townes vse ; and if it so fale out y<sup>t</sup> in the yeare all the teames & p<sup>r</sup>sons in the same Towne haue not been warned vnto the work aforsaid y<sup>t</sup> thay bee all warned ouer before thay begin againe.

\*78

\*Att the Generall Court of freemen holden the fife of June 1650.

**W**HERAS complaint is Justly made y<sup>t</sup> due Course is not puided or at least performed and executed for the defraying of such nessesary Charges as are expended by the Magestraits of the Gouerment in attending att Courts and vpon other publick ocations for the administration of Justice

It is therefore Ordered by the Generall Court assembled That forthwith due Care bee had y<sup>t</sup> the order extant Concerning the excise bee duely executed ; and That fit p<sup>r</sup>sons bee appointed to receaue it and in Case of neglect of none payment That then forthwith vpon such neglect warrants bee Required and graunted out to destraine vpon the goods if such p<sup>r</sup>sons as doe neglect to pay it ; and y<sup>t</sup> it bee payed in good and marchantable pay such as may Conduce to the ends aforsaid.

Wheras a Comittie was Chosen by the Court viz M<sup>r</sup> Tho: Prence M<sup>r</sup> Wilkam Collyare M<sup>r</sup> Tho: Dimacke M<sup>r</sup> James Cudworth M<sup>r</sup> Josiah Winslow John Dunham seni. Gorg Soule and Constant Southworth to Consider of the p<sup>r</sup>position propounded by the Comitties at the last october Court Concerning the Maior pt of the Court to order the aiornments and desolutions of the generall Courts and the making and Repealling of lawes they the said Comittie declared their minds to bee That things in respect of the aforsaid perticular doe Rest vnaltered as they are :

And y<sup>t</sup> for the futuer as formerly in the making and Repealling of lawes and aiornment of Courts wherin Comitties are Requeset; The Magestraits and Comitties or Deputies bee Considered together as one body. [PART I.]

\*Att the 2<sup>cond</sup> session of the generall Court holden at New Plym: the 10<sup>th</sup> of June 1650. \*79

It was ordered

That forasmuch as there are Risen vp amongst vs many scandalvs practises which are likly to proue destructiue to our churches and Common peace; That whosoever shall heerafter set vp any churches or publicke meetings diverse from those allreddy set vp and approued without the concent and approbacon of the Gouverment or shall continew any otherwise set vp without concent as aforsaid shalbe suspended from haueing any voyce in towne meetings and p<sup>s</sup>ented to the next generall court to Receue such punishment as the court shall think meet to Inflict. Repealed

ffurther bee it enacted by the authoritie aforsaid

That Whosoever shall villifie by approbrivs tearmes or speaches any church or ministry or ordinance being heerof lawfully convicted shall forfeite and pay to the vse of the collonie ten shillings for euery default. villifying ministry.

ffurther bee it enacted that Whosoever shall prophane the Lords day by doeing any servill worke or any such like abusses shall forfeite for euery such default ten shillings or bee whipte. prophanacon the Lords day.

It is ordered

That at June courts all warrants bee directed to warn p<sup>s</sup>ons on the fift day of the weeke to appeer for triall of actions. warrants at June Court.

The court haue by Joynt concent Repealled the Court order formerly made enjoyning wampampeage to goe at six a peney.

Att the Generall court holden at New Plym: for the Jurisdiction of New Plym: the sixt of June 1651.

IT is ordered

That Whatsoever p<sup>s</sup>on or p<sup>s</sup>ons shall neglect the frequenting the publick worshipp of God that is according to God in the places wher they liue or doe assemble themselues vpon any p<sup>t</sup>ence whatsoever in any way contrary to God and the allowance of the gouerment tending to the subversion of Reli- not frequenting publick worship and erecting other meetings.

[PART I.] gion and churches or palpable prophanacon of Gods holy ordinances being  
 duely convicted; viclecet euery one that is a master or dame of a family or  
 any other pson at their owne desposing to pay ten shillings for euery such  
 default.

Not frequent-  
 ing publick  
 worship.

It is ordered That if any in any lazey slothfull or prophane way doth  
 neglect to com to the publick worshipp of God shall forfeit for euery such  
 default ten shillings or bee publickly whipte.

\*80

\*June the 7<sup>th</sup> 1651.

It is ordered

The two last  
 lines of this  
 order was  
 aded the 10<sup>th</sup>  
 of June 1654.

That twenty pounds p annum bee Raised by the Collonie for the defray-  
 ing the charges of the Maistrates Table and other such like expences  
 to bee payed two ptes of three in wheat and the other third in barley to be  
 paid some time in the Month of Nouember annually.

That euery Township haue libertie to make choise of a pson whom  
 they Judge meet (prouided hee bee a ffreeman and propose him to the next  
 generall court of election; that out of them the Cuntrey by free election  
 may make choise of such out of them and the old assistants as will make vp  
 the number of 7 assistants to supply the place of maiestracy or any other of  
 the freemen as they shall think meet;

For the Regulateing of the excise it is ordered

That the deputies of euery Township to set and let it to the best  
 advantage for sum Reasonable consideracon, and to Return within a month  
 what they haue done in that Respect; and for whatsoever is behind that it bee  
 Required and paid.

Ordered

That all such wolues as are killed by the Indians at Namassaket or  
 elsewhere from the 15<sup>th</sup> of March annually to the last of aprell; the charge  
 of the killing of them shalbe bourn by the whole collonie; and that they  
 shall haue for euery wolfe soe killed a coat of trading cloth; and at all other  
 times of the yeare any either English or Indians that shall kill any wolues  
 each Towne shall beare the charge of the killing of them wher they are killed.

Wheras complaint is made that many vnder ptence of hiering Indians  
 for to bee their servants for a month or longer time, doe furnish them with  
 guns poulder and shott to kill fowle ꝙ deare ꝙc.

It is ordered

That whosoever henceforth shall hier or imploy any Indian or Indians and furnish them with guns powlder and shott or any one of them shall forfeit for euery such default 40 shillings except they bee Indians that haue been servants for diuers years and are in a good measure ciuilised and approued of by the Gouvernor and asistants.

[PART I.]

It is ordered

That all Coopers shall make full sized Cask barrells and hoggsheads for meat and fish ; and that Cask for Tarr bee either barrells or Kilderkins.

Memorandum  
to consider  
this order fur-  
ther.

It is ordered

That the Towne of Nawsett be henceforth called and knowne by the name of Eastham ;

\*Att the 2<sup>cond</sup> session of the generall Court held att New Plymouth the 29<sup>th</sup> of June 1652.

\*81

**O**RDERED by the court

That wheras in regard of age disabillitie of body vrgent occations and other enconueniencies that doe accrew sundrey of the freemen are hindered that they cannot appeer att courts of election in consideraõn wherof, It is ordered and enacted by the court that any freeman of this corporaõn shall haue libertie to send his vote by proxey for the choise of Gouvernor asistants Comissioners and Treasurer ;

It is alsoe further enacted by the court that the Deputies of the seuerall Townes chosen to attend the court of election and the seuerall adiournments therof ; shall in that Townmeeting in which they are chosen they or eilther of them giue notice vnto the freemen that those that entend not to make their psonall appeerance att the [courte of] election are now to giue in their votes sealed vpp for the [choise] of Gouvernor asistants Comissioners and Treasurer ; and the said Deputies to obserue by a list of their names who hath voted [and] who hath not ; the which votes soe brought in to bee yemediately sealed vpp and brought vnto and deliuered in open court by the said Deputies.

ordered That whosoeuer shall sawe any boards in any place w[ithin] this Gouverment that is not in the bounds of any pticulare T[owne] shall pay to the vse of the Gouverment twenty pence for [euery] Thousand to bee payed to the Treasurer for the Countreys [vse] and of Timber and planke according to the pportion answer[able.]

[PART I.]

That all such Caske as are made by any Cooper within this Gouerment shall haue the two first letters of his name sett vpon such Caske hee makes by a burnt marke; vpon penaltie of lose of his Caske the one halfe to the Countrey the other to the enformer and this order to bee in force forthwith.

That noe pson within this Gouerment shall furnish any Indian with any Caske vpon the penaltie of the lose of the prise of the Caske the one halfe to the Countrey the other halfe to the enformer.

That all Coopers within this Gouerment are to make all their Caske according to London Gage vpon the like penaltie.

That euery Towne p<sup>r</sup>sent a fitt pson for serching of Caske and packing of fish and meate and to p<sup>r</sup>sent them to a maiestrate to bee sworne.

\*82

\*That all corn that is payed in defraying the publicke Charges of the Countrey be payed att one prise.

It is ordered by this court

That wheras the Purchasers and oldcomers were graunted formerly two or three Tractes of Land for them and their heires as by former actes of court doe appeer, Which they neuer yet for diuers causes enjoyed, and som pte of which said Tractes haue ben granted to other plantations

This court now graunts and giues libertie vnto the said Purchasers and oldcomers that all or whosoeuer amongst them will shall haue libertie to looke out and make choise of such place or places as they can find within this Gouerment or Jurisdiction not graunted alreddy to any; provided they exceed not their former pporcons) to accomodate them and their heires withall; and they haue liberty graunted them to Purchase the said Lands of the naties by the approba<sup>o</sup>n of the court; and soe many as shalbee thuse accomodated to relin<sup>k</sup>quish all their Rights enterest and title in the former specified places made choise of by them, and the rest of the oldcomers and Purchasers to take vp their pticulare pportions of Land within the precintes of the three former speified places; All which to bee pformed by all the Purchasers and oldcomers within fourteen monthes next ensueing this p<sup>r</sup>sent court.

And alsoe. it is further graunted by this p<sup>r</sup>sent court that all those as were att the courts graunt of the abouemencioned two or three places Inhabitants allowed and now are freemen shall haue the like libertie to looke out and make choise of some place or places for themselues and their heires as may afford them a sufficient accomoda<sup>o</sup>n for their comfortable Subsistance within fourteen monthes after that if they can find it;

It is enacted by the Court that henceforth the Indians within this Jurisdiction bee not p<sup>r</sup>mitted to doe any seruill worke on the Lords day as by fish-

ing fowling planting hilling and carriing of burthens ʒ and if any doe after notice giuen them heerof, they shalbee warned to the next generall court by the Cunstable of the place where they soe Transgresse. [PART I.]

That a common Standard for measure of corn bee made att Plym: videlecet a bushell an halfe bushell a pecke and an halfe pecke by a measure belonging to John Barnes which hath ben formerly allowed to bee the Standard by the court; and that euery Towne within this Gouverment haue a Standard made by them to try and scale their measures by which are to vniforme amongst them and to bee made round and these to bee prouided by the last of Nouember next; and to bee kept by the seallers of euery Towne for the Townes vse.

\*That in euery Towne within this Jurisdiction there bee one appointed to try and scale measures and to haue for euery measure tryed and sealed by him iiij<sup>d</sup> and onely round measures to bee allowed to buy and sell by; and the seuerall townes to coose a fitt pson for each towne for sealer and p<sup>r</sup>sent him to a maiestrate to bee sworne. \*83

That the courts of Maiestrates and Deputies haue power as to receiue accounts soe to giue allowance to any pson in publicke place Employed in any publick service for any losse or dammage ʒ hee sustaines as they thinke fitt.

That such ffences as are Judged sufficient against oxen and coves are by this court allowed sufficient against horses and mares; and if any horse beast breake into any corn or grasse ouer such sufficient f fence the owners of such horses shall pay the dammages proued as if they were Impounded.

That Whereas the publicke charges of the collonie are encreased and whereas by Gods providence many whales and other fishes are cast on shore in many ptes of this Jurisdiction out of which the court sees reason to require som pte of the Oyle made of them

This court now ordereth that of euery whale either cast on shore or bought of any Indian or Indians or taken on drift att Sea and brought to shore in any pte of this Jurisdiction there bee one barrell of marchantable Oyle payed to the publicke Treasury to the collonies vse to bee raised and payed as followeth Of this see more the sixt page forward in this booke.

Videlecet euery towne shall pay one barrell of marchantable oyle for euery drifte whale cast or brought on shore and seized on within the Liber-

[PART I.] ties and precincts of their severall townships or Traded or bought of the Indians within their townships; and the person or persons as first seize or cutt any whale or shall purchase or trade any such whales of the Indians that shall be soe cast on shore in any place within this Jurisdiction; out of the bounds of any particular Township shall pay one barrell of oyle for every such whale; And hee or they are hereby authorised to cause all such persons as cutt with him or them to pay there equall proportions to him according to what they cutt towards the said barrell of oyle and alsoe that there be one appointed in every townships by the Treasurer to demand and receive all such oyle as shall be due and payable to the Treasury And alsoe that It shall not be lawfull for any person or persons of any townships to cutt themselves or trade with the Indians for any blubber or oyle cast up or cutt within the precincts of another Township provided that If any man take a drift whale of att the sea and bring or tow It to the shore, It be accounted his owne goods; if within an harbour or mile of the shore they be taken they be reputed the townships where they are brought on shore;

\*85

\*Actes and orders made and concluded  
att the court holden att Plymouthe  
the 9<sup>th</sup> of June 1653

**I**T is ordered by the court  
That betwixt this present day and the first Tuesday in october next; The townesmen of every towne within this government shall make and fully finish a place or places for defence of their said towne (one or more as reason shall require) videlectt a brest worke with flankers vnto every such worke as shall be made; and incase any person or persons shall refuse to worke att the said worke when the maior parte of the townesmen of such townes where they liue haue agreed for the time and mannor and haue giuen notice therof; their names shall be then returned to the court or counsell of warr; And if any towne shall neglect to performe the worke according to this order they shall forfeite the summe of ten pounds to the vse of the country.

That incase two comissioners be chosen and that through age enabillitie for Trauell sicknes or the like they can not appeer at the time and place appointed for that end; That then the next in nomination shall serue vpon order from the Gouer.

That the publicke officers wages be paid in such pay as is marchantable and currant country pay and not in wampampeag or any such pay as is not



currant with the marchants; And alsoe that all fines and countrey charges bee paied in such pay as abouesaid. [PART I.]

That att the time of the entrey of euery action the charges of that action bee defrayed before the action bee entered.

That all such wolues as are killed by any Indian or Indians within the gouernment; the charge thereof bee borne by the whole countrey.

Added sence att the court June 13<sup>th</sup> 1654 they are to haue ten shillings p wolfe.

That euery pson of the age of descretion which is accounted sixteen yeares whoe shall witingly and willingly make or publish any Lye which may bee pnitius to the publicke weale or tending to the damage or hurt of any pticulare pson or with entent to deceiue and abuse the people with falce newes or reports and the same duely proued before any one Maiestrate whoe hath heerby power graunted to heare and determine all offences against this Law; shalbee fined for euery such default ten shillings; And if the ptie bee vnable to pay then to bee sett in the stockes soe longe as the said Maiestrate shall appoint in som open place not exceeding the space of two houres;

\*June the 10<sup>th</sup> 1654.

\*87

Ordered That euery Towne doe prouide a booke for the recording such lands as are possessed by any for which they haue not euidence and all such shall bringe Testimony of Witenesse vnto such as the towne shall appoint to take notice of the said euidence which shalbee fise in number of the same towne, and what the said fise or any three of them, being mett together shall conclude of they shall cause the towne clarke of the same towne to enter the same into the towne booke abouesaid and to bee published that if any within the tearme of two yeare can make better claime shall come in and in case none doe by the time prefixed then it may be brought to the court Record and entered and soe shalbee reputed sufficient euidence for the future;

The court haue ordered that the Treasurer by vertue of his said office shall take order that all debts due to the countrey whether by fine or otherwise bee seasonably brought in vnto such place or places as hee shall appoint that soe all dues and debts due vnto any pson or psons from the countrey may bee seasonably and satisfactoryly defrayed except the public officers wages which is otherwise prouided for;

[PART I.]

Repealed.

~~That noe Inhabitant within this Jurisdiction shall comence any suite in any other Jurisdiction in this countrey against any pson or psons haueing his or their residence and estate settled within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vnder the forfeite of twise soe much as the debt or dammage is layed in by or vnder the said Inhabitant the defendant to haue the one halfe; and the countrey to haue the other halfe of the said forfeite;~~

That incase of weaknes or sicknes of any pson or psons in any towne within this gou<sup>r</sup>ment; And that such as are deputed to drawe and sell wine or strong waters haue none, It shalbee lawfull for any one that hath any such That they may sell it for such entents and Purposes as to releue the weak and sicke, notwithstanding any former order to the contrary provided it bee with the liking and approbation of the maiestrate if there bee any in that towne and incase there bee none that then it bee with the consent of the Cunstable of the towne.

In regard that diuers that were chosen to the office of Cunstable, doe not appeer to take oath; It is enacted by the court that any that haue been this yeare chosen by any towne to serue in the office or for the future shalbee and shall refuse to take the oath of the Cunstable being therunto required by any one Majestrate shall pay for a fine fifty shillings.

\*88

\*Att the generall Court holden Att  
Plymouth the fift of June 1655

**I**T was Enacted That such as shall deny the Scriptures to bee a rule of life shall receiue Corporall punishment according to the descretion of the Majestrate soe as it shall not extend to life or Limb:

Wheras there hath been many Complaints of want of due maintainance of the minnisters as some haue reported; It is therefore Enacted That noe Pastor or Teacher of any Congregation shall remoue before his Complaint hath been Tendered to the Majestrates and they haue heard both sides;

That vpon such Complaints if there appeers to bee a reall defect in the hearers of the minnisters soe complaining; the Majestrates shall vse all gentle meanes to pswade them to doe their duty heerin; But if any of them shall not heerby bee reclaimed but shall psist through plaine Obstinacye against an Ordinance of God that then It shalbee in the power of the Majestrate to vse such other meanes as may put them vpon their duty;

\*Att the 2<sup>cond</sup> session of the generall Court begun att Plymouth the fift of June i655 and holden att Plym. aforsaid the 2<sup>cond</sup> of July i655 ;

[PART I.]

\*89

**I**T was Ordered by the Court

That incase any horses Cattle or hoggs shall Treaspas vpon any and bee by them ympounded If after they are ympounded they remayne four daies after notice giuen to the owners and bee neither repleuied nor agreed for ; It shalbee lawfull for such as Impound them to make publicke sale of them after publicke notice giuen of their Intention soe to doe and after dammages satisfied ; the remainder to bee returned to the owners ;

That all such Scotese and Irish as are in any Township in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall beare Armes and Traine as others excepting such as are servants from month to month.

Att the generall court holden att New Plymouth the sixt of June i656

**I**T is Enacted that an execution shalbee graunted forth att the end of one month after the verdict and Judgment is graunted and not before except the pty bee departing the gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that when the Marshall goeth to serue the execution the plaintife or his deputie shall goe with him to praisse the goods there destressed And if occation shall require the defendant shall haue liberty to Coose another man ; And the Marshall and those two shall appraise the goods or Chattles soe taken, but if the defendant doe Neglect or refuse to make such a choise the Marshall shall Choose a man on his behalfe : and as they or any of them shall prise the goods soe they shalbee by the Marshall then and there deliuered vnto the plaintife or his deputies and the Marshall discharged ; And if the said goods come to more then the debt and charges shall amount vnto then the plaintife shall returne the ouerplusse vnto the defendant in countrey pay within six dayes next after hee recciue the said goods ; But if the plaintife liue out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment then hee shall forth with returne the ouerplusse or giue Securitie to the defendant to doe it within the said six daies.

The Court haue ordered that henceforth such as are Admitted to bee ffreemen of this Corporation ; the deputies of such Townes wher such psons liue shall propound them to the court being such as haue beene alsoe appoued by the ffreemen in that towne wher such psons liue.

\*It is ordered by the Court that henceforth noe one shall make sale of any mannor of Barques or boates sayles or other rigging to any Indian or Indians on paine of forfeiting that which is soe sould and ten times the vallue therof ;

\*90

[PART I.]

It is ordered by the court that none shall sell any horse kind to any Indian or Indians on paine of forfeiting such horses or horse kind that shalbee soe sold and ten times the vallue therof;

It is ordered by the court that all Indians liueing neare any towne of this Jurisdiction shalbee forthwith strictly charged not to make any Alarum in the night by shooting or otherwise vlesse nessesitated therunto as they will answare it att their prill;

And Likewise that noe Indian shall discharge any gun on the Lords day att any thinge to the breach of the Sabbath and disturbance of the English; as they will answare it att their prill;

It is ordered by the court that none shall sell any horse or mare Coult or foale to any Indian or Indians on paine of forfeiting euery such horse or Mare Coult or foale that shalbee so sold and ten times the vallue therof.

July the 4<sup>th</sup> 1656.

of this see  
more the sixt  
page backward  
in this booke.

It was ordered by the court that wheras the countrey hath receiued great dammage by a defect in the order about the barrell of oyle due for euery whale taken on drift or cast on shore as is expressed in the said order by leakage of Caske or otherwise; The court haue ordered that for the future all such oyle as shalbee due and payable as aforesaid shalbee deliuered att Boston viz a full barrell of marchantable oyle for euery whale and the freight therof discharged by those that deliuer it; The said oyle to bee deliuered att Boston to such as the Treasurer shall appoint from yeare to year and a receipt taken from such as to whome it is deliuered shalbee a discharge to those that deliuer It.

Wheras complaint is made that some haue brought Cards into some of the townes of this Jurisdiction wherby sundry young psons mens both children and servants haue ben drawne together to spend their time in playing at such vnlawfull games to the corrupting of youth with sundry other sadd consequences that may follow by the pmission of such practices The court haue ordered that whosoever shall bring into this Jurisdiction or keep in his house any Cards for such purposes as abouesaid or shall suffer any to play att Cards or dice att any time in his house or where hee hath to doe or any that shalbee acters in playing att such vnlawfull games shalbee fined the sume of forty shillings; and for such as are servants or Children that shall play att Cards or dice for the first offence to bee corrected att the descretion of their parents or masters and for the second offence to bee publickly whipt;

It was ordered by the court that it shalbee in the liberty of the Treasurer when a month is past after Judgment; by warrant to require in any fine as he shall see reason; [PART I.]

\*Att the Generall Court of Election holden Att Plymouth  
the third of June Anno i657 1657.  
\*91

**W**HERAS this Generall Court takeing into their seriouse Consideration the great defect that either is or like to bee in y<sup>e</sup> seuerall Townshipes in this Jurisdiction for want of an able Godly Teaching Minnestrer and the great preiudice to the soules of many like to Ensue; And being desirouse according to our duties that such defects should not bee for want of due Incurragment to such as either are or shalbee Employed in soe good a worke of the Lord for his honner and the good of soules And in consideration that in asmuch as the seuerall Townshipes graunted by the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; was that such a Companie might bee receiued as should maintaine the Publicke worshipe and seruice of God there doe therefore judge that the whole both Church and towne are mutually Ingaged to Support the same; And therefore Order and agree That in whatsoever Township there is or shalbee an able Godly Teaching Minnester which is approued by this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that then four men bee Chosen by the Inhabitants or Incase of their Neglect Chosen by any three or more of the Majestrates to make an equall and just proportion vpon the estates of the Inhabitants according to their abillities to make vp such a Convenient maintainance for his Comfortable attendance on his worke as shalbee agreed vpon by the Church in each township where any is with the Concurrance of the Rest of the Inhabitants if it may be had or by the Majestrates aforesaid incase of their apparent Neglect and that destresse according as in other Just Cases provided bee made <sup>on</sup> vpon such as refuse to pay such their proportions which is in Justice due But Incase there bee any other way wherby any township doe or shall Agree that may effect the end aforesaid this law not to bee binding to them.

Ordered by this Court

That all fines vnder forty shillings that shall fall in any of the remote Townes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee leuiued by the Cunstable of that Towne by Warrant from the Tresurer without sending the Marshall;

\*It is ordered by the court

\*92

That the Milletary companie of euery Township in this gouerment shall bring their armes by course euery Lords day to the meeting viz. that the fourth pte of euery such companie shall bring their armes as aforesaid with

[PART I.] powder and bullett to Improve if occation shall require and whoesoever shall neglect to cary his Armes as aforsaid shall bee fined twelue pence for euery default to be leuied by the Cun. of the towne for the companies vse ; and the time of caring of armes to begine on the first of Aprill vntill the last of Nouember Anually ;

1657.

\*June 3<sup>d</sup> 1657.

\*93

The Court haue ordered

That all such as reside within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that are att their owne dispose and haue not taken the oath of fidelitie shall haue notice giuen them by the deputies of the seuerall Townes that they are to reparaire vnto some one of the Majestrates of this Jurisdiction betwixt the date heerof and the Court to bee holden att Plymouth the first Tusday in October next and incase after the time prefixed any shall refuse to take the said oath for the space of six monthes after shall either depart the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or pay a fine of five pounds.

It is ordered by the Court ;

That Incase any shall bring in any quaker rantor or other Notoriouse heritiques either by land or water into any pte of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall forthwith vpon order from any one Majestrate returne them to the place from whence they came or clear the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of them on the penalltie of paying a fine of twenty shillings for euery weeke that they shall stay in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment After warninge ;

The Court doe recomend vnto the seuerall townes in this Jurisdiction by their Comittees as that which is worthy of their Consideration ; that it is Nessesary to trayne vp some horses ffor milletary service ; viz That in each Towne euery one that keepeth three Mares for euery three mares that hee keepeth hee should keep a horse for the vse aforsaid with furniture suitable ; wh<sup>h</sup> incase they should soe doe they should bee freed from all milletary service as training and watching and such like ;

Repealed.

This order was made June 3<sup>d</sup> 1656 but the last clause therof was aded June 3<sup>d</sup> 1657.

The Court haue ordered That henceforth such as are admitted to bee ffreemen The deputies of such Townes as where such psons liue shall pfound them to the Court being such as shalbee alsoe approued of by the ffreemen in such Townes where they liue and vpon Satisfying Testimony giuen from the ffreemen of their towne by their deputies such to bee forthwith receiued without any further delay att the same Court when such Testimony is giuen vnlesse the

x x x x x x x x

PLYMOUTH RECORDS.

Laws.

PART II.





\* **T**HE Booke of the Generall Lawes and  
Liberties of the Inhabitants of the Ju-  
risdiction of New Plymouth Collected  
out of the Records of the generall Court; and  
lately Reuifed and established and desposed into  
an Alphabeticall order and published by the  
Authoritie of the generall Court held att New  
Plymouth the 29<sup>th</sup> day of September :

Ann<sup>o</sup> i658

[PART II.]

\*1

**B**ee Subject to euery  
ordinance of Man for  
the Lords sake

1 peter 2<sup>cond</sup> 13<sup>th</sup>

[PART II.]

\*2

\* **T**O our beloued Brethēen and Neighbours the Inhabitants of the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth the Gou<sup>r</sup>: Aſiſtants and Deputies Aſſembled att the generall Court of that Jurisdiction held att the towne of Plymouth the 29<sup>th</sup> of September 1658, wiſheth Grace and peace in our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

1658

**I**T was the great priuiledge of Iſraell of old and ſoe was acknowledged by them Nehemiah the 9<sup>th</sup> and 13. that God gaue them right Judgments and true Lawes ; for God being the God of order and not of confuſion hath Comaunded in his word and put man into a Capaſitie in ſome measure to obſerue and bee guided by good and wholſome lawes ; which are ſoe fare good and wholſome as by how much they are deriued from and agreeable to the Ancient platforme of Gods lawe ; for although ſundry pticulars in the Juditiſſall lawe which was of old Injoynd to the Jewes did more eſpetially (att leaſt in ſome cercomſtances) befitt their pedagogye ; yett are they for the mayne ſoe exemplay being grounded on principles of morall equitie as that all men Chriſtians eſpetially ought alwaies to haue an eye thervnto in the framing of their politique Conſtitutions ; and although ſeueral of the heathen Nations whoe were Ignorant of the true God and of his lawe haue bine famous in their times for the enacting and execution of ſuch lawes as haue proued profitable for the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of their Comonwealthes in the times wherin they liued Notwithſtanding their exelency appeered ſoe fare as they were founded vpon grounds of morall equitie which hath its originall from the Law of God ; And accordingly wee whoe haue bine actors in the framing of this Smale body of lawes together with other vſefull Inſtruments whoe are gone to their reſt ; can ſafely ſay both for our ſelues and them that wee haue had an eye principally and primarily vnto the aſorſaid platforme ; and 2condaryly vnto the Right Improuement of the liberties graunted vnto vs by our Superiors the State of England att the firſt begining of this infant plantation which was to enact ſuch lawes as ſhould moſt befitt a State in the nonage therof ; not rejecting or omitting to obſerue ſuch of the lawes of our Natiue Countrey as would conduce vnto the good and growth of ſoe weake a begining as ours in this Wildernes ; as any Impartiſſall eye Not forſtaled with prejudice may evely deſerne in the puſall of this ſmale booke of the lawes

of our Collonie; The promises duely considered might worke euery consciencious spirit to faithfull obedience, And although wee hold and doe afeirme that both Courts of Justice and majestates whoe are the minnisters of the lawe are essentially Ciuill; Notwithstanding wee conceiue that as the majestrate hath his power from God soe vndoubtedly hee is to Improue it for the honer of God and that in the vphoulding of his Worship and seruice and against the contrary with due respect alsoe to bee had vnto those that are really consciencious though differing and decenting in som smaller matters; but if any really or in pretence of conscience shall professe that which eminently tendeth to the Inuidation of Ciuell State and violation of Naturall bonds or the ouerthrow of the churches of God or his worship that heer prudence is to bee Improued in the enacting and execution of lawes; It hath bine our Indeuor in the framing of our lawes that nothing should bee found amongst them but what will fall vnder the same pticulares wee haue likewise reduced them to such order as they may most conduce to our vtillitie and profit; possibly it may bee that weaknes may appeer in the composure of sundry of them for want of such plenty of able Instruments as others are furnished withall; howeuer lett this suffice the gentle Reader that our ends are; to the vtmost of our power in these our Indeuors to promote the comon good both of Church and State both att p̄sent and for future; and therefore soe fare as wee haue aimed att the glory of God and comon good and acted according to God, bee not found a Resister but obeident lest therby thow resist the ordinance of God and soe Incurr the displeasure of God vnto damnation; Romans 13; 2.

By order of the Generall Court

NATHANEELL MORTON Clarke;

[PART II.]

\*3

\*A Declaration demonstrating the warrantable grounds and proceedings of the first Associates of the Government of New Plymouth in their laying the first foundation of the Government in this Jurisdiction for the making of Lawes and disposing of lands and of all such things as shall or may Conduce to the welbeing of this Corporation of New Plymouth:

**W**HERAS John Carver Wilham Bradford Edward Winslow Wilham Brewster Isaake Allerton and diuers others of the Subjects of our late Sou: Lord Kinge James by the grace of God King of England Scotland France and Ireland Defender of the faith &c did in the eighteenth yeare of his Reigne of England France and Ireland, and of Scotland the fifty fourth which was in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred and twenty *did* vndertake a voyage into that pte of America called Verginia or New England thervnto adjoyning there to erect a plantation and collonie of English Intending the glory of God the Inlargment of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> dominions and the speciall good of the English Nation ;

And wheras by the good providence of God the said John Carver Wilham Bradford Edward Winslow Wilham Brewster Isaacke Allerton ; and their Associates ariued in New England aforesaid in the harbour of Cape Cod or Paomett Scittuate and being in New England aforesaid where all the said psons entered into a Ciuill Combination being the eleventh of Nouember in the yeare aformencioned as the Subjects of our said Sou: Lord the Kinge to become a body politique binding ourselues to obserue such lawes and ordinances and obey such officers as from time to time should bee made and Chosen for our wellordering and guidance ; and thervpon by the fauor of the Almighty began the first Collonie in New England there being then noe other within the said Containant att a place Called by the Natiues Apavm allis Patuxet and by the English New Plymouth ; all which lands being void of Inhabitants ; Wee the said John Carver Wilham Bradford Edward Winslow Wilham Brewster Isaake Allerton and the rest of our associats entering into  
 \*4 a league of peace with Massasoiett since called Woosamequin \*Prince or Sachem of these ptes ; hee the said Massasoiett freely gaue them all the lands adjacent to them and their heires for euer ; acknowledgindg himselfe content to become the Subject of our Sou: Lord the Kinge aforesaid his heires and Successors ; And takeing protection of vs the said John Carver Wilham Bradford Edw: Winslow Wilham Brewster Isaacke Allerton and their associates the naturall Subjects of our Sou: Lord the King aforesaid but haueing

noe speciall letters Pattents for the said ptes of New England but onely the generall leaue and libertie of our Consiences in the Publicke Worship and service of God where euer wee should settle being therfore now settled and requireing speciall lycence and Comission from his Ma<sup>tie</sup> for the ordering our affaires vnder his gratiouse protection; had sundry Comissiones made and confirmed by his said Ma<sup>ties</sup> Councell for New England to John Peirse and his associates whose names wee onely made vse of and whose associates wee were in the late happy & memorable Raigne of our said Sou: Lord King James; but finding our selues still Straightened; and a willingnes in the hono<sup>ble</sup> Councell aforsaid to Inlarge vs ptely in regard of the many difficulties wee had vndergone, and ptely in regard of the good seruice wee had done as well in releiuencing his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Subjects as otherwise; wee procured a further Inlargement vnder the Name of Wilham Bradford aforsaid and his Associates whose names wee likewise vsed and whose associates as formerly wee still are; by vertue of which said letters patents libertie is giuen to vs deriuatory from our Sou: Lord King Charles bearing date the thirteenth of January 1629 being the fift yeare of his raigne of England Scotland France and Ireland & signed by the Right hono<sup>ble</sup> Robert Earle of Warwicke in the behalfe of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> said Councell for New England and Sealed with their Comon Seale allowed; To frame and make orders ordinances and Constitutions for the ordering disposing and Goūning of our psons and distributing the lands within the said Lymitts; To bee holden of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> his heires and Successors as of his manor of East greenwich in the County of Kent in free and Comon Soccage and not in Capite nor by Knightes service, viz: all that pte of New England in America and tract and tracts of Lands that lye within or between a certaine Rivolett or Rundlett there and comonly called Coahassett alīs Conahassett towards the North and the River comonly called Narragansett River towards the south and the great Western Ocean towards the East and between and within a straight line directly extending into the maine towards the west from the mouth of the said Riuer called Narragansett Riuer to the vtmost bounds and Lymetts of a Countrey or place in New England called Pocanacutt alts Puckanacicke \*alīs Sowamsett westward and another like straight line extending it selfe directly from the mouth of the said Riuer called Coahassett alīs Conahassett towards the west so fare vp into the maine land westwards as the vtmost lymetts of the said place or Countrey comonly called Pokanacutt alīs Puckenacicke alīs Sowamsett doth extend together with one halfe of the said Riuer called Narragansetts and the said Rivolett or Rundlett called Coahassett alīs Conahassett; and all Lands Riuers waters hauens creekes ports fishings fowlings and all hereditiments proffitts Comodi-

[PART II.]

ties and emoluments whatsoever Scituate lying and being or arising within or between the said Lymetts or bounds or any of them ; furthermore all that tract or pte of land in New England or pte of America aforsaid which lyeth within or between and extendeth it selfe from the vtmost lymetts of Cobbi-secontee atis Comasecontee which adjoy<sup>n</sup>eth to the Riuer of Kennebecke atis Kennebekicke towards the western Ocean and a place called the falls at Nequamkicke in America aforsaid and the space of fifteen English miles on each side the said Riuer comonly called Kennebeck Riuer and all the said Riuer called Kennebecke that lyeth within the said Lymetts and bounds Eastwards Westwards Northwards and Southwards last aboute mencioned ; and all lands grounds soyles Riuers waters fishings hereditiments and proffitts whatsoever Scituate lying and being arising happening or acrewing or which shall arise happen or acrow in or within the said Lymetts or bounds or either of them together with free Ingresse Egresse and Regresse with shippes boats Shallops and other vessells from the Sea comonly called the Western Ocean to the Riuer called Kennebecke and from the said Riuer to the said Western Ocean ; Together with all prerogatiues Rights Royalties Jurisdiccions priuiledges franchises liberties and emunities and also marine liberties with the escheates and casualties therof ; the Admiraltie Jurisdiction excepted with all the Interest right title claime and demaund whatsoever which the said Councell and their Successors now haue or ought to haue or may haue or require heerafter in or to any of the said portion or tract of lands heerby mencioned to bee graunted or any the p<sup>r</sup>mises in as free large ample and beneficiall manor to all Intents constructions and purposes whatsoever as the said Councell by vertue of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> said l<sup>r</sup>es may or can graunt ; To haue and to hold the said Tract and Tracts of land and all and singulare the p<sup>r</sup>mises aboute mencioned to bee graunted with their and euery of their appurtenances ; To the said Wilkam Bradford his heires Associates and assignes for euer to the onely proper and absolute vse and behoofe of the said Wilkam Bradford his heires associates and assignes for euer yeilding and paying vnto our said Sou: Lord the Kinge his heires and Successors for euer one fift pte of the Oare of the mines of Gold and siluer and one other fift pte therof to the Presedent and Councell which shalbee had possessed and obtained \*within the precincts aforsaid for all seruices and demaunds whatsoever allowing the said Wilkam Bradford his associates and assignes and euery of them his and their agents tenants and servants and all such as hee or they shall send or Imploy about his said p<sup>r</sup>ticular plantation shall and may from time to time freely and lawfully goe and returne trad or traffick as well with the English as any the Natiues within the precincts aforsaid ; with libertie of

\*6

fishing vpon any pte of the sea coast and sea shores of any the seas or Ilands adjacent and not being Inhabited or otherwaies desposed of by order of the said Presedent and Councill forbiding all others to Traffick with the Natiues or Inhabite in any the said Lymetts without the speciall leaue of the said Wiltam Bradford his heires and associates; and allowing the said Wiltam Bradford his heires and Associates to take apprehend seize and make prise of all such psons their Shippes and goods as shall attempt to Inhabite or trad with the Salvage people as aforsaid;

Morouer Wheras in the first begining of this Collonie diuers marchants and others of the City of London and else where aduentered diuers summes of money with the said John Caruer Wiltam Bradford Edward Winslow Wiltam Brewster Isaake Allerton and the rest of their associates on certaine tearmes of ptenershippe to continew for the tearme of seauen yeares; the said tearme Being expired the said plantation by reason of the manyfould losses and crosses by sea and land in the begining of soe great a worke being largely Indebted and noe meanes to pay the said debts but by the sale of the whole and the same being put to sale; Wee the said Wiltam Bradford Edward Winslow Wiltam Brewster Isaack Allerton and other our associates the Inhabitants of New Plymouth and elsewhere being loth to bee depriued of our labours bought the same for and in consideration of eighteen hundred pounds sterling viz: all and singulare the priuiledges lands goods Chattles ordinance amunition or whatsoever appertained to the said plantation or the aduenterors with all and singulare the priuiledges therunto belonging as appeereth by a deed between the said Isaake Allerton then agent for the said Wiltam Bradford and his Associates on the one pte; and John Pococke Robert Keine Edward Basse James Sherley and John Beachamp on the other pte being therunto deputed by the said marchants and the rest aduentering as aforsaid as appeereth by A Deed bearing date the sixt of Nouember in the third yeare of the Raigne of our Sou: Lord Charles by the Grace of God Kinge of England Scotland ffraunce and Ireland 1627 one thousand six hundred twenty and seauen; Bee it Knowne therefore vnto all men by these psents that according to our first Intents for the better efecting the glory of God, The Inlargement of the dominions of our said Sou: Lord the Kinge, and the speciall good of his Subjects by vertue as well of our Combination aforsaid as also the seuerall graunts by us procured \*in the Names of John Peirse and Wiltam Bradford their heires and associates together with our lawfull right in respect of vacancye donation or Purchase of the Natiues and our full purchase of the aduenterers before expressed; haue giuen vnto and alloted assigned and graunted to all euery pson and psons whose Name or Names shall follow

[PART II.] vpon this publicke Record such proportion or proportions of Grounds with all and singulare the priuiledges thervnto belonging as aforsaid to him or them his or their heires and Assignes Successiue for euer to bee holden of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> of England his heires and Successors as of his manor of East greenwich in the Countey of Kent in free & comon Sockage and not in Capitie nor by Knights Service yeilding and paying to our said Sou: Lord the Kinge his heires and Successors for euer one fift pte of the Oare of the mines of Gould and siluer and one other fift pte to the p̄sedent and Councell which shalbee had possessed and obtained as aforsaid and whatsoever lands are graunted vnto any by the said Wiltam Bradford Edward Winslow Wiltam Brewster Isaack Allerton or their heires or Associates as aforsaid being acknowledged in publicke Court and brought to this booke of Records of the seuerall Inheritances of the Subjects of our Soueraigne Lord the King within this Goūment; It shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> of New Plymouth aforsaid from time to time Successiue to giue vnder his hand and the Comon Seale of the Goūment a Cobby of the said Graunt soe Recorded Confeirming the said lands to him or them his or their heires and assignes for euer with the seuerall bounds and Lymetts of the same which shalbee Sufficient Euidence in law from time to time and att all times for all Intents and purposes; the said pte or pties his or their heires or assignes for euer; To haue and to hold the said portion of lands soe graunted bounded and recorded as aforsaid with all and singulare the Apurtenances thervnto belonging to the onely proper & Absolute vse and behoofe of the said pte or pties his or their heires and Assignes for euer;

November 15,  
1636.

\*8

\*Wee the Associates of New Plymouth coming hether as freeborne Subjects of the State of England Indowed with all and singulare the priuiledges belonging to such being Assembled Doe ordeine constitute and enacte that noe acte Imposition law or ordinance bee made or Imposed vpon vs att p̄sent or to come but such as shalbee made and Imposed by consent of the body of the Associates or their Representatives legally assembled, which is according to the free liberties of the State of England;

1636.

It is further enacted

That all our Courts bee kept att the Towne of Plymouth except the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants shall see Reason to keep som Courts of Assistants elsewhere within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment.

1642.

1658.

Wheras by the first Associates of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment the Courts of Election were held in the month of January Anually and afterwards in the month of



March Anually; By reason of the vnseasonablenes of those times of the yeare; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That the election Courts bee holden the first Tusday in June Anually; And the other Generall Courts bee holden the first Tusday in October and the first Tusday in March Anually; and that the Courts of Assistants bee holden the first Tusday in August the first Tusday in December the first Tusday in february and the first Tusday in May Anually. [PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all such as shalbee admited freemen of this Corporation shall stand one whole yeare propounded to the Court viz: to bee propounded att one June Court and to stand soe propounded vntill the June Court following and then to bee admited if the Court shall not see cause to the Contrary. i658.

Wheras A Committee was chosen viz: M<sup>r</sup> Tho: Prence M<sup>r</sup> Willam Coll-yare M<sup>r</sup> Tho: Dimmacke M<sup>r</sup> James Cudworth M<sup>r</sup> Josias Winslow John Dunham seni<sup>r</sup>. Gorge Soule and Constant Southworth to consider of the proposition propounded by the deputies att the Court held in October i650 concerning the major pte of the Courts to order the adjournments and desolutions of the generall Courts and the makeing and repealing of lawes they the said Committee declared their minds to bee that matters in the aforsaid respects to rest vnaltered as they were and that for the future as formerly in the makeing and repealing of lawes and adjournment of Courts wherin Comittees are requisite the majestrates and deputies bee considered as one body. June i650.

\*Wheras diuers actes and orders touching the making and repealing of lawes att June Courts and the adjournments therof is rendered with a dubiouse Interpretation; and this Court haueing by propositions to the freemen of the seuerall Townships desired their answares in order to the regulateing therof but not receiueing any answare from sundry of them haue seen cause to declare their owne sence therof and therfor doe enact That fitt and able psons bee anually chosen out of the freemen to attend June courts and the seuerall adjornments therof by the approued Inhabitants quallified as in such case is provided of this Jurisdiction in their respectiue townshippes for deputies vnto whom with the majestrates as the body Representatiue is comitted full power for the makeing and repealing of all lawes as vpon their seriouse considerations they shall find meet for the publicke weale of this Jurisdiction and that then onely such lawes bee enacted or repealed except the Gour<sup>r</sup> for the time being shall see waightey and nessesary cause by the complaint of the Sept: 29, i658.

[PART II.]

ffreemen or otherwise to call a speciall Court either of the whole body of the ffreemen or their deputies; the ffreemen of this Jurisdiction being left to their liberties to send their voates by proxy for the choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer in such way as by order of Court is already provided and this order to stand in full force till the whole body of ffreemen shall take further order therein; It is alsoe further provided that vpon notice giuen in an orderly way to the Gou<sup>r</sup> by the major pte of the ffreemen of this Jurisdiction of their apprehensions of a nessesitie of the body of ffreemen to come together; then the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the time being shall take the first oppertunitie to Summon in the body of ffreemen to aduise and acte ther as the matter shall require;

\*10

\*The Oath of a ffreeman.

Nouem. 1636.

You shalbee truely Loyall to ~~the p<sup>r</sup>sent State and Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of Eng~~ our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord the King his heires and Successors ~~land.~~ You shall not speake or doe deuise or aduise Any thinge or thinges Acte or Actes directly or Indirectly by Land or Water that doth shall or may tend to the destruction or ouerthrow of these p<sup>r</sup>sent plantations or Townshipes of the Corporation of New Plymouth neither shall you suffer the same to bee spoken or done but shall hinder oppose and descouer the same to the Gou<sup>r</sup> And assistants of the said Collonie for the time being; or some one of them; you shall faithfully Submitt vnto such good and wholsome Lawes and ordinances as either are or shalbee made for the ordering and Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of the same; and shall Indeuor to aduance the growth and good of the seuerall townshipes and plantations within the Lymetts of this Corporation by all due meanes and courses; All which you p<sup>r</sup>mise and Swear by the Name of the great God of heauen and earth simply truely and faithfully to p<sup>r</sup>forme as you hope for healp from God who is the God of truth and the punisher of falchood.

Nouem. 1636.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof; That on the first Tusday in June anually there shalbee a Gou<sup>r</sup> and seauen Assistants chosen to Rule and Gouverne the said plantations and Townshipes within the Lymetts of this Corporation and this election to bee made onely by the ffreemen therof;

Nouem. 1636.

And that the Gou<sup>r</sup> in due season by warrant directed to the seuerall Cunstables in the Name of his <sup>Ma<sup>ty</sup></sup> ~~highnes aforesaid~~ giue warning to the ffreemen either to make their p<sup>r</sup>sonall appeerance att the Courts of election or to send their voates by proxy for the choise of officers according to the following order; and that all our Courts warrants Summons and comaunds bee all done directed and made in the Name of <sup>our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord the King</sup> ~~his highnes the Lord Protector of~~ ~~England &c.~~

\*Whereas in regard of age disabilletie of body vrgent occations and other Inconveniencies that doe acrew sundry of the ffreemen are hindered that they can not appeer att Courts of election, In consideration wherof it is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that any freeman of this Corporation shall haue libertie to send his voate by proxey for the choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer; And that the deputies of the seuerall townes chosen to attend the Courts of election and the seuerall adjourments therof shall in the towne meeting in which they are chosen they or either of them giue notice vnto the freemen that those that Intend not to make their psonall appeerance att the Court of election are now to giue in their voates Sealed vp for the chosing of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer; and the said deputies to obserue by a list of their Names whoe hath voated and whoe hath not; The which voates soe brought in to bee ymediately Sealed vp and brought vnto and deliuered in open Court by the said deputies.

[PART II.]

i641.

\*11

It is enacted by the Court that att Courts of election the voates of all the ffreemen p<sup>r</sup>sent bee first read and Next after them the deputies of the seuerall townes shall orderly p<sup>r</sup>sent the proxey of their owne towne.

i658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that other public officers besides Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants bee chosen and established att the Court in June Anually viz: Comissioners and Treasurer; and that other Inferior officers; as Cunstablers grandjurymen and Survayors for the highwaies bee then alsoe confermed if approved by the Court.

i658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase there shalbee occasion for a Corroner that the Next majestrate where such accident falls shall sitt as Corrowner and execute that office according to the Custome of England as near as may bee.

i660.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all our Courts summons and comaunds bee all done directed and made in the Name of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> of England our dread Sou<sup>r</sup> and alsoe that all Ciuill officers and ministers of Justice in this Jurisdiction to be sworné in his said Ma<sup>ties</sup> name and alsoe that the oath of fidelitie and all other oathes shall goe in that tenure.

i660.

\*The office of the Gou<sup>r</sup>:

\*12

The office of the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the time being consisteth in the execution of such lawes and ordinances as are or shalbee made and established for the good of this Corporation according to the bounds and Lymitts therof viz: in calling

i636.

[PART II.] together or aduising with the Assistants or Councill of the said Corporation vpon such matteriall occations (or soe seeming to him) as time shall bring forth, In w<sup>h</sup> Assembly and all other the Gou<sup>r</sup> to propound the Occation of the Assembly and haue a double voyce therin ; if the Assistants Judge the case to great to bee desided by them and refer it to the Generall Court then the Gou<sup>r</sup> to Summon a Court by warning all the ffreemen that are then extant ; as alsoe incase the major pte of the ffreemen seeing waighty cause for the whole body to meet together and in an orderly way acquaint him with their desires therof ; Then hee shall Summon the whole body of ffreemen together with all convenient Speed ; and there alsoe to propound causes and goe before the Assistants in the examination of p<sup>t</sup>iculars and to propound such Centance as shalbee determined ; further It shalbee lawfull for him to Arrest and comitt to Ward any offenders ; provided that with all Convenient Speed hee shall bring the cause to hearing either of the Assistants or generall Court according to the nature of the offence ; Alsoe it shalbee lawfull for him to examine any suspicious psons for euill against the Collonie as alsoe to Interrupt or oppose such letters as hee conceiueth may tend to the ouerthrow of the same ; and that this office continew one whole yeare and noe more without renewing by election ;

\*13

\*The Oath of the Gou<sup>r</sup>:

1636.

You Shalbee truely Loyall to <sup>our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord King Charles his heires and Successors</sup> ~~the present State and Government of England~~ .  
 Alsoe according to that measure of Wisdome vnderstanding and deserning giuen vnto you shall *shall* faithfully Equally and Indifferently without respect of psons Adminnester Justice in all Cases coming before you as the Gou<sup>r</sup> of New Plymouth ; You shall in like manor faithfully duely and truely exequite the Lawes and ordiuances of the Same ; And shall labour to Advance and further the good of The Townshipes and plantations within the Lymitts therof to the vttermost of your power and oppose any thing that shall seeme to hinder the same Soe heelp you God whoe is the God of truth and the punisher of falshood.

\*14

\*The Office of Ann Assistant.

1636.

The office of an Assistant for the time being consisteth in appeering att the Gou<sup>r</sup>nors Summons and in giueing his best advise both in publicke court and private Councill with the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the good of the seuerall Townshipes and plantations within the lymetts of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; not to disclose but to keep secrett such thinges as concerne the publique good and shalbee thought meet to bee concealed by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Councill of Assistants in haueing a

[PART II.]

speciall hand in the examination of publicke offenders and in contriueing the affaires of the Collonie to haue a voyce in the censuring of such offenders as shalbee brought to publicke Court; That if the Gou<sup>r</sup> haue occation to bee absent from the Collonie for a short time by the Gou<sup>r</sup> with concent of the rest of the Assistants hee may bee deputed to Gouverne in the absence of the Gou<sup>r</sup> alsoe it shalbee lawfull for him to examine and comitt to ward where any occation ariseth where the Gou<sup>r</sup> is absent prouided the p<sup>erson</sup> bee brought to hearing with all convenient Speed before the Gou<sup>r</sup> and the rest of the Assistants; alsoe it shalbee lawfull for him in his <sup>Ma<sup>ties</sup></sup> ~~highnes~~ Name to direct his warrants to any Cunstable within the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment whoe ought faithfully to execute the same according to the Nature and tenure therof and may bind ouer p<sup>ersons</sup> for matters of crime to answare att the next ensueing Court of his said <sup>Ma<sup>ties</sup></sup> ~~highnes~~ after the fact comitted or the p<sup>erson</sup> apprehended;

## \*The Oath of an Assistant.

\*15

You shall all swaere to bee truely Loyall to <sup>our Sou<sup>er</sup> Lord King Charles his heires and Successors</sup> ~~the p<sup>resent</sup> State and Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of England alsoe you~~ you shall faithfully truely and Justly according to the measure of deseruing and descretion God hath giuen you bee Assistant to the Gou<sup>r</sup> for this p<sup>resent</sup> yeare for the execution of Justice in all cases and towards all p<sup>ersons</sup> coming before you without p<sup>eciall</sup>tie according to the Nature of the office of an Assistant read vnto you; Morouer you shall dilligently duely and truely see that the Lawes and ordinances of this Corporation bee duely executed and shall labour to Advance the good of the seuerall plantations within the lymetts therof and oppose any thinge that shall hinder the same by all due meanes and courses Soe heelp you God whoe is the God of truth and punisher of falshood;

1636.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authorite therof that the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the Assistants att the least shall as occation shalbee offered in time convenient determine in such triviall cases viz. vnder forty shillings between man and man as shall come before them as alsoe in offences of smale Nature shall determine doe and execute as in wisdom God shall direct them;

\*16

1636.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof

That att euery election Court some one of the Assistants or some other sufficient man bee chosen Treasurer for the yeare following whose place it shalbee to demaund and receiue in whatsoever sume or sumes shall appertaine to the Royaltie of the place either coming in by way of fine Amercement or

1636.

[PART II.] otherwise and shall Improve the same for the publicke benefitt of this Corporation by order of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment.

1644. It is further enacted by the Court that the Treasurer shall att the election Courts Anually giue in his accounts of his receipts and paiments for his yeare to any that the Court shall appoint and to bee entered vpon Record and therevpon to bee discharged.

1654. It is likewise enacted by the Court that the Treasurer by vertue of his said office shall take order that all debts due to the Countrey bee seasonably brought in vnto such place or places as hee shall appoint that soe all dues and debts due vnto any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons from the Countrey may bee seasonably and Satisfactorily defrayed except the publice officers wages which is otherwise prouided for.

1658. It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee in the libertie of the Treasurer after a month is past after Judgment by his warrant to require in any fine as hee shall see reasou ;

Whereas the Court haue taken notice that diuers of the ffreemen of this Corporation doe neither appeer att Courts of election nor send their voates by proxy for the choise of majestrates ¶ It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That whosoever of the ffreemen of this Corporation that shall not appeer att the Court of election att Plymouth in June anually nor send their voate by proxy according to order of Court for the Choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer shall be fined to the Collonies vse the sume of ten shilliges for euery such default ; vnlesse some vnavoidable Impediment hinder such in their appeerance.

1660.

Memorand that an oath bee formed for the Treasurer and next entered.

\*17

\*The oath of the Treasurer.

1659.

You shall faithfully serue in the office of the Treasurer in the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth for this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare during which time you shall diligently enquire after demaund and receiue whatsoeuer sum or sumes shall appertaine to this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; arising by way of fine amersment Royaltie or otherwise and shall faithfully Improve the same for the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and according to order dispose therof as occation shall require you shalbee redy to giue in a true account vnto the Court of youer actings in youer said office yearly att June Courts ; Soe heelp you God ¶

The oath of a Grandjuryman.

[PART II.]

You shall true p<sup>r</sup>sentment make of all thinges giuen you in charge you shall p<sup>r</sup>sent Nothing of Mallice or illwill youer owne Councell and youer fel- lowes in reference to this oath you shall well and truely keep soe healp you God.

\*The oath of the Clarke of the Court.

\*18

You shall faithfully serue in the office of the Clarke of the Court for the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth You shall attend the Generall Courts held for this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment att Plymouth Aforsaid and the seuerall Adjournments therof; and the Courts of Assistants and there Employ youerselfe in such occations as are behoofull to youer said place and office you shall likewise Attend such other meetings of the majestrates of like Nature as aboue expressed that shall or may fall out in the Interims of time betwixt the said Courts you shall not disclose but keep secrett such things as concerne the Publicke good and shalbee thought meet to bee Concealled by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Councell of Assistants You shall faithfully Record all such thinges as you shall haue order from Authoritie to Comitte to publicke Record and shall faithfully keep the publicke Records of this Jurisdiction Soe healp you God who is the God of truth and the punisher of falshood ;

1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that the Clarke of the Court shall haue twenty pounds p<sup>a</sup> annum besides his ordinarie fees Allowed by the Court ;

1641.

\*The fees of the Clarke of the Court

1641.

allowed and agreed vpon by the Court.

\*19

Imp <sup>r</sup> . for euery Recognizance of the peace ij <sup>s</sup> the takeing	}	-	00.	04.	00	To the Cryer four pence.
and ij <sup>s</sup> . the releasing						
For a Recognizance for the good behavior 4 <sup>s</sup> takeing	}	-	00.	08.	00	To the Cryer 8 <sup>d</sup> .
and 4 <sup>s</sup> the releasing						
For a warrant of the peace or any other graunted by the Court			00.	02.	00	
for a warrant of the good behavior			00.	04.	00	
for a Coppy of an order			00.	02.	00	
for an Inditement			00.	02.	00	
for a Repleuin			00.	02.	06	
for entering of an action			00.	00.	06	
for a declaration			00.	00.	06	
for a warrant to Summon a Jury			00.	00.	06	

[PART II.]	for an Answare	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-
	for recording the verdict	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 01. 06
	for an ordinary warrant from the Gou <sup>r</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 06
	for recording a bargaine or giuft of house or lands	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 02. 06
	for entering a bargaine of beasts or Cattle	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 06
	for entering and drawing a cobby of an euidence of land								} 00. 05. 00
	graunted by the Court	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	
	for regestring a will	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 02. 06
	for regestring the Inventory	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 02. 06
	for a Suppena for Witnesses	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 06
	for entering a graunt of lands by the Court of Assistants	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 01. 00
	for a serch of an order Will ꝑc	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 04
	for a cobby of a will	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 01. 00
	for a cobby of an Inventory	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 01. 00
	for entering a freeman	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 06
	for recording of a marriage	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 06
	for recording of Contracts for servants	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 00. 04
	for makeing an execution	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 01. 06

\*20

\*The office and oath of the Cheife Marshall.

i652.

You shalbee reddy to attend the Generall Courts and their seuerall adjourments and the Courts of Assistants and alsoe the Court of Comissioners when they meet in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and the Gou<sup>r</sup>'s p<sup>er</sup>son especially att those Courts You shall faithfully with what speed you may collect and gather all such fines and sumes of money you shall haue warrant soe to doe by the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his Assistants; and shall with like dilligence leuy the goods of any p<sup>er</sup>son for which you shall haue Warrant soe to doe by any execution graunted by the Court and that the same soe collected or leuied you shall with all Convenient speed deliuer in to the Treasurer or the p<sup>er</sup>sons to whom the same shall belonge and shall serue all attachments directed to you which shall come to your hands and shall p<sup>er</sup>forme doe and execute all such lawfull Comaunds directions and warrants as by lawfull Authoritie heer established shalbee comitted to your care and charge without fauor or p<sup>er</sup>ciallitie to any p<sup>er</sup>son and shall take onely your ordinary fees allowed without exaction vpon any p<sup>er</sup>son; and shall safely keep as head Marshall all such p<sup>er</sup>sons as shalbee comitted to your Custitie by the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his Assistants soe healp you God ꝑc.

i658.

Moreouer it is enacted by the Court that the cheife marshall haue full



power incase hee see occation to require Aid and Assistance of any to Assist him in the execution of his office ; and the adminnstration of his s<sup>d</sup> office shall extend to all places within the Lymetts of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ƒ.

[PART II.]

The cheife marshall is allowed twenty marke p annum for his wages besides his ordinary fees allowed by the Court. 1652.

\*The fees of the Cheife Marshall allowed by the Court. \*21

	ʒ	s	d	
It. for serueing of an execution - - - - -	00.	05.	00	1652.
It. for his journey about it 2 <sup>d</sup> p mile - - - - -	00.	00.	00	
It. for serueing an attachment - - - - -	00.	02.	06	
It for a Comitment - - - - -	00.	02.	06	
It. for Imprisonment 2 <sup>s</sup> . 6 <sup>d</sup> p day - - - - -	00.	00.	00	
It. for euery action that is entered - - - - -	00.	00.	06	
It. the one halfe of all fines not exceeding - - - - -	00.	06.	00	

More of the marshall see execution serued.

It is enacted by the Court that the Cheife Marshall shall haue two shillings in the pound for gathering of fines ƒ if they bee not brought in by the pties themselues.

The office and oath of the vnder Marshall.

You shalbee reddey to attend the generall Courts and Courts of Assistants and doe such seruice as shalbee comaunded you by the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his Assistants and shall reddily execute and Inflict all such Cencures and punishments as by Authoritie of this p<sup>r</sup>sent Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee adjudged to bee Inflicted vpon any delinquents and offenders according to the Nature of all such warrants and mandates as shalbee directed to you without fauor or pciallitie to any pson and shall faithfully and safely as vnderkeeper or vnder Marshall keep all such delinquents Malfactors and fellons as shalbe comitted vnto you and shall take onely youer ordinary fees allowed without exaction vpon any soe healp ƒ.

The Vnder Marshall is allowed twenty Nobles p annum besides his fees allowed by the Court. otherwise altered since ann<sup>o</sup> 1660: 1652.

It is enacted by the Court that the publicke officers wages shalbee paid in Corn ; 1658.

1658. It is enacted by the Court that all Corne that shalbee paid in defraying the publicke charges of the Countrey shalbee paid att one current prise.

1646. It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons shall henceforth cast contempt vpon the Marshall or any of his by reason of and concerning his said office shalbee fined for every such default to the vse of the gou<sup>r</sup>ment ten shillings.

1658. It is enacted by the Court that henceforth whatsoever Centances or Cen-  
 Repealed June 1659. cures shall fall out to bee Inflicted by the vnder Marshall hee shalbee paid by the Countrey for the same ; and hee shall haue but one shilling and six pence a day for every prisoner hee hath in his Custitie att any time if hee haue more then one att a time ; but in case hee haue but one att a time in his Custitie hee is allowed two shillings and six pence a day ;

1658. It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> or asistants to presse any either tradsmen or others to bee Employed in the behalfe and for the vse of the Countrey as to prouide or repaire prisons stockes whipping posts [or other Instruments of Justice and all such to be payed with current Countrey pay.]

\*22

\*The Oath of a Cunstable

1636.

You shall sweare to bee trulye loyall to <sup>our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord King Charles his heires and Successors</sup> ~~the present State and Government~~  
~~of England~~ you shall faithfully serue in the office of a Cunstable in the ward of \_\_\_\_\_ for this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare according to that measure of Wisdome vnderstanding and descretion God hath giuen you in which time you shall dilligently see that <sup>his Mat<sup>ties</sup></sup> ~~the~~ peace comaunded bee not broken but shall carry the pson or psons offending before the Gou<sup>r</sup> of this Corporation or some one of his Assistants and there attend the hearing of the case and such order as shalbee giuen you, you shall apprehend all suspicious psons and bring them before the said Gou<sup>r</sup> or some one of the Assistants as aforsaid You shall duely and trulye serue such warrants and giue such Summons as shalbee directed vnto you from the Gou<sup>r</sup> or assistants before mencioned and shall labour to advance the peace and happines of this Corporation and oppose any thinge that shall seem to anoy the same by all due meanes and courses Soe healp you God whoe is the God of truth and the punisher of falshood ;

1640. It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that the Cunstables in euery towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall warne the Townsmen wherof they are ; to come together as they doe for other townes busines when the Com-

ittes shall thinke it fitt; as well to acquaint them with what is propounded and enacted att the Court; as to receiue Instructions for any other busines they would haue done; [PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that the Cunstable that liue remote hence in the further plantations shalbee freed from attendance att the Generall Courts after they are sworne except there shalbee speciall cause; to retaine them. 1639.

It is enacted by the Court that all fines vnder forty shillings that shall fall in any of the remote townes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee leui<sup>d</sup> by the Cunstable of the towne by warrant from the Treasurer which remote townes are explained by the court to bee Taunton Rehoboth Eastham and Bridgwater. 1657.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that in euery towne of this Jurisdiction there shalbee three or foure men or more chosen by writing their Names in papers as the majestrates are chosen to rate all the Inhabitants of their towne according to their estates or faculties; that is according to goods lands Im<sup>pr</sup>oued faculties and p<sup>er</sup>sonall abilities whether the rate bee for any of the townes in p<sup>ar</sup>ticulare or for generall charges; and by Im<sup>pr</sup>oued lands are vnderstood meddow lands plowed lands and hoed lands the orders therin to be obserued. 1643.

\*first that the Cunstable shall summon the townsmen to meet together; and if hee neglect when hee is ther<sup>v</sup>nto lawfully warned to forfeit twenty shillings. \*23

2<sup>ndly</sup> That if the Townsmen doe not meet vpon the Cunstable warning and chose Raters the Towne to forfeit five pounds.

3<sup>dly</sup> That if the Raters soe elected doe not make the Rate and Transcrib and deliuer or cause to bee deliuered a cobby therof to the Cunstable within ten daies or sooner if the occasion shall require to forfeit ten shillings apeece for euery such default.

4<sup>ly</sup> That if the Cunstable doe Neglect to gather the said rates or not cause them to bring it in within forty daies next after hee hath the said rate or sooner vpon speciall occasion; hee shall pay it himselfe and to bee recouered by suite.

5<sup>ly</sup> That the Cunstable <sup>is heerby Impowered</sup> ~~shall haue power~~ to destraine vpon any that shall Neglect to pay his rate being demaunded and bring it to the place appointed by him and shall haue twelue pence for his paines about the destresse.

Lastly that all fines and forfeitures which shall happen for breach of any of these actes shalbee leui<sup>d</sup> for the Gouerment.

[PART II.]

i639.

by procuring  
is meant due  
Satisfaction.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof; That if any Cunstable within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment haue occasion to goe out of the townshipp wherein hee is Cunstable for some time; hee shall haue power to procure and depute another in his stead as his deputie to execute his place vntill his returne as effectual[ly] as hee himselfe might doe; provided that the pson whom hee soe deputeth bee not one that has serued in the place within two yeares before except hee bee willing; and incase any Cunstable shall Neglect to provide and depute one in his stead as aforesaid to forfeit ten shillings for euery default;

i654.

Repealed June  
i660.

In regard that diuers psons chosen to the office of a Cunstable doe not appeer to take oath; It is enacted by the Court that any that shalbee Chosen by any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to serue in the office of a Cunstable and shall refuse to take the oath of a Cunstable being therunto required by any one Majestrate shall pay for a fine fifty shillings.

i636.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That it shalbee Lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> as well to Impannell such <sup>his Ma<sup>ties</sup> subjects</sup> ~~the Subjects of the State and present Government of England~~ as are of good report and free holders; vpon Juries although noe freemen to doe seruice thereon as well as such as haue taken vp their ffreedome.

i636.

Inacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that a great Quest bee impannelled by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants which are to bee chosen out of the seuerall townshipes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment according to order of Court and warned to serue his <sup>Majesty</sup> ~~highnes~~ by Inquiring into the abuses and breaches of such wholesome lawes and ordinances as tend to the preservation of the peace and good of the Subjects; and that they p<sup>r</sup>sent such to the Court as are guilty that soe they may bee procequuted by the Court by all due meanes.

i639.

\*24

\*ffor the preventing of Idlenes and other euills occasioned therby It is enacted by the Court that the Grandjurymen of euery towne shall haue power within their seuerall townshipes to take a speciall view and Notice of all manor of psons married or single dwelling within their seuerall townshipes that haue smale meanes to maintaine themselues and are suspected to liue Idlely and loosly and to require an account of them how they liue and such as they find delinquent and cannot giue a good account therof vnto them that they cause the Cunstable to bring them before the Majestrate in their towne if there bee any if there bee none before the Celect men appointed for such

purpose That such course may bee taken with them as in their wisdomes shalbee Judged Just and equall ; [PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that the Grand-jurymen in euery township once in the yeare anually shall view all the measures waights and tole dishes in their seuerall townshipes and see that they bee lawfull according to order and that euery housholder haue ladders sufficient and p<sup>r</sup>sent the defects. i646.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all such misdemeanors of any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons as tend to the hurt and detriment of societie Ciuillitie peace and Neighbourhood bee inquired into by the Grand enquest and the p<sup>r</sup>sons p<sup>r</sup>sent to the Court that soe the desturbers therof may bee punished and the peace and welfare of the Subject peacably p<sup>r</sup>serued. i636.

Wheras Complaint hath bine made that the ffreemen were put to many Inconveniencies and great expences by their Continewall attendances att the Courts It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof for the ease of the seuerall townes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; that euery towne shall make Choise of two of their freemen and the towne of Plymouth of foure to bee Comittes or Deputies to joyne with the bench to enact and make all such lawes and ordinances as shalbee Judged to bee good and wholsome ; for the whole provided that the lawes they doe enact shalbee propounded one Court to bee considered of till the next and then to bee confeirmed if they shalbee approued of except the case require p<sup>r</sup>sent confeirmation ; and if any acte shalbee confeirmed by the bench and Comittes which vpon further deliberation shall proue prejudiciall to the whole ; That the ffreemen att the next election Court after ; meeting together may repeale the same and enact any other vsefull for the whole ; and that euery township shall beare their Comitties charges and that such as are not freemen but haue taken the oath of fidelitie and are masters of families and Inhabitants of the said Townes ; as they are to beare their p<sup>r</sup>te in the charges of their Comittes soe to haue a voate in the choise of them ; provided they chose them onely of the ffreemen of the said towne wherof they are ; but if such Comittes shalbee Insufficient or troublesome that then the bench and the other Comitties may dismiss them and the towne to chose other freemen in their places ; i638.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof i658.  
That wheras the Number of freemen in many places is but smale and the \*25

[PART II.] Inhabitants of the townshipes many more whoe haue equall voates with the freemen in choise of Deputies whoe being the body of ffreemen representatiue together with the Majestrates haue equall voates for the enacting of lawes whoe by weaknes prejedice or otherwise it hath or may come to passe that very vnfitt and vnworthy psons may bee chosen that can not answare the Courts trust in such a place ; That all such Courts as Majestrates and Deputies are to acte in makeing of lawes and being assembled the Court in the first place take notice of their members and if they find any vnfitt for such a trust that they and the reason therof bee returned to the towne from whence they were sent that they may make choise of more fitt and able psons to send in their stead as the time will pmitt ;

i646. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof

That if any township in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment being orderly therto required shall neglect and refuse to elect or choose Committees according to the aforesaid order the towne soe Neglecting or refusing to bee fined to the Gou<sup>r</sup>ments vse forty shillings and euery Committee soe chosen and makes not his psonall appeerance in the Court att the day appointed there to doe his seruice to bee fined twenty shillings vnlesse hee can shew a reason approued by the Court ;

i646. Whereas the seuerall townes of this Jurisdiction were to send their Deputies which must arise out of their freemen to attend the three generall Courts of the yeare now vpon the speciall complaints of the Deputies of the townes soe sent professing themselues to bee oppressed therby It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that the whole body of ffreemen shall appeer att the election Court which is the first Tusday in June Successiuely ; and then to make or repeale such lawes orders and ordinances as shalbee found meet and wholsome for the ordering of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that then alsoe they p<sup>r</sup>sent such deputies as haue bin chosen by their townes according to order formerly established whoe are to attend the same and its seuerall adjournments as the occations of the Countrey shall require ; and that whatsoever lawes orders and ordinances shalbee made or repealed bee att that Court and the seuerall adjournments therof onely done except the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants see cause to call a speciall Court) and other Courts to attend matters of Judicature and the majestrates onely to attend the same.

i649. It is enacted by the Court that att courts of election next after the choise and Swearing of Majestrates and other officers the generall occations of the Countrey wherin deputies are requisitt bee attended except extreordinary occation comes in the way.

It is enacted by the Court that the Court of majestrates and deputies shall haue power; as to receiue accounts soe to giue allowance to any pson in publicke place Employed in any publicke seruice for losse or damage hee sustaines as they shall thinke meet;

[PART II.]

i652.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof

i640.

That noe p<sup>r</sup>sentment heerafter shalbee exhibited to the Grand enquest to bee brought to the bench except it bee done vpon oath and that it shalbe lawfull for any of the Assistants or such as are deputed to adminnester an oath in such case viz: it is to bee vnderstood on their owne knowlidge or others oath;

\*26

It is enacted by the Court that any one that for the future shalbee p<sup>r</sup>sented to the Court for any fact on the Testimony of one witsse although vpon oath shall not bee for the same condemned without a 2<sup>cond</sup> witsse or concurring cercomstances;

i656.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof

i636.

That all trialls whether Capitall or between man and man bee tried by Juryes according to the p<sup>r</sup>sedents of the lawes of England as neare as may bee;

It is enacted by the Court that if a Jury bee impannelled for tryall of causes and the p<sup>r</sup>ties agree after yett they shall pay the Jurye;

i644.

It is enacted by the Court that the Jurye shall haue six pence a man and the foreman twelue pence in such cases of Controversy as they shall goe vpon;

i635.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that att the time of the entery of euery action the charges of that action bee defrayed before the action bee entered.

i653.

Wheras the Courts held in June annually are vsually full of much busines soe as the Court can not then convenient attend the tryall of actions It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee lawfull for any to comence a suite for the triall of a cause of any vallue betwixt p<sup>r</sup>tie and p<sup>r</sup>tie att the Court of asistants held in May anually and that noe action shall hensforth bee tried att June courts.

i658.

Repealed June  
the 14. 1660.

It is enacted by the Court that if a stranger or forraigner haue any occasion to comence a suite att any time betwixt the Courts for the triall of any cause of a considerable vallue; hee hath libertie to purchase a Court for such a purpose if he shall put in Securitie to defray the charge and that there shall not bee lesse then three of the Majestrates att euery such Court.

i658.

[PART II.]

1655.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that an execution shalbee graunted forth att the end of one month after the verdict and Judgment is graunted and not before except the ptie bee departing the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that when the marshall goeth to serue the execution the plaintiffe or his deputie shall goe with him to praise the goods soe destressed and if occation shall require the defendant shall haue libertie to choose another man ; and the marshall and those two shall appraise the goods or chattles soe taken ; but if the defendant doe neglect or refuse to make such a choise ; the marshall shall choose a man on his behalfe and as they or any two of them shall praise the goods soe they shalbee \*then and there deliuered vnto the plaintife or his deputies and the Marshall discharged and if the said goods come to more then the debt and charges shall amount vnto then the plaintife shall returne the ouerplusse vnto the defendant in Countrey pay within six daies Next after hee receiueth the said goods but if the plaintife liue out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment then hee shall forthwith returne the ouerplusse or giue Securitie to the defendant to doe it within the said six daies.

\*27

1644.

Enacted by the Court that all actions bee entered vpon the warrants or Summons going out ; as soone as may bee.

1645.

It is enacted by the Court that all executions Issueing out of the General Court or Court of Assistants shalbee executed by the marshall onely.

1644.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that it shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> and majestates, or any of them to direct Sommons to any pson within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to answare to any suite comenced against them and it shalbee as Authentick as if it were done by warrant to attach or arrest them.

1639.

It is enacted by the Court that the Prison shalbee erected att Plymouth.

1646.

It is enacted by the Court that the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall allow 3<sup>d</sup> a day to maintaine a prisoner comitted for fellonie or misdemenor if they bee not able to maintaine themselues and to bee paid by the Treasurer and allowed vpon his accounts ;

A peny more was aded to the prisoners allowance by the day in June Court 1660.

#### Capitall offences lyable to death

1636.

Treason or Rebellion against the pson of <sup>the King</sup> his highnes the Lord Protector ~~against the~~ State or Comonwealth of England or this Corporation  
Wilfull murder.



Solemne compaction or conversing with the diuell by way of Witchcraft  
 conjuration or the like ; [PART II.]

Wilfull or purposed burning of Shippes or houses.

Sodomy Rapes Buggery.

It is enacted by the court and the authoritie therof that whosoever shall  
 comitt Adultery shalbee seuerly punished by Whiping two seuerall times ;  
 viz: once whiles the Court is in being att which they are convicted of the fact  
 and the 2<sup>cond</sup> time as the Court shall order . and likewise to weare two Cap-  
 itall letters viz: A D cut out in cloth and sowed on their vpermost Garments  
 on their arme or backe ; and if att any time they shalbee taken without the  
 said letters whiles they are in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment soe worn to bee forth with taken  
 and publickly whipt ; 1658.

It is enacted by the court that in euery township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment there  
 shalbee a paire of Stockes and a whiping post erected in such places as shal-  
 bee thought meet by the seuerall Naighborhoods where they concerne vpon  
 the penaltie of ten shillings for any township that shalbee defectiue therin.  
1636.

\*Offences Criminall ;

\*28

It is enacted by the court and the authoritie therof that any pson or  
 psons that shall comitt Carnall copulation before or without lawfull contract  
 shalbee punished by whiping or els pay ten pounds fine a peece and bee Im-  
 prisoned during the pleasure of the Court soe it bee not aboute three daies  
 but if they bee or wilbee married the one to the other then but ten pounds  
 both and Imprisoned as aforsaid ; and by a lawfull Contract the Court vnder-  
 stands the mutuall concent of parents or guardians if there bee any to bee  
 had and a sollemne promise of marriage in due time to each other before two  
 competent witnesses ; and if any pson or psons shall comitt Carnall Copula-  
 tion after contract and before marriage they shall pay each fifty shillings and  
 bee both Imprisoned during the pleasure of the Court soe it bee not aboute  
 three daies ; or els in case they cannot or will not pay the fine then to suffer  
 corporall punishment by whiping ; 1645.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that whosoever shall  
 prophanly Swear or curse by the Name of God or any of his titles Attributes  
 word or workes hee or shee shalbee sett in the Stockes soe it exceed not three  
 houres or bee put in prison according to the nature and quallitie of the pson ;  
1639.

It is enacted by the Court that euery pson of the age of descretion which  
 is accounted sixteen yeares whoe shall wittingly or willingly make or publish  
1653.

[PART II.]  
 Repealed the  
 14<sup>th</sup> of June  
 1660.

any lye which may bee puitiouse to the publicke weale or tending to the damage or hurt of any pticulare pson or with intent to deceiue and abuse the people with false newes or reports and the same dewly proued before any one maijstrate whoe hath heerby power graunted to heare and determine all offences against this law shalbee fined for euery such default ten shillings and if the pty bee vnable to pay then to bee sett in the Stockes soe long as the said maijstrate shall appoint in some open place not exceeding the space of two houres ;

1636.

It is enacted by the Court

That any that shall steale or attempt to steale shippes boates munition or other thinges it bee accounted fellony and so to bee punished

1645.

It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever seruant or apprentice or laborer that shall ployne or steale or Imbezell his masters goods shall make double satisfaction & restitution either by paiment or seruitude as the court shall Judge meet for the first default and for the 2<sup>cond</sup> default of the laborer to make double restitution and either find surties for his good behavior or bee whipt ;

1636.

It is enacted by the Court that such as either drinke drunke in their psons or suffer any to drinke drunke in their houses bee Inquired into amongst other misdemenors and accordingly punished or fined or both att the descretion of the maijstrates ;

Of drunkenes see more in the law about ordinary keepers

1655.

\*29

\*Wheras Complaint is made that some haue brought cards into some of the townes of this Jurisdiction wherby sundry psons mens both children and seruants haue been drawne together to spend their time in playing att such vnlawfull games to the coruping of youth with sundry other sad consequences that may follow by the pmission of such practices It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that whosoever shall bring into this Jurisdiction or keep in his house any Cards for such purposes as aforsaid or shall suffer any to play att Cards or dice att any time in his house or where hee hath to doe ; or any that shalbe actors in playing att such vnlawfull Games shalbee fined for the same forty shillings and for such as are servants or children that shall play att Cards or dice for the first offence to bee corrected att the descretion of their parents or masters and for the 2<sup>cond</sup> offence to bee publickly whipt ;

1645.

Wheras some abusses haue formerly broken out amongst vs by disguising wearing Visors and strange apparrell to laciuiouse ends and purposes ; It is

therefore Inacted by the court and the Authoritie therof that if any pson or psons shall heerafter vse any such disguisements visors strange apparrell or the like to such laciuiouse and euill ends and Intents and bee therof convict by due course of law shall pay fifty shillings for the first default or else bee publickly whipt and bee bound to the behaiour if the bench shall see cause

[PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons shall wilfully and of sett purpose burne any mans fence or fences shall make good the damage and bee bound to his good behaiour

1645.

It is enacted by the Court that euery pson or psons that shall wilfully pluck vp remoue or deface any land marke or bound betwixt pty and pte that haue bine or shalbee orderly and sufficiently sett vp by psons therunto designed; shalbee fined from twenty shillings to five pounds; according to the Nature of the offence

1645.

It is enacted by the Court that euery pson or psons that shall wilfully and of sett purpose breake downe another mans ffence or gate or any common Gate or bridge to the anoyance either of a pticulare pson or the generall shall make vp such said fence gate or bridge att his owne charge and pay the damage therby sustained and bee fined for the first default fifty shillings and for the 2<sup>cond</sup> default fined five pounds and bound to his good behaiour;

1645.

Wheras there is great abuse in takeing of Tobacco in very vnciuell manor in the streets and dangerously in out houses as barnes staules about hay stackes and other such places It is therfore enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons shalbee found or seen heerafter takeing of Tobacco publickly in the open streets of any towne in this Jurisdiction or in and about barnes staules hay stackes corn stackes hay yards or other such like places or out-houses that euery such pson or psons soe offending shall forfeit and pay to the townes vse for the first default twelue pence for the 2<sup>cond</sup> 2<sup>s</sup> and it shalbee lawfull and by this act warrantable for the Cunstable of euery towneship without further warrant vpon sight or Information therof to destraine his or their goods for it w<sup>h</sup> doe refuse to pay it vpon his demaund and to bee accountable to the Tresurer of what hee receiues yearly att the election court; souldiers in time of exersis only excepted

1646.

\*It is enacted by the Court that wheras many haue sustained great damage by the Indescreet fiering of the woods though Justly occasioned thervnto that none shall fier the woods att any time but they shall giue warning therof to the naighbours about them and the time of fiering of them to bee from the fifteenth of february to the latter end of aprill; Also that if any pson att

1633.

1646.

\*30

[PART II.] any time shall fier any the woods and hath noe Just occation soe to doe hee shalbee fined ten shilling to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or bee whipt

1645. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that whoesoever shall forge any deed or writing wherby any estate of lands either of Inheritance or for tearme of yeares shalbee passed and the right heires disinherited and shall produce or publish the same to such deceitfull end and purpose and bee therof convict by due course of law shall pay the pty greiued double damage and bee fined halfe soe much as the pty greiued recouereth of him ; and incase hee bee not able to pay it to bee publickly whipt and burned in the fase with a Roman F

1645. It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That if any officer or keeper of publicke Records or writings shall wilfully steale Imbezell or make away any such publicke Records or writings soe comitted to publicke Record and keeping or shall alter any of them or any pte of them by raceing out or ading therto or otherwise ; shalbee disfranchised and loose his office and burnt in the face ; except in triuiall cases ;

1645. It is enacted by the Court That if any pson or psons shall indeauor or goe about directly or Indirectly to corrupt any officer keeping any publick records or writings to procure him to deface corrupt alter or Imbezell any such publicke records or writings shalbee fined according to the Nature of the offence soe it bee not aboue forty pounds or bee whipt ;

1655. It is enacted by the Court that all such as shall deny the Scriptures to bee a rule of life shall receiue corporall punishment according to the descretion of the majestrate soe as it shall not extend to life or limb

1655. Whereas there hath bine many complaints for want of due maintenance for minnisters (as some haue reported) It is therefore enacted by the Court that noe Pastor or Teacher of Any Congregation shall remoue before his complaint hath bine tendered to the Majestrates and they haue heard both sides and that vpon such complaints if there appeers to bee a reall defect in the hearers of the minnisters soe complaining the majestrates shall vse all gentle meanes to pswade them to doe their dewty heerin but if any of them shall not heerby bee reclaimed but shall psist through plaine obstinacy against an ordinance of God that then it shalbee in the power of the Majestrate to vse such other meanes as may putt them vpon their duty:

1657. Whereas this Generall Court taking into their seriouse consideration the great defect that either is or like to bee in seuerall townshipes of this Juris-

[PART II.]

diction for want of an able godly teaching minnestrey and the great prejudice to the soules of many like to ensue; and being desirouse according to our dewtyes that such defects should not bee for want of dew Incuragement to such as either are or shalbee employed in soe good a worke of the Lord for his honer and the good \*of soules and in consideration that inasmuch as the seuerall townshipes graunted by the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment was; that such a Companie might bee receiued as should maintaine the publicke worship of God there; doe therefore Judge that the whole both Church and towne are mutually engaged to support the same and doe therefore order and agree that in whatsoever township there is or shalbee an able godly Teaching minnestrey which is approued by this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that then foure men bee chosen by the Inhabitants or in case of their neglect chosen by any three or more of the majestrates to make an equall and Just proportion vpon the estates of the Inhabitants according to their abillities to make vp such convenient maintainance for his comfortable attendance on his worke as shalbee agreed vpon by the Church in each Township where any is with the concurrence of the rest of the Inhabitants if it may bee had or by the majestrates aforesaid incase of their aparent neglect and that destresse accordingly as in other Just cases bee made vpon such as refuse to pay such their proportions which is in Justice due but; in case there bee any other way wherby any township doe or shall agree that may effect the end aforesaid this law not to bee binding to them; to bee explained thusse that onely such pson or psons as refuse to beare their pte with the rest of the Church or towne in the due maintainance and support of the minnestrey this law to bee in force onely to them but not vnto others that doe their duty;

\*31

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall villify by opprobriouse tearmes or speeches any Church or minnestrey or ordinance being therof lawfully convicted shall forfeit and pay to the vse of the Collonie ten shillings for euery default;

i650.

It is enacted by the Court That whatsoever pson or psons shall neglect the frequenting the publicke worship of God that is according to God in the places where they liue or doe assemble themselues vpon any pretence whatsoever in any way contrary to God and the allowance of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment tending to the Subversion of Religion and Churches or palpable prophanation of Gods holy ordinances being duly convicted viz: euery one that is a master or dame of a family or any other pson att their owne disposinge to pay ten shillings for euery such default;

i651.

Repealed.

[PART II.]

1651.

Repealed.

It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons in any lazey slothfull or prophane way doth Neglect to come to the publicke worship of God shall forfeit for euery such default ten shillings or bee publickly whipt ;

1650.

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever shall prophane the Lords day by doeing any servill worke or any such like abuses shall forfeit for euery such default ten shillings or bee publickly whipt ;

1658.

Wheras complaint is made of great abuses in sundry places of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of prophaning the Lords day by trauellers both horse and foot by bearing of burdens carrying of packes & vpon the Lords day to the great offence of the Godly welafected amongst vs It is therefore enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that if any pson or psons shalbee found transgressing in any of the precinctes of any towneship within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment hee or they shalbee forthwith apprehended by the Cunstable of such a towne and fined twenty shillings to the Collonies vse or else sit in the stockes foure houres except they can giue a sufficient reason for their soe doeing and they that Transgresse in any of the abovesaid pticulares shall onely bee apprehended on the Lords day and on the 2<sup>cond</sup> day following shall either pay their fine or sitt in the stockes as aforsaid ;

\*32

1657.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that hensforth noe publicke meetings bee sett vp within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment but such as the Court shall approue of ;

1657.

Wheras there hath seuerall psons come into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment comonly called Quakers whose doctrine and practises manifestly tends to the Subversion of the fundamentalls of Christian Religion Church order and the Ciuell peace of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment as appeers by the Testimonies giuen in sundry depositions and otherwise ; It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that noe Quaker or pson comonly soe called bee entertained by any pson or psons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vnder the penaltie of fve pounds for euery such default or bee whipt ; and in case any one shall entertaine any such pson Ignorantly if hee shall Testify on his oath that hee knew not them to bee such hee shalbee freed of the aforsaid penaltie provided hee vpon his first decerning them to bee such doe descouer them to the Constable or his deputie ;

It is alsoe enacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof that if any Rantor or Quaker or pson comonly soe called shall come into any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and by any pson or psons bee knowne or Suspected to

bee such the p̄son soe knowing or Suspecting him shall forth with acquaint the Cunstable or his deputie of them on paine of Presentment and soe lyable to censure in court whoe forthwith on such notice of them or any other Intelligence hee shall haue of them ; shall dillegently endeauor to apprehend him or them and bring them before some one of the majestrates whoe shall cause him or them to bee comitted to Goale there to be kept Close prisoners with such victualls onely as the Court aloweth vntill hee or they shall defray the charge both of their Imprisonment and their Transportation away ; Together with an Ingagement to returne into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment noe more or else to be continewd in close durance till further order from the Court ; And forasmuch as the meetings of such p̄sons whether Strangers or others proueth disturbing to the peace of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That henceforth noe such meetings bee assembled or kept by any p̄son in any place within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vnder the penaltie of forty shillings a time for euery speaker and ten shillings a time for euery hearer that are heads of families and forty shillings a time for the owner of the place that p̄mits them soe to meet together ; ~~and if they meet together att their silent meetings see called then euery p̄son soe meeting together shall pay ten shillings a time and the owner of the place shall pay forty shillings a time.~~

This law about the Quakers was repealed the 13 of June 1660.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof

1658.

That noe Quaker Rantor or any such corupt p̄son shalbee admitted to bee a freeman of this Corporation.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all such as are opposers of the good and whosome lawes of this Collonie or manifest opposers of the true worship of God or such as refuse to doe the Countrey seruice being called therevnto shall not bee admitted freemen of this Corporation ; being duely convicted of all or any of these.

1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any p̄son or p̄sons that are or shalbee freemen of this Corporation that are Quakers or such as are manifest Incurragers of them and soe Judged by the Court or such as shall contemptuously speake of the Court or of the lawes therof and such as are Judged by the Court grosly scandalouse as lyers drunkards Swearers &c shall lose their freedome of this Corporation.

1658.

It is enacted by the Court that all such as refuse to take the oath of fidelitie as quakers or such as are manifest encorragers of them shall haue noe voat in choise of publicke officers in the place wher they dwell or shalbee employed in any place of trust while they continew such.

1658.

[PART II.]

\*33

1653.

\*The order of Court Concerning  
the Councill of Warr.

In Regard of the many Appeerances of danger towards the Countrey by Enimies and the great nessesitie of Councell and advise in which respect the Court thought meet to make choise of a Councell of warr consisting of eleuen psons whose names are elsewhere extant in the Records of the court which said eleuen or any fue of them being orderly called together their acte to bee accounted in force and they to bee continewed in their places vntill others bee elected to bee orderly called together is ment being Sumoned by the p<sup>r</sup>esident or his deputie or in case of their absence any two majestrates of the Councell of warr.

By orderly  
called together  
is ment by the  
Gou<sup>r</sup> or in his  
absence the  
Major  
this aded June  
7<sup>th</sup> 1659.

That the Councell of warr shall haue power to issue out warrants in his Ma<sup>ty</sup>es highnes name to presse such a number of men & horses in euery towne as by proportion the said towne is to sett forth and alsoe to Issue forth warrants to the said townes for armes and prouision and all thinges Nessesary for them and what charges shall arise to bee leuied on each towne proportionably as other publick rates and to giue Comission to any Cheife officer vnder their Charge either in time of peace or warr.

1658.

The proceeding of the Councell of Warr in the  
Constituteing and Comissionating of a major.

The Councell of Warr being assembled doe heerby Constitute Impower and Comissionate you our Trusty and welbeloued ffrind I W to bee as Cheife Officer ouer the milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction bearing the title of A Major and to Act therein as is prouided by order of Court Anexed to your office according to such Instructions as you haue or shall from time to time receiue from the Councell of Warr in psuance wherof all Captaines Inferior officers and souldiers are heerby required to bee in Reddy Subjection to you during your continuance in the said Office which shalbee vntill the Councell of Warr shall see Cause otherwise to order ;

Giuen vnder our hand and Seale

T P President with the

Consent of the Rest of the Councell of Warr.

1658.

## \*Instructions for the Major.

I  
\*34

You shall take into your Comaund the seuerall milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction both horse and foot and take care that they bee orderly trained vp in the vse of Armes.



- You shall take care that Armes be fix and seruicable. 2
- You shall Carfully Appoint such watches and Gaürds as may bee Need-  
full for the honer and safety of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment. 3
- You shall yearly Appoint Generall Musters or meetings of such Com-  
panies as can with any conveniency meet together and with the aduise of  
youer Councell order the same ; 4
- Incase of any Suddaine and vnexpected approach of an enimie or Insur-  
ruction with in ourselues you shall Indeanor to put these Companies into such  
a Posture of defence as youer selfe and such of youer Councell of Warr shall  
giue you Instructions therabouts ; 5
- You shalbee reddy att all times to obserue and execute such further  
Instructions either respecting discipline or reall service as shall from time to  
time by the Councell of Warr bee directed vnto you. 6
- You shall on all Occations aduise with such as the Councell of Warr shall  
appoint to bee of youer Councell ; and they haue for the p<sup>r</sup>sent chosen these  
heerafter Nominated &c. 7
- see booke of orders and passages of the court.
- \*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase any  
Cheife milletary officer bee wanting in any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment such  
Township shall p<sup>r</sup>sent two or three p<sup>r</sup>sons of the fittest they haue for that  
place to the Court and such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons as shalbee approued of by y<sup>e</sup> Court  
shalbee established in such place and office and such cheife officer to chose  
theire vnder officers with the Concent of the body ;
- I  
\*35  
i646.
- It is enacted by the Court that as the Captaine Leiftenant and Ensigne  
are established into their places by the Authoritie and approba<sup>o</sup>n of the  
Court soe such Captaine leiftenant or Ensigne shall not lay downe their  
places but by the consent and approba<sup>o</sup>n of the Court vpon the penaltie of  
fue pound for euery Captaine fifty shillings for euery Leiftenant and fifty  
shillings for euery Ensigne soe laying downe his place without the leane and  
likeing of the Court and if any Capt: Leift: or Ensigne shall neglect to traine  
their men on the daies appointed or shalbee neglegent in his or their places  
vpon proffe shalbee fined ten shilling for euey such default.
- 2  
i646.
- It is enacted by the Court that the Cheife milletary Comaunders in euery  
towne shall haue power to call forth men to exersice them in their armes and  
to appoint daies of training and the sergeants to giue warning therof and to  
bee done as often as the Court hath appointed ;
- 3  
i642.
- It is enacted by the Court that in time of feare and danger and sudden  
assault of an enimie the milletary Comaunder in euery towne shall haue
- 4  
i642.

[PART II.]

power to call the souldiers of that towne together and put them in a posture of warr ; whose Comaunds eury souldier shall obey for the defence of the township and that they follow the directions of the milletary Comaunder of that towne in keeping watch and ward provided that the ordinary watch bee sett and appointed with the majestrates approbation of that towne if there bee any ;

5  
1642.

It is enacted by the Court that the Cheife milletary officers in eury towne shall sett a fine vpon such as shall absent themselues on daies of training if there bee not sufficient reason giuen for their absence provided the fine bee with the Concent of the Companie or the major pte therof ; and such fines to bee gathered by the Clarke of that companie and to bee for the benefit of the same ;

6  
1645.

It is enacted by the Court that the milletary officers in eury towne shall see that the Armes of that towne bee fix and compleat for length and boar and p<sup>r</sup>sent such as are defectiue

7  
1640.  
\*36

\*It is enacted by the Court that all the milletary Companies within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee trained att least six times in the yeare

8  
1644.

The fines of such as are defectiue in their Armes	s	d
That are wholly defectiue	10	00
That want a peece	06	00
That want a sword	02	06
That want powder	05	00
That want bulletts	02	00
That want match	01	00

The Guns or peeces allowed for seruice are these viz: musketts fierlockes and matchcockes soe that they haue 4 fathome of match att all times for eury matchcocke ; Calliuers Carbines and fowling peeces soe that they bee not aboue 4 foot and an halfe long and not vnder bastard muskett or Calliuer bore ;

See orders and passages of the court Ann<sup>o</sup> 1653.

Enacted that eury towne that shalbee defectiue in the want of a drum att any time for the space of two monthes shall forfeit the sume of forty shillings to the Collonies vse that shalbe defectiue in Coullers the space of six monthes four pounds.

9  
1633.

It is enacted by the Court that all and eury pson within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee Subject to such milletary orders for training and exercise of Armes as hath bine agreed on and enacted by the Court.

It is enacted by the Court that every township in this Government each township shall provide two sufficient fierlocke peeces two swords and two powches for every thirty men they have in their towne and soe proportionable for their number they are to sett forth bee they greater or lesser which shalbee redy att all times for service vpon any occation vpon such penaltie for every delinquent as the Court shall Judge meet according to the nature of the offence.

I O  
i646.

It is enacted by the Court that every township in this Government shall provide a barrell of powder and lead or bulletts answerable to bee kept by some trusty man or men in every towne that it may bee redy for defence in time of need and danger.

I I  
i641.

It is enacted by the Court that every pson both for himselfe and every man servant that hee keepeth able to bear armes have a peece powder and shott viz: a sufficient muskett or other servicable peece for warr with bandaleers sword and other appurtenances and that for himselfe and every such pson vnder him hee bee att all times furnished with one pound of powder and four pound of bulletts with four fathom of match for every match cocke muskett ;

I 2  
i636.

That every Towne provide halberts for their serjeants of their milletary Companie ; see booke of orders and passages of the court i653.

That a considerable Companie of halfe pikes bee provided in every towne att the charge of the township viz: where 80 men are able to beare armes there twenty to bee provided and so proportionable to their number bee they greater or lesser ; see booke of orders and passages of the Court ann<sup>o</sup> 1653.

\* The oath of A Clarke of A milletary Companie.

\*37

You shall faithfully serue in the office of a Clarke of the Milletary Companie of £3 for this p'sent yeare during which time you shall dillegently attend such sett times of training as your officers shall appoint you shall keep an exact list of the Names of your whole Companie and take notice of all such defects as shall arise by the breach of any wholsome order or orders made by the said Companie and gather in all such fines as belonge therunto and giue a Just account therof to the Companie or such as they shall appoint ; Soe healp you God £3.

i654.

Enacted that such as are chosen Clarke of any milletary Companie shalbee sworne and any that shall refuse to serue as Clarke for one yeare

[PART II.] (being chosen) shalbee fined twenty shillings ; and hee that is next chosen and serues to haue the said sume ; see booke of orders and passages of the Court 1653.

1644. Repealed. It is enacted by the Court that as the watches are sett by order soe they shalbee continewed vntill there bee order to lay them downe and that the watch shalbee sett halfe an houre before the sun bee sett and to continew vntill halfe an houre after the sun is risen except they ward alsoe in the day time and then to continew vntill the same time they began that a fresh watch come to relieue them ; and that for euery man that shall neither come himsele nor prouide a sufficient watchman in his rome or lay downe the watch without due order shall pay two shillings and six pence for euery night to the Collonies vse and foure pence an houre for euery houre hee comes after the watch is sett

1636. It is enacted by the Court that if any shall shoot off a peece att any fowle or otherwise in the night time betwixt day light and day light shall forfeit twenty shillings for euery shott to bee paied to the Tresurer for the vse of the Collonie except hee shoot att a wolfe or for the finding of some one lost.

1636. It is enacted by the Court that three peeces shot of distinctly one after another shalbee an Alarum and two peeces to giue warning of an house on fier ;

1636. 1644. It is enacted by the Court that incase there shalbee need of horses vpon speciall occation for the Countreyes seruice It shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any three Assistants to presse such and soe many as they shall see reason to Employ provided they take order that the owners bee payed for them ; but if any such horse or horses miscarry in the seruice the prise of such horse or mare to bee made good to the owner by the Countrey and the horse to bee prised att his going forth.

\*38 1636. \*It is enacted by the Court that if any man shalbee sent forth as a souldier and shall returpe maimed hee shalbee majntained competently by the Collonie during his life.

1655. It is enacted by the Court that all such Scotese and Irishmen as are in any Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall bear Armes and traine as others except such as are seruants from month to month ;

1658. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that a forth pte of each milletary Companie in this Jurisdiction shall euery Lords day carry their armes to the publicke meeting in the Township where they dwell viz: some serviceable peece and sword and three charges of powder and bulletts on paine of the forfeiture of 2 shillings and six pence for each daies neglect ;

and this to bee obserued from the first of March to the last of Nouember yearly; these defects to bee gathered by the milletary Clarke and the Cunstable to the vse of the Companie It is further enacted by the Court that the cheife milletary Comaunder in each towne shall take care that a list bee drawne and sett vp in the meeting house by which euery man may know to what Squadron hee belonges and when hee is to carry armes and alsoe to appoint some ouer euery Squadron to take notice and giue an account of the seuerall defects on the penaltie of the forfeiture of fise pounds to the Countreys vse for such neglect; and that this order take place and begine from the seauenteenth of this Instant October i658 except men bee sicke or abroad and haue none att hom to carry their armes.

This is repealed June the 8, 1661.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that a Troop of horse well appointed with furniture viz: a Saddle and a case of petternells for euery horse shalbee raised out of the seuerall Townshippes to bee redy for seruice when required and maintained for that purpose to bee raised as followeth

viz: Plymouth -	-	-	3	Yarmouth	-	3
Duxburrow	-	-	3	Barnstable	-	3
Scittuate	-	-	4	Marshfeild	-	3
Sandwich	-	-	3	Rehoboth	-	4
Taunton	-	-	3	Eastham	-	3
				Bridgwater	-	1

In all thirty and three and that all such shalbee freed from foot seruice and from watching & warding and their horses rate free; and to bee redy by June next ensueing the date heerof on the penaltie of the forfeiture of ten pounds for euery towne that shall neglect;

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that all Smithes within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment bee compelled to amend and repaire all defectiue Armes brought vnto them speedily and to bee paid in wheat or butter and the Smithes refusing to answere it att their prill;

\*The oath to bee Adminnestred to a Towne Clarke is as followeth. \*43

You shall faithfully serue in the office of a towne Clarke in the towne of for this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare and soe longe as by mutuall consent the towne and you shall agree; during which time you shall carfully and faithfully keep all such Records as you shalbee Intrusted withall and shall record all towne actes and orders and shall enter all towne graunts and Conveyances You shall record all beirthes mariages and burialls that shalbee brought vnto you within your towne and shall publish all Contracts of mariages you shalbee

[PART II.] required to doe according to order of Court bearing date the twentieth day of October 1646 Soe healp you God who is the God of truth and punisher of falshood ;

1638. Wheras diuers psons vnfit for marriage both in regard of their younge yeares and alsoe in regard of their weake estate some practicing the Invegleing of mens daughters and maides vnder gaurdians contrary to their parents and gaurdians liking ; and of maide seruants without leaue and likeing of their masters ; It is therefore enacted by the Court that if any shall make any motion of marriage to any mans daughter or maide not haueing first obtained leaue and concent of the parents or masters soe to doe shalbee punished by fine soe it exceed not fve pounds or corporall punishment or both att the descretion of the bench and according to the nature of the offence ;

1638. It is enacted by the Court that if a motion of marriage bee duely made to the master and through any senestrey end or Couetous desire hee will not concent therunto ; then the cause to bee made knowne vnto the majestrates and they to sett downe such order therein as vpon examination of the case shall appeer to bee most equall on both ptes ;

1636. It is enacted by the Court that noe seruant coming out of his time or other single pson bee suffered to keep house or bee for him or them selues till such time as hee or they bee competently provided for of Armes and amunition according to the order of the Collonies and that if any such bee yett wanting they bee provided as aforsaid or else provide themselves such masters as may provide for them and that to bee done forthwith on due warning ;

1636. It is enacted by the Court that none bee allowed to bee housekeepers or build any Cottages or dwelling houses till such time as they bee allowed by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Councell of assistants or some one or more of them ; and that this order bee strictly obserued ;

1639. \*It is enacted by the Court that noe seruant coming out of England or  
\*44 elsewhere and is to serue a master for some time bee admitted his freedome or bee for himselfe vntill he haue serued out his time either with his master or some other although hee shall buy out his time except hee haue bine a house keeper or master of a family or meet or fitt to bee soe ;

1638. It is enacted by the Court that if any master of a boate shall bring any passengers into any plantation within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that may bee chargable or burthensome to the plantation and not haue leaue soe to doe either from the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or Comittees of the place ; shall keep them whiles they stay and recarry them and their goods to the place from whence they came ;

It is enacted by the Court that all such as reside within this Government that are att their owne despose and haue not taken the oath of fidelitie shall ~~haue notice giuen them by the Deputies of the councill to wch they are to~~ [PART II.]  
June 1657. repaire vnto some one of the majestrates of this Jurisdiction to take the said oath betwixt the date heerof and the Court to bee holden att Plymouth the first Tusday in October 1657 and incase after the time prefixed any shall refuse to take the said oath for the space of six monthes after, shall either depart the Government or pay a fine of five pounds;

fforasmuch as it was ordered att June Court last that all such as were housekeepars or att their owne dispose that were not freemen and had not taken the oath of fidelitie to this Government should take the said oath by that time then prefixed or bee fined to the Collonies vse the sume of five pounds and wheras diners psons notwithstanding all patience and long forbearance refuse to take the said oath and yett make their residence amongst vs It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that euery such pson or psons shall euery election Court bee Sumoned to make their appeerance theratt during the time of their aboad in this Government and if any such pson or psons shall then refuse to take the said oath hee shall bee fined the sume of five pounds to the Collonies vse; March 1657.  
  
Repealed this  
8<sup>th</sup> of June  
1661.

The oath of any residing in this Government.

You shall bee truly loyall to ~~the State and Government of England as it~~ 1636.  
our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord King Charles his heires and Successors.  
~~now atts~~ and Wheras you make choise att p<sup>r</sup>sent to reside within the Government of New Plymouth you shall not doe or cause to bee done any Acte or Actes directly or Indirectly by land or water that shall or may tend to the destruction or ouerthrow of the whole or any the seuerall plantations or Townshippes within the said Government that are or shalbee orderly erected and established but shall contrarywise hinder oppose and discouer such Intents and purposes as tend therunto to the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the time being or some one of the Assistants with all convenient speed; \*You shall alsoe submitt vnto and obey such good and wholsome lawes ordinances and officers as are or shalbee established within the limitts therof Soe healp you God whoe is the God of truth and the punisher of falshood; \*45

It is enacted by the Court That noe pson or psons heerafter shalbee Admitted to liue and Inhabite within the Government of New Plymouth without the leaue and liking of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the Assistants att least : 1636.

[PART II.]

i639.

It is enacted by the Court That all the townships within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue libertie to meet together and to make such towne orders as shalbee needfull and requisite for the hearing of Cattle and doing such other thinges as shalbee needfull for the maintainance of good Naighborhood and to sett penalties vpon delinquents prouided that their orders bee not repungnant nor Infring any publick actes and that the fines and penalties shalbee desposed of afterwards to their pticulare townes ;

i639.

Wheras the townships within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment haue formerly had libertie to meet together and make some towne orders which are thought to bee defectiue for that they conceiued they had not power to make assessments rates and taxes for raising such nessesarie expences as shalbee disbursed about the generall occations of the townes concerning the Comonwealth It is enacted by the Court that euery township shall haue libertie to meet together and make leuies rates and taxes for their townes charges and to destraine such as shall refuse to pay the same vpon warrant from the Court or Gou<sup>r</sup> or any Assistant ;

i642.

It is enacted by the Court that if heerafter any Inhabitant or Inhabitants of any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall receiue or bring in any pson or psons as is apparently likely to bee chargable to the townships against whom Just exception is made att the time of his coming or within a month after without the consent and assent of the townesmen in a lawfull generall towne meeting the ptie or pties that soe receiued or brought them shall discharge the towne of them ;

i642.

It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons coming out of England or elsewhere bring any pson or psons whoe by reason of Impotency disease or otherwise is apparently likely to bee chargable to the place where hee shall come to Inhabite ; the pson or psons soe bringing in any such pson or psons shall discharge the township of them during the time of the deseaseds abode there ; but incase any Inhabitant within this Collonie shall bring ouer from England or elsewhere or procure to bee sent to them any servant or servants which by Gods prouidence shall fall diseased lame or Impotent by the way or after they come heer they shalbee maintained and prouided for by their said masters during the time of their seruice and couenants although their said masters release them out of their said seruice and afterwards to bee releiued by the towneship where hee is ;

\*46

i642.

\*It is enacted by the Court that if any Children or elder psons shalbee sent or come from one towne to another to bee Nursed Scooled or otherwise educated or to a Phisition or Chirurgion to bee cured of any disease or wound &c. if they come to stand in need of releife they shalbee releiued and



maintained by the townships whence they came or were sent from and not by that township where they are soe Nursed educated or att cure ; and incase they come or bee sent from any place out of this Collonie then if the Nurse educater or Phisition or Chirurgeon take not sufficient Securitie of the psons to bee nursed educated or cured to discharge the township of and from all cost or charge which shall or may come and befall the said Townshipe in which hee or they is soe to bee Nursed educated or cured then they the said Nurse educater or Phisition or Chirurgeon as neglecteth the same shall discharge the said Township of them themselues ;

[PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that euery pson that liueth and is quietly settled in any township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and not excepted against within the Compase of three monthes after his coming ; in this case shalbee reputed an Inhabitant of this place ;

i642.

Wheras It was enacted as abouesaid that a pson quietly settled in any towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment w<sup>ch</sup> the space of three monthes should bee reputed an Inhabitant there ; It is <sup>enacted</sup> that that acte shalbee expounded and construed onely to haue relation to poor psons ; and it is alsoe prouided that that acte shall not any waies enable any pson to bee reputed an Inhabitant in any township within this Gouer<sup>ment</sup> that shall or doth refuse to take the oath of fidelitie w<sup>ch</sup> although hee hath bine resident there for some time ;

i644.

It is enacted by the Court that those that haue releife from the townes where they liue and haue children and doe not Employ them that then it shalbee lawfull for the Township to take order that those Children bee put to worke in fiting Employment according to their strength and abilletie or placed out by the townes.

i641.

Wheras it is obserued that diuers psons in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment are not able to prouide Competent and convenient food and raiment for their Children wherby it is that poor children are exposed vnto great want and extremitie ;

i658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that two or three men shalbee chosen in euery township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that all such as are not able to prouide nessesary and convenient food and clothing for their Children and will not dispose of them themselues soe as they may bee better prouided for ; such said children shalbee desposed of by the said men soe appointed as they shall see meet soe as they may bee comfortably prouided for in the p<sup>r</sup>mises and the seuerall townes shall returne the names of such men as shalbee deputed and chosen vnto the Court ;

\*It is enacted by the court that euery township within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall make competent prouision for the maintainance of their poor according

\*47

i642

[PART II.] as they shall find most convenient and suitable for themselves by an order and Generall agreement in a publicke towne meeting ;

1639. It is enacted by the Court that the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants shall appoint some to sett forth the bounds of townshipes as formerly they haue done ;

It is enacted by the Court that if an highway bee wanting in any township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vpon due complaint that then the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of the Assistants Impanell a Jury and vpon oath charge them to lay out such waies both for horse and foot as in Consience they shall find most beneficiall for the Comonwealth and as little prejudiciall as may bee to the pticulares and that all old pathes shalbee still allowed except other prouision bee orderly made ; and that where there are allowed foot pathes ouer any mans ground which is fenced vp ; the owners of such fences shall make convenient stiles or Gates ;

1644.  
and  
1649. It is enacted by the Court That the Surveyors of the highwaies shall giue three daies warning to the teames and other pticulare p<sup>o</sup>ns when they are to amend the highwaies as often as need shall require prouided they doe not warne one teame or one p<sup>o</sup>n twice before they haue gon ouer all y<sup>e</sup> teames and p<sup>o</sup>ns in their township and if any bee orderly warned as aforesaid and shall neglect hee shalbee fined three shillings a day and for euery teame soe warned that shall neglect shalbee fined eight shillings a day and that the Suruayors of such townes where such neglect is shall returne their Names to the next majestrate that by warrant the said fines may bee required by the Cunstable of the towne for the townes vse ; and euery Surveyor that shall neglect his duty in repairing the highwaies shall forfeit fve pounds to the Collonies vse ; and if it soe fall out that in the yeare all the teames and p<sup>o</sup>ns haue not bine warned to the worke aforesaid that they bee all warned ouer before they begine againe ; and that the new Surveyors shall begin where the old ends ; and that incase a teame or man bee wanting that the Surveyors shall hier a teame or man and to bee paied out of the fine of him that is absent ;

1633. It is enacted by the Court that the Wills and Testaments of such as die bee proued orderly before the Gou<sup>r</sup> and assistants the next Court after the ptie is deceased prouided the Court bee not within a month after the death of the Testator ; and that a full Inventory duely vallued bee p<sup>r</sup>esented with the same before letters of Administration bee gra<sup>n</sup>ted to any ; of all the goods and Chattles of the said p<sup>o</sup>ns ; alsoe in incase any man die without Will then his goods bee by his wife or others nearest to him Inventoried and duely vallued and p<sup>r</sup>esented to the Gou<sup>r</sup>nor and assistants att the time formentioned ; and if it bee a single p<sup>o</sup>n without kinred heer resident that then the Gou<sup>r</sup> appoint some to take a Just Inventory of the same vpon oath to bee true and Just as in other the cases before mencioned ;

\*It is enacted by the Court that if any man being sicke and weake and otherwise but of disposing memory to declare his mind and will concerning the disposing or bequeathing of his lands or goods before two or more of the freeholders of the place where hee liues; It shalbee vpon their oathes recorded and remaine feirm according to such devise and bequest.

\*48  
1645.

It is enacted by the Court that none doe keep Victualling houses or Ordinarys or draw wine but such as are allowed by the Generall Court and that if any Victualler or ordinary keeper doe either drink drunke himselfe or suffer any pson to bee drunken in his house they shall pay five shillings apeece; and if the Victualler or ordinary keeper doe suffer any townsmen to stay drinking in his house aboue an houre att one time the victualler or ordinary keeper shall pay for euery such default twelue pence and the pson soe staying aboue the said houre three shillings and foure pence; and by drunkenes is vnderstood a pson that lispes or faulters in his spech by reason of ouermuch drinke or that staggers in his goeing or that vomitts by reason of excessiue drinking or cannot follow his calling the pson or psons that shalbee found guilty in these or any of them shall for the first default pay five shillings and for the 2<sup>conda</sup> default ten shillings to the Collonies vse and for the third time to bee bound to the good behavior and if hee or they can not or will not pay the fines then to bee sett in the Stockes; and soe for the fourth time to bee fined five pounds or bee whipt and soe from time to time as often as they shall soe Transgresse;

1646.

It is enacted by the Court that none shall bee suffered to retaile wine stronge waters or beer either within doores or without except in Inns or Victualling houses allowed and that noe beer bee sould in any such place to exceed in prise two pence the Winchester quart;

1636.

It is enacted by the Court that the Children and servants of such as dwell neare any Victualling house bee not entertained or suffered by the master of the said house there to drinke and spend their time but if any such can bee proued it bee esteemed a misdemenor punishable in the said Victualler and to bee Inquired into;

1636.

fforasmuch as great Inconveniencies haue bine occasioned by young men and other labourers that haue dieted in Inns and Ale houses especially whoe haue had other houses to repaire vnto in the same towne It is therefore enacted by the Court that none shall diett in Inns and Alehouses nor haunt them which are in the townes they liue in nor make them the ordinary place of their abode;

1638.

\*49           \*It is enacted by the Court

1654.           That incase of weaknes or sicknes of any pson or psons in any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that such as are deputed to draw and sell wine or strong waters haue none It shalbee lawfull for any one that hath any such that they may sell it for such Intents and purposes as to releiue the weake and sicke notwithstanding any former order to the contrary prouided it bee with the likeing and approbation of the majestrate if theire bee any in that towne and incase there bee none that then it bee with the concent of the Cunstable of the Towne ;

1633.           It is enacted by the Court that fishing fowling and hunting bee free prouided if any damage comes to any pticulare by the procecution of such exercise restitutions bee made or the case actionable but if any man desire to Improue a place and stocke it with fish of any kind for his private vse It shalbee lawfull for the court to make any such graunt and forbid all others to make vse of it ;

1637.           It is enacted by the Court that six score fishes shalbee accounted to the hundred of all sorts of fishes ;

1652.           It is enacted by the Court that wheras the publicke charges of the Countrey are Increased and that by Gods prouidence many whales and other fishes are cast on shore in many ptes of this Jurisdiction out of which the court sees reason to require some pte of the oyle made of them this court now ordereth that of euery whale either cast on shore or bought of any Indian or Indians or taken on drift att sea and brought to shore in any pte of this Jurisdiction there shalbee one barrell of marchantable oyle paied to the publicke Treasury to the Collonies vse to bee raised and paied as followeth

This otherwise  
ordered.

viz: euery towne shall pay one barrell of marchantable oyle for euery drift whale cast or brought on shore and seized on within the liberties and precincts of theire seuerall townships or traded or bought of the Indians within theire townships and the pson or psons as first seize or cutt any whale or shall purchase or trade any such whales of the Indians that shalbee soe cast on shore in any place within this Jurisdiction out of the bounds of euery pticulare township shall pay one full barrell of marchantable oyle for euery such whale which shalbee deliuered att Boston to such as the treasurer shall appoint to receiue it from yeare to yeare and the freight therof shalbee fully discharged by those that shall deliuer it and a receipt taken from such as to whom it is deliuered shalbee a discharge to those that shall deliuer it ; and the pson or psons as first seizeth any whale or shall purchase or trade any

such whales of the Indians that shalbee soe cast on shore in any place within this Jurisdiction out of the bounds of any pticulare township hee or they are heerby Authorised to cause all such psons as cutt with him or them to pay theire equall proportion to him according to what they cutt towards the said barrell of oyle and alsoe that it shall not bee lawfull for any pson or psons of any townshipp to cut for themselues or trad with the Indians for any blubber or oyle cast vp or cut within the precinctes of another township provided that if any man take a drift whale of att sea and bring or tow it to the shore it shalbee accounted his owne goods ; if within an harbour or mile of the shore they are to bee reputed the townshipes where they are taken ;

[PART II.]

\*It is enacted by the Court

\*50

That one Comon Standard bee vsed by all for waights and measures and that according to Winchester which is the Standard of England

1636.

It is enacted by the Court

1652.

That every Towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue a Standard for measures of Corn made by those that are provided att Plymouth by a former order of Court ; for that end to try and Seale their measures by ; which are to bee vniforme amongst them and to bee made round ; and these to bee provided by the last of Nouember 1658 and to bee kept by the Seallers of euery towne for the townes vse ;

It is enacted by the Court

1652.

That in euery towne within this Jurisdiction there bee one appointed to try and seale measures and to haue for euery measure four pence which shalbee tryed and sealed by him ; and onely round measures to bee allowed to buy and sell by ; and that the seuerall townes shall choose a fitt pson for each towne for sealler and p<sup>r</sup>sent him to a majestrate to bee Sworne ;

It is enacted by the Court that none shall sell by vnsealed waights and measures which are not waight and measure by the Standard and that if any shall soe doe they shall loose such waights and measures and make restitution to the pties soe wronged by such waight and measure and shall pay to the Collonies vse for euery such default of falce waight and measure for the first time six shillings for the 2<sup>cond</sup> time thirteen shillings and foure pence and for the third time twenty shillings and such waights and measures to bee burnt and that a pile of waights according to Winchester bee procured to bee standard and that the sealler shall haue for sealing a peny for euery waight vnder a quarter of a pound ; and for all aboue a quarter of a pound to six pound 2 pence a peece ; and for all aboue six to an hundred waight four pence ;

1645.

[PART II.]  
 1638.

It is enacted by the Court that noe miller within this Jurisdiction shall take aboute the sixteenth pte of a bushell for grinding such Corn as is brought vnto him to bee ground ; and that all Millers within this Jurisdiction shall either grind theire Corn sufficiently that is brought vnto them for that end or else that vpon complaint to the Court therof and the thinge proued the Miller shall pay for euery such default six pence for euery bushell to the pty Greiued and six pence to the Treasurer to the vse of the Collonie

1645.

It is enacted by Court that euery Miller within this Jurisdiction shall haue two toule dishes viz: a quart and a pottle but to bee soe made that vpheaped they will hold noe more then a quart and a pottle by the measure allowed and those to bee sealed by the last of Nouember 1658 or else to pay ten shillings for euery month soe longe as the said miller keepeth them vnsealed after and that all Millers shall prouide Scales and waights to way mens Corn as occasion shall require

\*51  
 1652.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authorite therof that all such caske as are or shalbee made by any Cooper within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue the two first letters of his Name sett on euery such caske hee makes ; by a burnt marke vpon penaltie of the lose of his Caske the one halfe to the Countrey the other halfe to the enformer ; and this order to bee in force forthwith.

1652.

It is enacted by the Court that all Coopers within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment are to make all theire Caske according to London Gage vpon the like penaltie ;

1652.

It is enacted by the Court that euery towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall choose a fitt pson for serching of Caske and packing of fish and meat and to p<sup>r</sup>sent them to a majestrate to bee Sworne.

1652.

It is enacted by the Court

That such ffences as are Judged sufficient against oxen and Cowes shalbee allowed sufficient against horses and mares ; and if any horse beast breake into any Corn or grasse ouer such sufficient fence ; the owners of such horses shall pay the damages proued as if they were Impounded.

1633.

It is enacted by the Court that euery Cunstablericke haue a sufficient pound to Impound Cattle that shall Transgresse any such orders as are or shalbee made ;

1655.

It is enacted by the Court that incase any cattle horses or hoggs shall treaspas vpon any and bee by them Impounded and after they are Impounded they remaine foure daies after notice giuen to the oweners and bee neither repleued nor agreed for ; It shalbee lawfull for them as Impound them to

make publicke sale of them after publicke notice giuen to the Inhabitants of the towne of their Intention soe to doe; and after damages Satisfied the remainder to bee returned to the owners. [PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court

1633.

That whatsoever damage comes to any by Cowes goates mares sheep or hoggs by breaking into mens sufficient Inclosures It shalbee lawfull for the psons soe damnified to Impound them; and two sufficient men to view the damage which shall accordingly bee giuen and paid;

It is enacted by the Court that noe man shall heard his owne Cattle or other mens to the pjudice of any; att or neare his or their house vpon their land; but vpon due notice and warning shall reforme it or the case bee actionable; 1633.

It is enacted by the Court that if any Indian shall kill a woulfe in any township of this Jurisdiction hee shalbee paid a Coate of Trading Cloth and if any English shall kill a woulfe hee shalbee paid fifteen shillings to bee paid by the Countrey and defrayed by the Treasurer 1658.

This is otherwise ordered  
June 1661

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof

\*52

1. That euery Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue some publike brand marke for their horses to destinguish them from other townes and alsoe some fitt pson appointed to take notice of mens publicke markes for horses and register them in a booke with their day and yeare which may bee the towne Clarke and the said pson to haue four pence a peece for euery horse kind hee regeste<sup>th</sup> 1658.

2. That all psons that are resident in any towneship and haue horses goeing there giue in vnto the said pson from time to time their seuerall markes of their horses with their age that soe they may record them;

3. That if any horse kind being about two yeares old and noe marke wherby the owner of them may bee clearly knowne that the said pson soe deputed takeing notice of any such signify the same to the marshall the next generall Court that soe hee may bee three times cryed with his age and couller and that if within six monthes afterwards any vpon due euidence can owne them paying all nessesarie charges hee may haue him; but if in six monthes time none can owne him that then the said horse kind bee looked att as belonging to the Countrey and the Treasurer to take order to despose of him for the Countreyes vse as the Countreyes stocke defraying all nessesarie charges.

4. That noe pson or psons marke any horse kind younge or old but before sufficient witness that none bee wronged;

[PART II.]

5. That noe pson or psons take vp any horse kind soe as to send them out of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment before hee or they cary the same to the pson deputed and soe euidence it to bee his or theires for whom taken vp and take a note vnder his hand and that hee shall enter it both day and yeare ;

6. That noe Indians bee pmitted to course or take vp any horses except in companie with the English and that with the conceit and approba<sup>o</sup>n of a majestrate if there bee any in that towne ; if not the approba<sup>o</sup>n of the Towne clarke ;

7. That if any pson or psons shalbee found carying any horse kind out of this Jurisdiction without a note vnder the hand of the p<sup>t</sup>ie deputed as abouesaid from whence hee came that the horse bee Cecured att the Owners charge vntill a note bee procuréd and the pson that brought him bee fined five pounds to the Countrey if an Inhabitant ; but if a stranger not knowing the order the like penaltie vpon him that deliuered him if an Indian to bee publickely whipt by the Cunstable where hee shalbee taken with the horse ;

8. That wheras seuerall complaints haue bine made to the Court by diuers of great wronge and damage by straying horses not onely of other townes but alsoe of other Jurisdictions and noe redresse ; This Court ordereth That all such psons whose horses soe Treaspas and yett noe redresse or satisfaction Tendered ; that the Townshipes soe agreiued as they haue oppertunitie ; doe Impound the said horses vntill some due satisfaction bee giuen or Composition made for the treaspas and alsoe all other dues for their Impounding ; and hee that keeps the pound to haue six pence for euery horse that is Impounded ;

\*53  
i658.

\*Wheras it hath bine an ancient and wholsome order bearing date March the seauenth i636 that noe pson coming from other ptes bee allowed an Inhabitant of this Jurisdiction but by the approba<sup>o</sup>n of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the majestrates att least and that many psons contrary to this order of Court are crept into some townshipes of this Jurisdiction which are and may bee a great disturbance of our more peacable proceedings bee it Inacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any such pson or psons shalbee found that hath not doth not or will not apply and approue themselues soe as to procure the approba<sup>o</sup>n of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the assistants that such bee enquired after and if any such psons shalbee found that either they depart the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or else that the Court take some such course therin as shalbee thought meet ;

i636.

It is enacted by the Court That none shall make sale of any boards plankes or Timber out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that hath bine growing in any



swampes that are reserued for publicke vse without leauē but shall onely soe doe of such as arise out of their owne proper grounds. [PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that for the preuenting of such Inconueniencies as may befall the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment by the want of Timber that noe man of what condition soeuer shall sell or Transport any manor of workes as frames for houses planks boards shiping Shallopes boates cannoes or whatsoever may tend to the destruction of timber how little soeuer the quantitie bee without the concent approba<sup>o</sup>n and liking of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Asistants and if any bee found faulty heerin and shall Imbarque or convey to that end to make sale of any of the pticulares aforesaid expressed or Intended by this order the said Timber to bee forfeited and to bee fined twice the vallue therof soe sould to bee leuied for the vse of the Collonie except what ariseth within their owne township or pticulare lands ; i626.  
In the begin-  
ing of the great  
old booke.  
This clause  
aded i658.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall saw any boards in any place within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that is not in the bounds of any pticulare township shall pay to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment one shilling and eight pence for euery Thousand to bee paid to the Treasurer for the vse of the Collonie and of timber and planke according to the proportion answarable ; i652.

Wheras Complaint is made that much Timber is feld on the comon and lett lye and not Employed and suffered to rott there by those that feled it and therby the Countrey much damnified It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall or hath felled any Timber on the Comon and doth not either Square or Riue it within halfe a yeare after it is felled it shalbee lawfull for any other to make vse therof as they shall see meet ; i658.

It is enacted by the Court that after December i658 noe raw hides (either slaughtered or otherwise falling or any skines viz: deer skins sheep skins goate skins or calue skins that shall fall shalbee Transported out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment on the penaltie of forfeiting them or their vallue to the Collonies vse ; i658.  
Repealed June  
i659.

\*It is enacted by the Court that when the vpper Marshall shall haue occation to leuy any fine or fines hee hath libertie by this order to choose one to prise the goods or Chattles taken by destresse ; and the delinquent hath libertie to choose another if hee please but if the delinquent shall refuse to choose another then the Marshall and him whoe hee hath chosen shall prise the said goods or Chattles and incase any bee required by the Marshall to prise the said goods or Chattles and shall refuse hee shalbee fined fve shillings for euery such default to the Collonies vsc ; and what expence of time \*54  
i658.

[PART II.] and paines any shalbee att in prising such said goods or Chattles hee shalbee reasonably satisfied for the same.

1658. It is enacted by the Court that if any shalbee chosen to serue on the Grand enquest and shall refuse to serue hee shalbee fined to the Collonies vse the sume of ten shillings for euery Court that hee is absent within the yeare for which hee is chosen to serue and incase hee shall wholly exclude himselfe all the yeare hee shalbee fined the sume of forty shillings to the vse of the Collonie vnlesse hee can giue sufficient reason to the Contrary vnto the Court ;

1658. Whereas sundry psons both Quakers and others wander vp and downe in this Jurisdiction and follow noe lawfull calling to earne their owne bread and alsoe vse all Indeuours to Subvert Ciuill State and to pull downe all churches and ordinances of God to thrust vs out of the wayes of God notwithstanding all former lawes provided for the contrary ;

Bee it therefore enacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof that with all convenient Speed a worke house or house of Correction bee erected that all such vagarants as wander vp and downe without any lawfull calling and alsoe all Idle psons or rebellious children or servants that are stuborne and will not worke to earn their owne bread and yett haue not wherewith to maintaine themselues may bee put to this house of Correction and there bee Immployed in such worke as shalbee there provided for them and to haue noe other Supply for their sustenance then what they shall earne by their labour all the while that they continew there and alsoe that some faithfull man bee appointed by the Court to bee ouerseer of this house of correction whoe shall carfully obserue such orders as shalbee from time to time directed to him from the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his assistants concerning any pson or psons that may bee sent to him ;

1658. Whereas it is obserued that diuers psons in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment are not able to provide competent and convenient food and raiment for their Children wherby it is that poor children are exposed vnto great want and extremitie It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that two or three men shalbee chosen in euery township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that all such as are not able to provide nessesary and convenient food and clothing for their children and will not dispose of them themselves soe as they may bee better provided for ; such said children shalbee desposed of by the said men soe appointed as they shall see meet soe as they may bee comfortably provided for in the p<sup>r</sup>mises ; and the seuerall townes shall returne the names of such men as shalbee soe deputed vnto the Court ;

\*It is enacted by the Court that incase any shall bring in any Quaker or Rantor or other Notorouse heritique by land or water into any pte of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall forthwith vpon order from any one majestrate returne them to the place from whence they Came or cleare the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of them on the penaltie of paying a fine of twenty shillings for euery weeke that they shall stay in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment after warning ;

\*55  
i657.  
This was re-  
pealed the 13  
of June i660:

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase any towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee fined that the Court shall appoint three men to make a rate to leuy the fine whoe shall proceed therin according to the rules sett downe in the orders about the rates of the Countrey as neare as may bee and incase such men as shalbee soe appointed to make the said rates shall neglect it ; they shall pay the fine themselues and such said rates as shalbee made ; a cobby therof shalbee deliuered to the Cunstable to bee leuied as rates for other charges ;

i658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase there shalbee occasion to Employ a messenger in the Countreyes busines that it shalbee lawfull for any of the majestrates to presse any pson or psons to goe on the Countreyes occasions and to bee payed out of the Countreyes stocke.

i658.

It is enacted by the Court that euery township in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue a booke of the lawes of the Collonie and that they bee read oppenly once euery yeare ;

i658.

\*Acts and orders of Court made and concluded the  
seauenth of June i659

\*61

fforasmuch as many psons are greatly corrupted with the Quakers doctrines by reading their bookes writings or Epistles which are sent and distributed into sundry places within this Jurisdiction ; It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that encase the Cunstable or Grandjurymen or Marshall shall find or heare of any Quakers bookes epistles or writings hee shall seize on them and p<sup>r</sup>sent them to a majestrate or the next court ;

Wheras the grand enquest is a place of great trust and concernment in the Comon wealth ; in discharge wherof is required expence of time and Charge ; It is therefore enacted by the Court that the seuerall townes of this Jurisdiction shall pay their grandjurymen towards their expence of time and Charge att three Courts two shillings and sixpence a day and nothinge att election Courts and that onely fit and able psons bee chosen for that seruice ; [and that the new grandjury men need not to appeare to take their Oath till the fifth day in the Court weeke. S.]

Repealed the  
14 of June  
1660.

It is enacted by the Court that the Majestrates shalbee hencforth freed from all publicke rates as respecting the majestrates table Clarke and Marshalls wages.

This is re-  
pealed June  
14: 1660.

It is enacted by the Court that such horses and mares as shall appeer to bee the Countreyes by order of Court the one halfe of them shalbee the townes where they are taken vp the due charge being taken out of the said halfe and the other halfe to bee the Gou'nors then in being ;

\*62  
1659.

\*It is enacted by the Court that a proposition bee made to the Quakers that such of them as will promise and engage to remoue their dwellinges out of this Gou'ment within six monthes after this p'sent Court and pforme it ; that noe fine bee exacted of them as soe engage ; and such as whose estates are soe Impouerished as they are disabled to remoue they shall haue som sup- ply made them out of the Tresury to healp them ;

The two lawes  
respecting this  
pticulare made  
in 1651 were re-  
pealled both  
of them this  
Court ; 1659.  
1659.

It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever pson or psons shall frequently absent or neglect vpon the Lords day the publicke worship of God that is ap- proved of by this Gou'ment shall forfeite for euery such default ten shillings

It is enacted by the Court that wher highwaies are wanting in any town- ship of this Jurisdiction that there the next Majestrate vnto such Townshipp shall Impannell a Jury for the laying out of such wayes as shalbee found by them convenient.

1659.

It is enacted by the Court that euery Cunstable of this Jurisdiction shall haue a Cunstable staffe wherby to distinguish them in their office from others and to bee prouided by the treasurer and to bee deliuered by the forgoing Cunstable to him that Succeeds yearly ;

\*63  
1659.

\*It is enacted by the Court that a proposition bee made vnto the seuerall townshippes of this Jurisdiction whether in respect vnto the repealing of such lawes as were made in March 1657 and June 1658 and Septem: 1658 they shall thinke it meet to sumon the whole body of freemen to come together ; that soe the minds of the major pte of the ffreemen may bee knowne about the p'mises and to send their minds to the next October Court.

1659.

It is enacted that the law respecting the oath of fidelitie shall stand in full force onely that it shalbee in the power of the majestrates to metegate the execution therof to such as are or shall appeer to bee low in their estates.

1653.  
The law about  
the vnder Mar-  
shalls pay  
made 1658 is  
repealed.

It is enacted by the Court that all sentances and Censures that shall fall out to bee Inflicted by the vnder Marshall viz: whipping Stocking stickmatis- ing or puting to death hee shalbee payed for the same by the Countrey out of the Tresury:

It is enacted by the Court that such as stay drinking or tippling wine or strong drinke abusiuely in any house of any towneship of this Jurisdiction the Cunstable or grandjurymen of the towne are heerby authorised to make enquiry into such abuses and finding any to transgresse to warne them or cause them to bee warned to the Court to answare for their misdemenors therein ;

[PART II.]  
1659.

\*It is enacted by the Court that three men bee Nominated in the voates for choise of Comissioners that soe incase of the fayleing of either of the first two nominated in the voates by reason of some eident hand of God Impeding then the third nominated to supply his place ;

\*64  
1659.

Wheras Complaint is made that the Indians in seuerall ptes of this Jurisdiction lueing in remote places from any townshipes haue receiued great damage by the horses and hoggs of the English ; It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee lawfull for the Indians soe anoyed by the horses or hoggs of the English whoe liue remote from any towne to bring such horses or hoggs to the pound in the next township and there to bee kept till the owners take a course to satisfy the damage ; and such Indians to haue twelue pence a peece for horses and six pence apeece for hoggs, if they bring them about eight miles ; and alsoe that if any neat Cattle shall treaspas the Indians ; It shalbee lawfull for them to Impound them that soe they may haue resonable Satisfaction ;

1659.

It is enacted by the Court that the Vnder Marshall shall haue of any prisoner comited to his charge two shillings and six pence for Comitment and two shillings and six pence for his release and one shilling and six pence a day for the time hee keepes him afterwards.

1659.  
This order was repealed at the Court held at Plymouth the 12 of June 1660.

It is enacted by the Court that euery towne of this Jurisdiction shall haue a pound to impound Cattle by the Next october Court on the penalty of fise pounds for euery towne that shall neglect ; and a pounder to keep it ;

1659.

\*It is enacted by the Court that if any towne in this Jurisdiction shall Neglect to procure a brand marke by the last of July next for to marke their horses according to order shalbee fined fise pounds ;

\*65

It is further ordered that euery owner of horses shall take the first oppertunitie to marke and enter their horses according to order and incase any shall neglect soe to doe betwixt this and March court next shall forfeite fise shillings to the towne for such default for euery horse found vnmarked ;

[PART II.]

The marke for horses for destinction of the townes  
 ffor Plymouth a **P** on the neer buttucke  
 Duxburrow a **D** on the neer buttucke  
 Scittuate an **S** on the neer buttucke  
 Taunton a **T** on the neer shoulder  
 Sandwich an **S** on the neer shoulder  
 Yarmouth a **Y** on the neer shoulder  
 Barnstable a **B** on the neer Buttocke  
 Marshfeild an **M** on the neer Buttocke  
 Rehoboth an **R** on the near Buttocke  
 Eastham an **E** on the far shoulder  
 Bridgwater **B** on the neer shoulder ;

The Court vnderstanding that some in an vnderhand way haue giuen vnto the Indians money or goods for their lands formerly Purchased according to order of Court by the majestrates therby Insinuating as if they had dealt vnjustly with them It is enacted by the Court that some course bee taken with those whom wee vnderstand [haue lately transgressed in that kind. S.]

\*66

\*It is enacted by the Court that the Grandjurymen in each towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment bee warned att election Courts to make their appearence on the fift day of that weeke.

[The law for hides is repealed. the law about the Marshalls wages Anno 1658. is repealed. the Two lawes about neglecting the worshipp of God made 1651 are repealed. S.]

Wheras some haue desired and others thinke it meet to p<sup>r</sup>mitt some p<sup>r</sup>sons to frequent the Quakers meetings to endeauor to reduce them from the error of their wayes the Court Considering the p<sup>r</sup>misses doe p<sup>r</sup>mitt John Smith of Barnstable Isacke Robinson John Chipman ; and John Cooke of Plymouth or any two of them to attend the said meetings for the ends aforesaid att any time betwixt this Court and the next october Court ;

~~The Court alloweth vnto each Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment thirty shillings to bee Employed towards the setting forth of the troop of horse viz thirty shillings for every horse they shall sett forth~~

[The Court Alloweth to Each Towne in this government to bee employed towards the setinge forth A Troop of Horse the sum of thirty shillings for every horse they set forth and is to bee disposed off by the deputyes of the Townes for y<sup>e</sup> ends Aforesayd and this is to bee payd by the Treasurer. Leiu<sup>t</sup>enant Torrey Joyned to goodman Stetson to act in this Busines. S.]

It is enacted by the Court that noe Strong liquors shalbee sould in any place within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to exceed in prise three shillings a quart.

\*Acts and orders made and concluded Att the  
 Generall Court held att New Plymouth  
 the 10<sup>th</sup> of June 1660:

[PART II.]  
 \*67

**W**HERAS there hath seuerall psons come into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment comonly called Quakers whose doctrine and practices manifestly tends to the Subversion of the fundamentals of Christian Religion Church order and the Ciuill peace of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment as appeers by the Testimonies giuen in sundry depositions and otherwise It is therfore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof; that Noe Quaker or pson comonly soe called bee entertained by any pson or psons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vnder the penaltie of five pounds for euery such default or bee whipt; and incase any one shall entertaine any such pson Ignorantly if hee shall Testify on his oath that hee knew not them to bee such hee shalbee freed of the aforesaid penaltie; provided hee vpon his first deserning them to bee such doe descouer them to the Cunstable or his deputie;

It is alsoe enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any Rantor or Quaker or pson comonly soe called shall come into any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; and bee apprehended by the Cunstable or any other; they shall bring them before some one of the majestrates of this Jurisdiction whoe shall comitt him or them to the Jayle; and there to bee kept in close durance and to haue onely such prouision as the Countrey aloweth which is thripence a day and soe to remaine vntill the next Court after their Comittment; and then to bee p<sup>r</sup>sented before the Court and by them Injoynd; directly to depart out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; and incase hee or they shall refuse or neglect soe to doe; then that they shalbee publickly whipt and sent out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment paying their fees; and forasmuch as the meetings of such psons whether strangers or others proueth desturbing to the peace of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment;

It is therfore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that henceforth noe such meetings bee Assembled or kept by any pson in any place within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vnder the penaltie of forty shillings a time for euery speaker and ten shillings a time for euery hearer (that are heads of families) and forty shillings a time for the owner of the place that p<sup>r</sup>mits them soe to meet together; and all such as shalbee found att any such meetings; as are vnder the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of others as wiues children or seruants; ¶ The Cunstable of such a towne where such meeting is shall forthwith carry them either into the stockes or Cage whoe shall remaine there according to the descretion of the said Cunstable provided if hee put them into the stockes they shall not

Repealed 8<sup>th</sup> of  
 June 1661.

This is re-  
 pealed the 8<sup>th</sup>  
 of June 1661.

[PART II.] continew there aboue two houres if in the winter nor aboue four houres if in the summer ; and if hee put them Into the Cage they shall not continew there longer then vntill night if in the winter ; and not longer then the next morning in the summer ; and for all young psons whoe are att their owne dispose and shalbee found att any such meetings that the same course bee taken with them either by puting them into the Cage or stockes ;

\*68  
1660.

\*It is enacted by the Court that there shalbee in the seuerall Townshipes of this Jurisdiction a Cage erected especially att Sandwich Duxburrow Marshfeild and Scitteate and that the charge of them shalbee defrayed out of such fines as shall arise out of the said Townshipes soe that the said charge exceed not three pounds ;

Wheras by a former order of Court all psons were required to giue notice to the Cunstables of their seuerall precincts of all such psons as were knowne to bee foraigne Quakers ; Now this p<sup>r</sup>sent Court doth enacte that it shalbee lawfull for any Inhabitant within this Jurisdiction vpon their knowledge ; and haueing oppertunitie to vse all endeauors to Apprehend all such Quakers and to deliuer them to the Cunstable or bring them before the Gou<sup>r</sup> or some one of the majestrates ;

Wheras wee find that of late time the Quakers haue bine furnished with horses and therby they haue not onely the more speedy passage from place to place to the poisoning of the Inhabitants with their cursed Tenetts ; but alsoe therby haue escaped the hands of the officers that might otherwise haue apprehended them It is therefore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That if any pson or psons whatsoever in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment doth or shall furnish any of them with horse or horse kind the same to bee forfeited and seized on for the vse of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; or any horses that they shall bring into the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or shalbee brought in for them and they make vse of shalbee forfeited as aforsaid ; and that it shalbee lawfull for any Inhabitant to make seizure of any such horse and to deliuer him to the Cunstable or the Tresurer for the vse of the Countrey.

In reference to the puting in execution the order about the house of Correction ; it is ordered by the Court that an addition shalbee erected of fourteen foot longe of equall hight with the prison att the one end therof with two Chemneyes in it ; one in the lower rome and the other in the vper rome ; with a yard afore it of about eight foot high made of boards ; and the Tresurer is to take some Speedy course for the doeing of it ; and that a fitt pson bee chosen by the Majestrates to bee the ouerseer therof ;



\*It is enacted by the Court that any one that shall bring in any Quaker or Rantor by land or water into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment viz: by being a guide to them or any otherwise shalbee fined to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment the sume of ten pounds for euery such default ;

[PART II.]

\*69

Wheras some Trouble and Inconuenience hath arisen by reason that some haue bine chosen to the office of Cunstable and haue rather chosen to pay the fine formerly Amerced for such default then to serue in the said office ; and soe the towne Nessesitated to make a new choise therby putting them to further Charge ; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any man being chosen by any Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to serue in the office of a Cunstable and shall refuse to serue therein shalbee fined the sume of four pounds the one halfe therof to the towne in which they are chosen and the other halfe therof to the vse of the Collonie ;

It is enacted by the Court that the Vnder Marshall shall haue twenty Nobles more aded to his former wages To bee payed out of the Tresury ; and that for the future hee shall not expect any fees for the keeping of any prisoner ; saue onely to haue two shillings and six pence for comittment and two shillings and sixpence for release as formerly ;

Wheras the Court hath taken notice that diuers of the ffreemen of this Corporation doe neither appeer att Courts of election nor send their voates by proxy for the Choise of majestrates &c It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof ; that whosoever of the ffreemen of this Corporation ; that shall not appeer att the Court of election att Plymouth in June anually nor send their voate by proxy according to order of Court for the choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer shalbee fined to the Collonies vse the sume of ten shillings for euery such default ; vnlesse some vnavoidable impediment hinder such in their appeerance ;

\*Wheras the milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction are entered into a Regementall Posture and therefore that the vse of Pikes is nessesry and some already provided for that end ; It is enacted by the Court that the charge of the said pikes shalbee borne by the townes respectiuely and that notwithstanding this order that such as exerciceth with the said pikes shall keep their other Armes viz: Muskett &c fix and fitt for seruice ;

\*70

In reference vnto the order of Court concerning carying of Armes to the meetings on the Lords day it is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any ouerseer of any Squadron in any milletary Companie of

Repealed June  
9<sup>th</sup> 1661.

[PART II.] this Jurisdiction that shall neglect to take notice of and present a true list of such as are defectiue in bringing their Armes to the meeting on the Lords day shalbee fined the sume of three pounds to the Collonies vse ;

Repealed the  
9<sup>th</sup> of June  
1661.

It is enacted by the Court that for matter of ordinary delinquency about penall lawes It shalbee lawfull for the Court of Majestrates to Issue the same in point of sensure without Impanneling of a Jury for the tryall of the case encase the fine exceed not the sume of ten pounds ;

It is enacted by the Court that all Controuersyes that shall arise betwixt man and man not exceeding forty shillings shalbee ended by the majestrates att the Court of assistants without Impanelling of a Jury for the tryall of the case ;

1663. It is enacted by the Court that whosoener shall sell by ~~Retaile~~ any wine or stronge waters in any towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment being not allowed by the Court shalbee fined five pounds to the vse of the Collonie for euery such default ; except they sell it to such as are allowed to retaile.

It is enacted by the Court that hencsforth noe fines due to the Countrey shalbee payed in Wampampeak.

\*71 \*fforasmuch as Complaint is made that many Indians presse into diuers ptes of this Jurisdiction ; wherby some of the plantations begine to bee oppressed by them ; It is enacted by the Court that noe strange or forraigne Indians shalbee pmitted to come into any pte of this Jurisdiction soe as to make their residence there ; and for that end that notice bee giuen to the seuerall Sagamores to preuent the same ;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that euery pson of the age of descretion which is accounted sixteen yeares whoe shall wittingly and willingly make or publish any lye which may bee pnisious to the publicke weale or tending to the damage or hurt of any pticulare pson or with Intent to deceiue and abuse the people with falce newes or reports shalbee fined for euery such default ten shillings ; and if the pty bee vnable to pay then to bee sett in the stockes soe longe as the Court shall think meet ;

[The former Order About lyinge is Repealed and likewise the Order about Tryalls at May Courts soe that henceforth all Tryalls by way of Jury are to bee Tryed either at October or March yearly and at no other court. S.]

Memorandum That Duxburrow bee eased in the charg about the troop of horse the next yeare ;

\*Att the Generall Court holden att  
Plymouth the 2<sup>cond</sup> of October 1660.

\*72  
1660.

**T**HE Court haue ordered that the law concerning not coming to our meetings that the fines shall not be leuied vntill the Court shalbee in a capascitie to order otherwise;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all our Courts warrants Summons and Comaunds bee all done directed and made in the Name of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> of England our dread Sou<sup>r</sup>: and alsoe that all Siuill officers and minnesters of Justice within this Jurisdiction to bee Sworne in his said Ma<sup>ties</sup> Name as alsoe that the oath of fidelitie and all other oathes shall goe in that tenure;

In reference vnto the law prohibiting buying or hiering land of the Indians directly or Indirectly bearing date i643 the Court Interprets those words alsoe to comprehend vnder the same penaltie; a prohibition of any mans receiueing any lands vnder pretence of any gift from the Indians without the approbation of the Court; likewise the prohibition of any English to giue any powder shott or Amunition horses or boates is Intended alsoe vnder the same tearme of Indirect selling vnto the Indians vnder the same penaltie;

The fift of June i66i Charles the fecond; Kinge of England Scotland ffrance and Ireland &c; was Solemly Proclaimed Att Plymouth in New England;

\*Att the Generall Court held Att Plymouth the  
fourth of June i66i enacted as followeth

\*73

**I**T is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That all psons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that are att their owne dispose and haue not taken the oath of fidelitie shall repaire vnto some one of the majestrates of this Jurisdiction to take the said oath; which if they shall neglect or refuse to doe such pson or psons shalbee Sumoned to euery election Court to make their appeerance theratt; during the time of their abode in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; and if any such pson or psons shall then refuse to take the said oath they shalbee fined the sume of fieve pounds to the Collonies vse;

~~It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That if any pson or psons comonly called Quakers or other such like Vagabonds shall come into any towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; the Marshall or Constable shall apprehend him~~

[PART II.] or them and vpon examination soe appeering hee shall whip them or cause them to be whipt with rodds ; soe it exceed not fifteen stripes ; and to giue him or them a passe to depart the Goument ; and if any such pson or psons bee found within the Goument ; without their passe or not acting according thervnto they shalbee punished againe as formerly ; and incase any Constable of this Jurisdiction shalbee vnwilling or cannot procure any to Inflict the punishment aforsaid that then they shall bringe such psons to Plymouth to the vnder Marshall and hee shall enffict it ;

~~And forasmuch as the meetings of such psons whether strangers or others proueth disturbing to the peace of this Goument It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That henceforth noe such meetings bee assembled or kept by any psons in any place within this Goument vnder the penaltie of forty shillings a time for the owner of the place that pmitts them soe to meet together or bee whipt ; and for all such as are speakers in such meetings to pay the like penaltie of forty shillings or bee whipt ;~~

It is enacted by the Court That the marshall Gorge Barlow shall haue libertie to apprehend any forraigne Quaker or Quakers in any pte of this Jurisdiction and to bee procecuted according to order provided in that case ;

\*74 \*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that henceforth noe pson or psons shall pmitt any meetings of the Quakers to bee in his house or housing on the penaltie of being sumoned to the generall Court and there being convicted therof shalbee publickly whipt or pay fiue pounds to the Collonies vse.

Wheras there is a Constant monthly meeting together of the Quakers from diuers places in great numbers which is very offenciuie and may proue greatly prejudiciall to this Goument ; and inasmuch as the most constant place for such meetings is att Duxburrow ; This Court haue desired and appointed Mr Constant Southworth and Wilkam Payboddy to reparaire to such their meetings together with the marshall or Constable of the Towne ; and to vse their best endeauors by argument and discourse to convince or hinder them ; and incase the place of their meeting should bee changed, The Court desires the aboue named or any other meet psons to attend them there alsoe ;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That hensforth noe Summons bee Issued forth before the action bee entered and Charges defrayed.

It is enacted by the Court that henceforth all evidences and Testimonies that shalbee produced for the clearing of any case shalbee giuen into the Court in writing and to bee kept vpon the file ;

fforasmuch as Jurymen for Tryall of causes betwixt pty and pty haue bine Sumoned out of the Towne of Plymouth and other townes neare ther-vnto and that by the frequency therof it hath proued burthensome to such; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that out of other townes of this Jurisdiction; the most remote excepted; as occation shall require there shalbee one man out of each towne required to attend the Courts for such purpose whose name shalbee specified in the warrants that are Issued forth to warne the Court

[PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that all stray horses or horse kind that noe pticulare pson can make any Just proffe that they are his or theires shall appertaine vnto the Countrey.

It is enacted by the Court that all such as take any strayes that shalbee found and proued soe to bee They that take them vp and giue enformation conserning them; shall haue one pte of three for their labour therein;

It is enacted by the Court that the rules and wayes to bee obserued for the tryall of strayes shalbee by their age markes Couller ꝥ

\*It is enacted by the Court That all woulues that shalbee killed by any English in any pte of this Jurisdiction; They that kill them shalbee payed by the townes in whose precincts they are killed; and such Indians as kill any woulues; they shalbee satisfied by the Treasurer.

\*75

It is enacted by the Court That noe Stranger or forraigner shall Improue our lands or woods att the Cape for the makeing of fish without liberty from the Goumment; and that all such as shall haue libertie shall attend such further orders as shalbee giuen them conserning the same; and that they shall pay six pence a kentell for all such ffish as shalbee made as aforesaid; to the Collonies vse;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all ordinary keepers or other retaillers of strong waters doe pay an excise of foure pence a gallon for all such liquors as is made in the Collonie and drawne forth and retailed by them; and eight pence a gallon for all such as they shall bring in or haue brought in to them from other ptes which they shall draw forth and retaile as aforesaid; and that when they bring home any Liquors they shall enter it with the towne Clarke before it bee broached on the penaltie of the forfeiture of the third pte of the vallue of what is drawne out before it bee excised;

Otherwise  
ordered June  
1662.

[PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that five shillings shalbee payed to the Countrey vpon euery barrell of Oysters that is carryed out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that the Countrey bee not defrauded hee shall enter them with the Towne Clarke before hee carry them away or else to forfeit twenty shillings p barrell on any carryed away not entered.

~~It is enacted by the Court that all Tarr That goes out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment six pence a barrell bee payed for the Countrey vpon all such Tarr as shalbee made on any lands that are within any Township; and twelue pence p barrell on such as is gathered on the Countreyes Comons and that the same Course bee taken for the entrey thereof before any bee Carryed away on penaltie of forfeiting four shillings p barrell for any soe Carryed away; It is with this prouiso that all such Tarr as is made and knotts that are gathered att the time of the entrey of this order comes not vnder <sup>the same</sup> this order and that this order take place and begin on the first of July next;~~

\*76

\*It is enacted by the Court that for all boards and planks that shalbee Transported out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment three pence a hundred bee payed to the vse of the Countrey; and sixpence p hundred bee payed vpon barrell Staues and heading and eight pence an hundred on hogshead staues and hogshead headings and that both boards planck and cooper stufte bee entered with the towne Clarke before it bee carryed away on the penaltie of the forfeiture of the one third pte of the vallue of what is carryed away not entered.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof that whoesoeuer shall Transport any Iron out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall pay vnto the Countreyes vse twelue pence on euery hundred and hee shall enter such Iron as hee caryeth or selleth away with the Towne Clarke on penaltie of forfeiting a third part of the vallue of it to the Countreyes vse;

The Court haueing declared by their voate that in their Judgments and Consiences the benefitt of whales is yett the Countreyes notwithstanding any thinge formerly done; haue ordered concerning them as followeth viz: That the townes where any shall come on shore may rent them for three yeares att the rate of two hogshead for a fish yearly to bee payed att Boston full and marchantable and that the deputies of those townes doe signify this tender to their townes which incase they doe not accept the Treasurer to haue power att october Court to lett it to the best aduantage to any other that will hier itt and then to allow to such Townes where any fish comes on shore; two hogsheads out of each ffish to any publicke vse of the towne on Condition

Otherwise  
ordered June  
the 3: 1662.

that they suffer any man that hiereth it; freely to Cart and try it on their lands and with their wood. [PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever taketh any Whale on drift att sea without those bounds and limitts already sett; and doe bring them on shore hee shall haue the one halfe and the Countrey the other halfe; the Countrey to allow Cask for their pte of the oyle;

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall find any whale on shore on the Cape or elsewhere; That is out of any townes bounds; and is on the Countreyes bounds or limitts shall allowe the Countrey two hogsheads of oyle cleare and payed att Boston;

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any man die without Will his wife shall haue a third part of his Land during her life and a third pte of his estate foreuer; \*77

It is enacted by the Court That a sufficient man in euery towne; bee appointed to take vp what excise shalbee due to the Countrey whether Iron Tarr boards oysters &c and that the said men bee vnder oath and that they shall haue power to make serch and what forfeites they find they shall haue the one halfe therof; and out of the said excise euidentced to haue three shillings vpon the pound; and that they giue a Just account To the Treasurer the first of Nouember and the first of May Annually; The Names of such as are appointed are as followeth Repealed June 1662.

For Plymouth	John Morton	For Yarmouth Rich:	Taylor <i>Taylor</i>
For Duxb:	Gorg Partrich	For Barnstable	John ffinney
For Scittuate	John Turner Jnr:	For Marshfeild	John Bourne
For Sandwich	Gorg Barlow	For Rehoboth	Wilham Carpenter
For Taunton	Wilham Harvey		
For Eastham	Job Cole or some other	the towne shall app.	
For Bridgwater	John Haward Junr.		

The oath to bee giuen to those that receiue the excise;

fforasmuch as the Court haue seen cause to order an excise to bee layed vpon sundry thinges you shall dilligently attend the execution of all such orders in such case provided; and both demaund and receiue such sume or sumes as shalbee due to bee payed by vertue of any the said orders; you shall faithfully keep a true account of all such sumes as you shall Therby receiue and faithfully deliuer vp a true account therof vnto the Treasurer as hee shall demaund it; according to order Soe healp you God;

[PART II.]

The oath of a sealler of measures  
is as followeth

Wheras you are chosen to the office of a sealler of measures for the Towne of ƆƆ You shall during youer continuance in the said office Truly and faithfully seize<sup>1</sup> and seale all such measures as are att any time brought in vnto you for that end ; according to the best of youer abillities as exact as may bee according to such Standards as are allowed and prouided by the Countrey Soe healp you God ƆƆ

\*78  
Repealed.

\*It is enacted by the Court that all Tarr that goes out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; six pence a barrell bee payed to the Countrey ; vpon all such Tarr as shalbee made ; on any lands that are within any Township ; and twelue pence a barrell on such as is gathered on the Countreyes Comons ; and that the same course bee taken for the entery therof before any bee carryed away on penaltie of forfeiting foure shillings a barrell for any soe carryed away ; prouided that all such Tarr as is made or shalbee made att any time within this Instant month of June shall not fall vnder this order ;

\*79

\*Actes and orders made and concluded by the Generall Court held att Plymouth for the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth the third of June Ann<sup>o</sup> *June the third* 1662.

Wheras there hath bine much controuersye occasioned for want of a full and cleare settlement of matter relateing vnto such whales as by Gods prouidence doe fall into any pte of this Jurisdiction This Court doth therefore order for the preuension of any discontent or controversy for the future and for a finall Issue and settlement soe farr as in the Court lyeth about the same ; that for all such whales as by Gods prouidence shalbee cast on shore on any pte of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or shalbee by any cut vp att sea and brought on shore in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; there shalbee for euery such ffish one full hogshead of Marchantable oyle payed vnto the Countrey deliuered att Boston by such townes or psons as are Interested in the lands where they fall or shall soe cutt vp any ffish att sea ; and incase that any ffish bee soe considerably torne or wasted that a full quarter pte bee gone ; then to pay but halfe a hogshead and for such Inconsiderable peeces of ffish as are lesse then halfe they shall pay nothing ; and for the resedew of such ffish or the produce of them as remains the Countreyes pte being discharged It shalbee freely att the dispose of such Townes where it falls or for the Benifett of such as Cutt them vp ; if taken on drift without such bounds as haue bine formerly sett ; the same being still continewed ;



[PART II.]

The Court proposeth it as a thing they Judge would bee very comendable and beneficiall to the Townes where Gods Providence shall cast any whales; if they should agree to sett apart some pte of euery such fish or oyle for the Incouragement of an able Godly Minnester amongst them;

<sup>i662</sup>  
~~\*Whereas great Complaint is made of Intollerable abuse in diuers ptes of this Jurisdiction by soe great quantitie of Strong Liquors brought into and drawne forth in the Collonie wherby is great excesse both amongst Indians and English and alsoe to preuent the abuse of trading powder and shott to the Indians It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That whatsoever wine or stronge waters shott or ledd shalbee brought into this Gouernment by any boat Barke or other Vessell; or into any Inland Plantation by any Carryer or wagganer that is knowne to them the said Master Carrier or wagganer shall within three dayes of his ariuall; or sooner if it bee demaunded of him giue in an Invoyce of the same either to the towne clarke; or other man appointed thervnto; on penaltie of forfeiting of the vallue of such wine or liquor the one halfe to the enformer and the other halfe to the vse of the Collonie.~~

\*80  
 i662.  
 June.

And incase any master carrier or waganor shall haue cause to suspect any such goods may bee consealed in any caske or bagg amongst other goods; It shalbee lawfull for them to detaine it vnder his Charge vntill hee haue enformed the pson or psons appointed to take Care therof; in whose power it shalbee to open and serch the same; and incase It shalbee found that hath bine soe concealed; It shalbee forfeited the one halfe to the Collonie; and the other halfe to the master or any other that shall enforme;

And that all such psons as are appointed to take Invoce of such goods shall giue an account into euery of the generall Courts that soe they may enquire after and take due Course for the preuention of such abuse; and this Court doth Impower the Majestrates to take such effectuall Course against any that they shall find to transgresse in this kind; as they may in Case of other misdemeanors;

~~\*Whereas great complaint is made of Intollerable abuse in diuers ptes of this gouernment by the bringing in of such great quantities of wine and stronge waters by which greate excesse is occasioned both amongst Indians and English; and alsoe to preuent the abuse in trading powder shott and ledd to the Indians;~~

\*81<sup>a</sup>  
 i662.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That whatsoever wine or strongwaters powder shott or ledd shalbee brought into this Gouernment by any boate barke or other vessell or into any Plantation by any Carrier

[PART II.] or waganor that is knowne to them ; the said master Carrier or waganor ; shall within three dayes of his arrivall or sooney if it bee demaunded of him ; giue in an inuoe of the same to such pson or psons as the Court shall appoint thervnto on penaltie of his forfeiting the vullue of all such goods the one third to the Informer and one third to the Collonie, and a third to them that is appointed to Inuoe and serch ;

Morouer incase any Master Carrier or wagoner shall haue cause to suspect any such goods may bee concealled in any Cask or sacke amongst other goods ; It shalbee lawfull for him to detaine it vnder his charge vntill hee haue enformed the pson or psons appointed to take care therof <sup>and authorised</sup> ~~in whose~~ ~~power it shalbee to open and serch the same~~ ; and incase any shalbee found that hath bine soe concealed it shalbee forfeited the one third to the Collonie another third to the master or any other that shall enforme ; and another third to the searcher and that all such psons as shalbee appointed to take Inuoe of such goods shall giue an accounte into euery of the generall Courts that soe they may enquire after and take due course for the preuention of such abuse

And this Court doth Impower the majestrates to take such effectuall course against any that they shall find to transgresse in this kind as they may incase of other misdemenors

And further the Court doth require all psons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that doe or shall still any stronge waters to giue in an account vnto the psons appointed thervnto of their disposall of them both of the quantitie and the psons to whom sold on penaltie of his forfeiting the vullue of such liquors as hee shall not giue in ; a third to the Collonie a third to the enformer and a third to such psons as are appointed to take Inuoyce therof ;

1662.

\*81<sup>b</sup>  
Repealed.

\*It is enacted by the Court that all ordinary keepers or retaillers of strongwaters doe pay an excise of four pence a gallon for all such liquors as are made in the Collonie and drawne and retailed by them and eight pence a gallon for all such as they shall bring in or haue brought in to them from other ptes which they shall draw forth and retaile as aforsaid ; and that all retaillers and ordinary keepers shall twice in the yeare viz: in the month of may and in the month of october ; giue in to the Treasurer or his assignes a true account of all such liquors as they shall bringe in or shalbee brought in vnto them and retailed as aforsaid vpon the penaltie of paying a fine of five pounds for any that shalbee brought in and not accounted for as aforsaid ;

Wheras It is giuen forth that diuers are vnsatisfyed about the sale of Kenebecke and that oppertunitie is lately p<sup>r</sup>sented vnto vs for the haueing of

it againe the deputies haueing considered of the p<sup>r</sup>mises ; and finding noe way p<sup>r</sup>senting it selfe by the takeing of it againe for the better aduantage of the Collonie haue with one consent agreed that they desire not to meddle with it againe but doe ratify the sale therof.

[PART II.]

The Treasurer is ordered by the Court to procure a booke of the statutes of England for the vse of the Collonie

<sup>1662.</sup>  
\*Wheras Complaint is made of some ordinary keepers in this Jurisdiction that they doe allow p<sup>r</sup>sons to stay on the Lords daies drinking in their houses in the Intrimes of times betwixt the exercises especially young p<sup>r</sup>sons and such as stand not in need therof ; It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that noe ordinary keeper in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall draw any wine or liquor on the Lords day for any except in case of nessesitie for the releife of those that are sicke or faint or the like for their refreshing ; on the penaltie of paying a fine of ten shillings for euery default ;

\*82

It is ordered<sup>1</sup> by the Court that the Generall training shalbee one yeare att Duxburrow and another yeare att Yarmouth ; that is to say euery other yeare for the future att one of those townes ; onely this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare for speciall cause it is ordered to bee att Plymouth on the third<sup>2</sup> Weddensday in September next ;

[<sup>1</sup>enacted.][<sup>2</sup>last.]

It is enacted by the Court that if any one of the foot souldiers of any milletary Companie of this Jurisdiction shall vnnessesarily exempt himselfe from appeerance att the generall trainings att the time and place appointed except incase of sickness lamenes Countrey busines or the like shalbee fined five shill. a day for euery day they shall soe neglect incase they cannot giue a satisfactory reason therof vnto the milletary Comaunder in cheife of that Companie and that all such fines shalbee to the vse of the Companie to which the delinquents doe belonge ;

and these daies to bee as well for the daies of marching out of the towne as for the daies of exercise in training.

1664.

It is enacted by the Court that the whole troop of horse both they and the vounteers aded to them shall haue the same libertie that was graunted to those that were the first Troopers viz: to bee freed from foot seruice watching and warding ; and likewise their horses to bee rate free.

<sup>1662.</sup>  
\*Wheras Notwithstanding former orders that haue bine made for the preuenting of wrong done to the Indians by the horses and hoggs of the English ; it doth appeer that the Indians liueing in remote p<sup>r</sup>tes from any townshipes doe sustaine much wrong by horses and that the English likewise may sustaine much damage in their p<sup>r</sup>ticulares therby ; the Court haueing seriously considered therof and finding some Inconueniency in coming to a

\*83

1662.

June.

[PART II.] generall order about the same ; haue thought good to prepose it to the seuerall townshipes of this Jurisdiction as a thinge much concerning them that such Townshipes where such wronge is done ; doe speedily take some course within themselues about the same ; either by agreeing with the Indians to healep them to fence their Corne or by compounding with them to secure their Corn themselues where places are vncapable of fencing for want of stuffe or otherwise as shalbee found most suitable to their Condition ; to prevent future Inconveniencies that may come by their neglect of the same ;

Wheras the Court haue formerly provided against the prophanation of the Saboth by vnnessearie Trauelling on that day ; and haue alsoe provided against the setting vp of any publicke meeting without allowance of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment This Court doth desire that the Transgression of these orders may bee carefully looked vnto and p<sup>r</sup>vented ; if by any due course it may bee ;

\*84            \*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all p<sup>r</sup>sons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that are att their owne dispose and haue not taken the oath of fidelitie shall repaire vnto some one of the maiestrates of this Jurisdiction to take the said oath ; which if they shall neglect or refuse to doe such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shalbee summoned to euery election court to make their appeerance theratt during the time of their abode in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; and if any such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shall then refuse to take the said oath they shalbee fined the sume of fve pounds to the Collonies vse ;

It is enacted by the Court that euery p<sup>r</sup>son of the age of descretion which is accounted sixteen yeares whoe shall wittingly or willingly make or publish any lye ; which may bee p<sup>r</sup>nisious to the publicke weale or tending to the damage or hurt of any p<sup>r</sup>ticulare p<sup>r</sup>son or with Intent to deceiue or abuse the people with falce newes or reports shalbee fined for euery such default ten shillings ; and if the p<sup>r</sup>ty bee vnable to pay then to bee sett in the stockes soe longe as the Court shall thinke meet.

Wheras there hath bine much Controuersy for want of a full and Cleare settlement of matters relateing vnto such whales as by Gods prouidence doe fall into any pte of this Jurisdiction

This Court doth therefore order for the preuention of any discontent or Controuersy for the future and for a finall Issue and settlement soe farr as in the Court lyeth about the same ; That for all such Whales as by Gods prouidence shalbee Cast on shore in any pte of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or shalbe by any Cutt vp att sea and brought on shore in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment there shalbee for euery such ffish one full hogshed of marchantable oyle payed vnto the Countrey

deliuered att Boston by such Townes or psons as are enterested in the lands where they fall or shall soe Cutt vp any ffish att sea ; and incase that any ffish shalbe soe Considerably torne or wasted that a full quarter be gon ; then to pay but halfe a hogshed ; and for such Inconsiderable peeces of ffish as are lesse then halfe that they pay nothing ; and for the resedew of such ffish or the produce of them as remains the Countreyes pte being discharged It shalbe freely att the dispose of such Townes where it falls or for the benefitt of such as Cutt them vp if taken on drift without any such bounds as haue bine formerly sett the same being still continued ;

[PART II.]

The Court proposeth it as a thinge that they Judge would bee very Comendable and beneficiall to the Townes where Gods Prouidence shall Cast any Whales if they should agree to sett apart some pte of euery such ffish or oyle for the Incurragment of an able Godly Minnester amongst them ;

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever shall find any whale on shore on the Cape or elsewhere That is out of any Townse bounds and is on the Countreyes lands or limetts shall allow the Countrey two hogsheds of oyle Cleare and payed to the Countrey.

\*It is enacted by the Court that the Treasurer shall procure a booke of the Statutes of England for the vse of the Collonie.

\*85

It is enacted by the Court that if any one of the foot souldiers of Any milletary Companie of this Jurisdiction shall vnnessesaryly exempt himselfe from appeerance att the Generall Training att the times and places appointed ; except incase of sickness lamnes Countrey busines or the like shalbe fined fise shillinges a day for euery day they shall neglect incase they Cannot giue a satisfying reason therof vnto the milletary Comaunder in Cheife ;

It is enacted by the Court That the whole Troop of horse both they and the vounteers aded to them shall haue the same libertie that was graunted to those that were the first Troopers viz: to be freed from foot seruice watching and warding ; and likewise their horses to be rate free ;

Notwithstanding all the orders that haue bine made for the preventing of wronge to the Indians by the horses and hoggs of the English It doth appeer that the Indians liueing in remote ptes from any Townshipes doe sustaine much wronge by the horses and that the English doe sustaine much damage in their particulars therby ; The Court haueing seriously Considered therof and finding some Inconueniency in coming to a Generall order about the same haue thought good to propose it to the seuerall Townshipes

[PART II.] of this Jurisdiction as a thing much concerning them That such Townshipes as where any such wrong is done speedily take some course within themselues about the same either by agreeing with the Indians to healp them to ffence their Corne or by Compounding with them to Cecure their Corn themselues where places are vncapable of ffencing for want of stuffe or otherwise as shalbe found most suitable to their Condition to preuent future Inconueniency that may come by their neglect of the same ;

Wheras the Court haue formerly provided against prophanation of the Saboth Day by vnnesesary Trauelling theron and alsoe haue provided against the seting vp of any publicke meeting without the allowance of the Gou'ment ; this Court doth desire that the transgression of these orders may be Carefully looked vnto if it may be ;

It is enacted by the Court, that if any Indian or Indians shalbee found drunke in any Township of this Gou'ment ; That they bee forthwith taken by the Constable of the Towne and sett in the stockes ; and that if any liquors shalbe found with the Indians that it be forfeite to the vse of the Gou'ment ; and that it shalbe lawfull for any man to seize any Indian found drunke or any liquors found with the Indians and bring him or it to the Constable to be ordered and disposed of as aforsaid ; vnlesse any Indian shall make it appeer that hee hath such Liquors according to order of Court ; and the said Indians that shalbe sett in the stockes as abouesaid shall defray the charge therof which is two shillings and six pence a time for euery of them ;

\*86  
1658.

\*It is enacted by the Court That euery towne of this Gou'ment shall haue a booke of the lawes of the Collonie and that they be openly read once euery yeare ;

In reference vnto such woulues as are or shalbe killed by the Indians the Collonie being out of stocke It is ordered by the Court That a psell of Wampam in the Treasurers Custody shalbe deuided and put into the hands of Leiftenant Freemaun Leiftenant Hunt and the Treasurer for the paying of the Indians fifteen shillings p head they bringing their head when the pay is demaunded and these men to giue an account this time twelue month what they shall disburse on this account ; and if any of them shall disburse more then the peage comitted to them ; then they to be repayed againe either by rate or otherwise.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof concerning the settling of New Plantations in an orderly way that notwithstanding the graunt

of lands to any particular persons in case such lands lye soe remote as the Inhabitants thereof can not ordinarily frequent any place of publicke worship That then noe person be admitted after the date heerof to goe to Inhabite vpon any such lands without such a competent companie or number of Inhabitants as the Court shall Judge meet to beginne a societie as may in a measure carry on thinges in a satisfactory way both to Ciuill and Religious respects ; and for the more comfortable carrying on thereof ; It is further ordered that such person or persons as shall haue the graunt of such lands about such places and will neither att the present liue on them themselues nor sell nor lett them to others that would ; that then such lands not yett inhabited att the beginning or progresse of such societies shalbe lyable to be rated in some meet proportion towards the defraying of such nessesary charges as shall arise either on Ciuill or Religious respects as abouesaid especially respecting an able godly minister in such place or places ;

[PART II.]

Alsoe as for such places alreddy begun with an Inconsiderable Number viz: Saconeesett Acushenett &c that it be comended vnto them to apply themselues in some effectuall way for the Increase of their number as they may carry on thinges to better satisfaction both in Ciuill and Religious respects especially that they Indeaour to procure an able Godly man for the dispensing of Gods word amongst them ; and for their quickening and Incurragement therein this Court doth order That all such lands as are within their respectiue places though not inhabited shalbe lyable to be rated in some measure of proportion for the defraying of such charges as shall nessesarily arise concerning the premises ;

And for the quickening and Incurragement of the well affected in the towne of Sandwich or any other plantation within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment whoe shalbe actiue this way ; this Court takeing into their serious consideration the great need thereof in euery plantation as to the propagation of the Gospell and flourishing of Religion the great and knowne end of our Transplanting into these partes of the world as alsoe of the graunt of competent quantities of lands to the respectiue plantations ; and therefore according to their duties incombent on them ; doe heerby declare their reddines to assist such well affected as afforsaid ; by puting forth their power (wher there shalbe need) for the raiseing of comfortable and competent maintainance for such able faithfull men as shalbe procured in such Townships and make it their worke to attend vpon the minnistry of the Word of God amongst them ; from all such respectiue Inhabitants as shall Inhabite any such lands according to such former order as by the Court is alreddy prouided in such case ;

[PART II.]

\*87

\*It is proposed by the Court vnto the seuerall Townshipes of this Jurisdiction as a thinge they ought to take into their serious consideration That some course may be taken that in euery Towne there may be a Scoolmaster sett vp to traine vp children to reading and writing;

Wheras the Clarke of each milletary Companie of this Jurisdiction is required to gather in all fines which are or shalbe belong to their Companie It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That incase any shall refuse to pay any such fines as are or shalbe orderly amersed That the said Clarke is heerby authorised by destresse to leuy all such fines by vertue of his said office without any further order;

Wheras the Towne of Scittuate preferred a petition to this Court requesting that the Treasurers account may be more particularly sent to the seuerall Townshipes of this Jurisdiction; The Court haue ordered That henceforth att euery election Court; any of the Townes aforsaid may if they please to send any meet pson to Joyne with others to take the Treasurers account; and soe to acquaint their respectiue Townes therewith in as particular a manor as may be; which we hope may satisfy;

It is enacted by the Court that the Constable in each Township in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall gather in all fines that shall fall within his liberties not exceeding five pound; and to haue two shillings on the pound for gathering of them;

It is enacted by the Court That all psons lyable to be rated in euery Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; be rated according to their visable estates and faculties That is according to their faculties and psonall abilities whether they are in lands; both meddow lands Improued lands or dormond lands appropriated; or in cattle goods or stocke Employed in Trading in boates Barques & mills or other visible estate but for the Incurragement of trafficke That it be ordered That Barques Catches and bigger vessells may not be rated about halfe their vallue dormond lands both vpland and meddow to be rated for euery hundred acres according to forty shillings estate; and if any pson lay downe any pte of his propriety to the Comonage of the Companie there associated together hee shalbee rated but for what quantitie hee keepes his propriety in; and concerning stockes Employed in trading att home in and about the place where hee liues shalbe rated onely for two thirds of such stockes soe Improued; As thus one hundred and twenty pound stocke to be Employed in trading shalbe rated for eighty pounds; and soe proportionable.



Concerning dormond lands that the psons be rated for them in such Townshipes as the psons That ownes them Inhabites. [PART II.]

\*It is enacted by the Court That in euery Towne of this Jurisdiction there be three or fiue Celect men Chosen by the Townsmen out of the freemen such as shalbe approued by the Court ; for the better managing of the afares of the respectiue Townshipes ; and that the Celect men in euery Towne or the major pte of them are heerby Impowered to heare and determine all debtes and differences arising between pson and pson within their respective Townshipes not exceeding forty shillings ; as alsoe they are heerby Impowered to heare and determine all Differences arising betwixt any Indians and the English of their respective Townshipes about damage done in Corne by the Cowes swine or any other beastes belonging to the Inhabitants of the said respectiue Townshipes ; and that the determination of the abouesaid Differences not being satisfied as was agreed, the pty wronged to repaire to some Majestrate for a warrant to recover such award by distraint ; \*88

It is further enacted by the Court That the said Celect men in euery Township approued by the Court or any of them shall haue power to giue forth sumons in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Name to require any psons complained of to Attend the hearing of the Case and to sumon witnesses to giue Testimony vpon that account and to determine of the Controuersyes according to legall euidence ; and that the psons Complaining shall serue the summons themselves vpon the psons complained against ; and incase of their non appeerance to proceed on Notwithstanding in the hearing and determination of such controuersys as comes before them ; and to haue twelue pence apeece for euery award they agree vpon

It is likewise enacted by the Court that such Indians as plant in any Township of this Jurisdiction ; that they shall ceure their Corne by sufficient ffences from any damage that may come thervnto by any Cattle of the English amongst whom they dwell ; and for such Indians as shall plant on their owne land out of the bounds of any township That the English are either to healp them in ffencing their Corne or to satisfy for such damage as shalbe done vnto them by their cattle or beastes therein ;

It is enacted by the Court That all matters of misdemenior That the majestrates shall take cognizance of without p<sup>r</sup>sentment by the Grandenquest They haue full power and determine them by fine or otherwise as the nature of the offence may require as if p<sup>r</sup>sented.

fforasmuch as noe house of Correction is yett provided in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment

[PART II.] to receiue and punish such as not onely liue Idley and vnprofitably but are otherwise vicious and wicked in their carriage towards their parents or otherwise ;

It is enacted by the Court That any two Majestrates of this Jurisdiction haucing examined the case shall haue power any offender to be punished by stocking or whiping according to the nature of the offence ;

---

\*1<sup>a</sup> **W**heras Wee are certainly Informed that it hath pleased God ; to Establifh our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord Kinge Charles the fecond in the Injoyment of his vndoubted Right to the Crownes of England Scotland ffrance and Ireland ; and is soe declared and owned by his Good subjects of these Kingdomes

Wee therefore his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Loyall subjects the Inhabitants of the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth doe heerby declare our ffree and Reddy concurrance with such other of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Subjects and to his said Ma<sup>ties</sup> his heires and Successors wee doe Most humbly and ffaithfully submitt and oblidge our felues for euer ;                      God saue the Kinge ;

June the fift Ann<sup>o</sup> Dom : i66i.

\*The fift day of June i66i.

[PART III.] CHARLES THE SECOND King of England Scotland ffrance and Ireland &c was folemnly proclaimed att Plymouth in New England in America ;

\*1

PLYMOUTH RECORDS.

Laws.

PART III.



\* **T**HE Booke of the Generall Lawes and liberties of the Inhabitants of the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth Collected out of the Records of the generall Court; and lately Revised and established and disposed into an Alphabeticall order; and published by the Authoritie of the Generall Court held att New Plymouth the 29<sup>th</sup> day of September: Ann<sup>o</sup> Dom̃: 1658

[PART III.]

\*2

**B**ee Subject to every  
ordinance of Man for  
the Lords sake

1 peter 2: 13:

[PART III.]

\*3

\* **T**O our beloued bretheren and Naighbours the Inhabitants of the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth; The Gou<sup>r</sup>: Assistants and Deputies assembled att the generall Court of that Jurisdiction held att the Towne of Plymouth the 29<sup>th</sup> day of September Ann<sup>o</sup>: Do<sup>m</sup>: i658, wisheth grace and peace in our Lord Iesus Christ;


**I**T was the great pruilidge of Israell of old and soe was acknowledged by them Nehemiah the 9 : 13 That God gaue them right Judgments and true lawes ; for God being the God of order and not of confusion hath Comaunded in his word ; and put man into a capassitie in some measure to obserue and bee guided by good and wholsome lawes which are soe fare good and wholsome ; as by how much they are deriued from and agreeable to ; the Ancient platforme of Gods lawe ; for although sundry pticulares in the Judiciall law which was of old jnioyned to the Jewes : did more especially (att least in some cercomstances) befitte their Pedagogye ; yett are (they for the maine) soe exemplary being grounded on principalls of morall equitie as that all men ; (Christians especially) ought alwaies to haue an eye thervnto ; in the framing of their Politique Constitutions ; and although seuerall of the heathen Nations whoe were Ignorant of the true God and of his lawe haue bine famous in their times for the enacting and execution of such lawes as haue proued profitable for the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of their Comonwealth in the times wherein they liued ; yett notwithstanding their exelencye appeered so fare ; as they were founded vpon grounds of morall equitie which hath its originall from the lawe of God ; and accordingly wee whoe haue bine actors in the framing of this smale body of lawes together with other vsefull Instruments whoe are gone to their rest ; can safely say ; both for ourselues and them ; that wee haue had an eye principally and primarily vnto the aforsaid platforme ; and 2condarily vnto the Right Improuement of the liberties graunted vnto vs by our Superiours the state of England att the first begining of this Infant plantation which was to enact such lawes as should most befitte a state in the nonage therof ; not rejecting or omitting to obserue such of the lawes of our Natiue Countrey as would conduce vnto the good and growth of soe weake a begining as ours in this Wildernes as any Impartiall eye not forestaled with prejudice may eazely descerne in the pusall of this smale booke of the lawes

of our Collonie; The p<sup>r</sup>misses duely considered might worke euery consien-  
 cious sperit to faithfull obeidience; and although wee hold and doe affeirme  
 that both Courts of Justice and Majestrates; whoe are the minnisters of the  
 lawe are esentially Ciuill; Notwithstanding wee conceiue that as the Majes-  
 trate hath his power from God soe vndoubtedly hee is to Improue it for the  
 honor of God; and \*that in the vphoulding of his worship and seruice and  
 against the contrary; with due respect alsoe to bee had vnto those that are really  
 consienacious; though differing and discenting in some smaller matters; but if  
 any really or in pretence of consience shall professe that which eminently  
 tendeth to the Invndation of Ciuill State and violation of Naturall bonds or  
 the ouerthrow of the Churches of God or of his Worship; that heer prudence is  
 to bee Improued in a speciall manor in the enacting and execution of lawes;  
 It hath bine our endeauors in framing of our lawes that nothing should bee  
 found amongst them but that which will fall vnder the same p<sup>t</sup>iculares; wee  
 haue likewise reduced them to such order as they may most conduce to our  
 vtillitie and profitt; possibly it may bee that weaknes may appeer in the com-  
 posure of sundry of them for want of such plenty of able Instruments as  
 others are furnished withall; howeuer lett this suffice the gentle Reader; that  
 our ends are to the vtmost of our powers; in these our endeauors to promote  
 both Church and State both att the p<sup>r</sup>sent and for the future; and therefore soe  
 fare as wee haue aimed att the glory of God and comon good; and acted ac-  
 cording to God; bee not found a Resister but obeidient; least therby thou  
 Resist the ordinance of God and soe Incurr the displeasure of God vnto  
 damnation; Romans 13: 2:

[PART III.]

\*4

By Order of the Governall  
 Court Nathaniel Morton  
 Clerk:



[PART III.]

\*5

\*A Declaration demonstrating the warrantable grounds and proceedings of the first associates of the Government of New Plymouth in their laying the first foundation of the Government in this Jurisdiction for making of laws and disposing of lands and all such things as shall or may Conduce to the welbeing of this Corporation of New Plymouth;

**W**HERAS John Carver William Bradford Edward Winslow William Brewster Isacke Allerton and diuers others the subjects of our late Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord Kinge James by the grace of God Kinge of England Scotland France and Ireland Defendor of the faith &c did in the eighteenth yeare of his Raigne of England France and Ireland; and of Scotland the fifty fourth which was in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred and twenty; vndertake a voyage into that pte of America called Verginnia or New England thervnto adjoyning; there to erect a plantation and Collonie of English; Intending the glory of God the enlargment of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> dominions and the speciall good of the English Nation

And Wheras by the good Prouidence of God the said John Carver William Bradford Edward Winslow William Brewster Isacke Allerton and their associates ariued in New England aforesaid in the harbour of Cape Cod or Paomett Scittuate and being in New England aforesaid; where all the said psons entered into a Ciuill Combination; being the eleuenth day of Nouember in the yeare aforesaid; as the subjects of our said Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord the Kinge; to become a body Politique binding our selues to obserue such laws and ordinances and obey such officers as from time to time should bee made and Chosen for their well ordering and guidance; and thervpon by the fauor of the Almighty; began the first Collonie in New England; there being then none other within the said Continent; att a place Called by the Natiues Apaum allis Patuxett; and by the English New Plymouth; all \*which Lands being void of Inhabitants; Wee the said John Carver William Bradford Edward Winslow William Brewster Isacke Allerton and the rest of our Associates; entering into a league of Peace with Massasoiett since called Woosamequen Prince or Sachem of these ptes; hee the said Massasoiett freely gaue them all the lands adjacent to them; and their heires for euer; acknowledgning himselfe content to become the subject of our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord the Kinge aforesaid his heires and Successors and takeing protection of vs the said John Carver William Bradford Edward Winslow William Brewster Isacke Allerton and their Associates the naturall subjects of our Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord the Kinge aforesaid But haueing

\*6



noe speciall letters Pattents for the *the* said ptes of New England but onely the generall leaue and libertie of our Consciencs in the publicke worship of God where euer wee should settle ; \*being therefore now settled and requiring speciall lycence and Comission from his Ma<sup>tie</sup> for the ordering of our affaires vnder his graciouse protection ; had sundry Comissions made and Confirmed by his said Ma<sup>ties</sup> Councill for New England to John Peirse and his associates ; whose names wee onely made vse of and whose associates wee were in the late happy and memorable Raigne of our said Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord King James ; But finding our selue still straightened ; and a willingnes in the hono<sup>ble</sup> Councill aforsaid to enlarge vs ; ptely in regard of the many difficulties wee had vndergone ; and ptely in regard of the good service wee had done ; as well in releiuering his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Subjects as otherwise wee procured a further enlargement vnder the name of Wilłam Bradford aforsaid and his Associates whose names wee likewise vsed ; and whose associates as formerly wee still are ; By vertue of which said letters Pattents libertie is giuen to vs deriatory from our Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord King Charles bearing date the thirteenth of January 1629 being the fift yeare of his raigne of England Scotland ffraunce and Ireland 43 and signed by the Right hono<sup>ble</sup> Robert Earle of Warwicke in the behalfe of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> said Councill for New England ; and sealed with their Comon seale to frame and make \*orders ordinances and Constitutions for the ordering disposing and Goūning of our psons and distributeing of our Lands within the said Lymetts To bee holden of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> his heires and successors as of his mannor of East greenwich in the County of Kent in free and Comon Soccage and not in Capite nor by Knights seruice, viz: all that pte of America and tract and tracts of land that lyeth within or between a sertaine Rivolett or Rundelett comonly called Coahassett al̄is Conahassett towards the north ; and the Riuer called Narragansett Riuer towards the south and the great Western Ocean towards the East ; and within and between a straight line directly extending into the maine towards the west ; from the mouth of the said Riuer called Narragansett Riuer to the vtmost bounds and lymetts of a Countrey or place in New England called Pocabacutt allis Puckanackicke allis Sowamsett westwards ; and another like straight line extending it selfe directly from the mouth of the said Riuer called Coahassett allis Conahassett towards the west so fare vp into the maine land westwards as the vtmost lymetts of the said place or Countrey comonly called Pocabacutt allis Puckanackicke allis Sowamsett doth extend ; together with the one halfe of the said Riuer called Narragansett ; and the \*said Riuolett or Rundelett called Coahassett al̄is Conahassett ; and all lands Riuer waters hauens creekes ports ffishings fowlings ; and all hereditiments profitts Comodi-

[PART III.]

\*7

\*8

\*9

[PART III.]

ties and emoluments whatsoever; Scituate lying and being arising within or between the said lymetts or bounds or any of them; furthermore all that Tract or pte of land in New England or pte of america aforesaid which lyeth withiu or between; and extendeth it selfe from the vtmost lymetts of Cobbasecontee alhis Comacecontee which adjoyneth to the Riuer of Kennebecke alhis Kennebekicke towards the westeren Ocean; and a place called the falls at Nequamkicke in America aforesaid; and the space of fifteen English miles on each side of the said Riuer comonly called Kenebecke Riuer; that lyeth within the said bounds Eastwards Westwards Northwards and southwards last aboue mentioned; and all lands grounds soyles Riuers waters ffishings heriditiments and proffitts whatsoever scituate lying and being arising happening or accrewing in or within the said lymetts or bounds or either of them; together with free Ingresse egresse and Regresse with shipps boates shallops and other vessels from the sea called the westeren ocean; to the Riuer called Kennebecke and from the said Riuer to the said Western Ocean; together with \*all prorogatiues Rights Royalties Jurisdictions priuiledges franchises liberties and emunities and alsoe marine liberties with the escheats and casualties therof; the Admiraltie Jurisdiction excepted; with all the Interest right title claime and demaund whatsoever which the said Councill and their successors now haue or ought to haue or may haue or require heerafter in or to any of the said Tract or portion of lands heerby mencioned to bee graunted; or any the p̄mises iu as free large ample and beneficiall manor to all Intents and constructions whatsoever as the said Councill by vertue of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> said letters may or can graunt; To haue and to hold the said Tract and tracts of land and all and singulare the p̄mises aboue mencioned to bee graunted with their and euery of their appurtenances; To the said Wilłam Bradford his heires associates and assignes for euer To the onely proper vse and absolute behoofe of the said Wilłam Bradford his heires associates and assignes for euer; yeilding and paying vnto our said Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord the Kinge his heires and successors for euer; one fift pte of the Oare of the mines of Gould and siluer; and one other fift pte therof to the Presedent and Councill; which shalbee had possessed and obtained within the precincts afor̄sd for all seruices and demaunds whatsoever; allowing the said Wilłam Bradford his associates and assignes and euery of them his and their agents tenants and servants; and all such as hee or they shall send \*or Imploy about his said p̄ticulare plantation; shall and may from time to time freely and lawfully goe and returne trad or trafficke as well with the English as any the Natiues within the precincts aforesaid; with libertie of fishing vpon any pte of the sea coast and sea shores of any the seas or Ilands

\*10

\*11

adjacent; and not being Inhabited or otherwise disposed of by order of the said Presedent and Councell forbiding all others to traffick with the Natives or Inhabitants in any of the said Lymetts; without the special leaue of the said Wiltam Bradford his heires and associates; and allowing the said Wiltam Bradford his heires and associates to take apprehend seize and make prise of all such psons theire Shipes and goods as shall attempt to Inhabite or trad with the salvage people as aforesaid;

Morouer Wheras in the first begining of this Collonie diuers Marchants and others of the City of London and elsewhere adventured diuers sumes of money with the said John Caruer Wiltam Bradford Edward Winslow Wiltam Brewster Isacke Allerton and the rest of theire asoiates on certaine tearmes of ptenorship to continew for the tearme of seauen yeares the said tearm being expired; the plantation by reason of manifold losses and Crosses by sea and land in the begining of soe great a worke being largely Indebted and noe \*meanes to pay the said debtes but by the sale of the whole and the same being put vpon sale; the said Wiltam Bradford Edward Winsow Wiltam Brewster Isacke Allerton and other our associates the Inhabitants of New Plymouth and elsewhere being loth to bee deprived of our labours bought the same; for and in consideration of eighteen hundred pounds sterling viz: all and singulare the priuillidges lands goods Chattles ordinance amunition or whatsoever appertained to the said plantation or the adventures; with all and singulare the priuillidges thervnto belonging; as appeers by a deed between the said Isacke Allerton then agent for the said Wiltam Bradford and his Associates on the one pte; and John Pocke Robert Keine Edward Basse James Sherley and John Beachamp on the other pte being thervnto deputed by the said Marchants and the rest adventuring as aforesaid; as appeers by a Deed bearing date the sixt of Nouember in the third yeare of the Raigne of our Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord Charles by the grace of God Kinge of England Scotland ffance and Ireland 16 Ann<sup>o</sup> Dom<sup>i</sup>: 1627 one thousand six hundred twenty and seauen; Bee it Knowne vnto all men by these p<sup>s</sup>ents that according to our first Intents for the better effecting the glory of God; the Inlargment of the dominions of our said Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord the Kinge, and the speciall \*good of his subjects by vertue as well of our Combination aforesaid; as alsoe the seuerall graunts by vs procured; in the Names of John Peirce and Wiltam Bradford theire heires and associates together with our lawfull right in respect of vacancye donation or Purchase of the Natives and our full purchase of the adventures before expressed; haue giuen vnto and alloted assigned & graunted to all and euery pson and psons whose name or names shall follow

[PART III.]

vpon this publicke Record such proportion or proportions of grounds with all and singulare the priuiledges thervnto belonging as aforsaid; to him or them his or their heires and assignes successiuey for euer to bee holden as of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> his manor of East Greenwich in the Countey of Kent in free and comon Soccage and not in Capite nor by Knights service Yeilding and paying vnto our said Sou<sup>r</sup>: Lord the Kinge his heires and Successors for euer one fift pte of the Oare of the Gould and siluer and one other fift pte to the Presedent and Councell which shalbee possessed and obtained as aforsaid; and whatsoever lands are graunted vnto any by the said Wiltam Bradford Edward Winslow Wiltam Brewster Isacke Allerton or their heires or associates as aforsaid; being acknowledged in publicke Court and brought to this booke of Records of the seuerall Inheritances of the subjects of our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord \*the King within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment It shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> of New Plymouth from time to time successiuey to giue vnder his hand and the Comon scale of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment a Coppy of the said Graunt soe Recorded Confeirming the *the* said lands to him or them his or their heires or assignes for euer with the seuerall bounds and lymetts of the same; which shalbee sufficient euidence in law from time to time and att all times for all Intents and purposes the said pte or pties his or their heires or assignes for euer To haue and to hold the said portion of lands soe graunted bounded and recorded as aforsaid with all and singulare the appurtenances belonging therynto; To the onely proper and absolute vse and behoofe of the said pty or pties his or their heires and assignes for euer;

Nouem 15 1636.

\*15

\*Wee the Associates; of New Plymouth coming hither as freeborne subjects of the State of England; endowed with all and singulare the priuiledges belonging to such being assembled; doe ordeine constitute and inacte That noe acte Imposition law or ordinance bee made or Imposed vpon vs att p<sup>r</sup>sent or to Come but such as shalbee made and Imposed by Consent of the body of the Associates or their Representatiues legally assembled, which is according to the ffree liberties of the State of England;

1636.  
where the  
courts are to  
bee kept.

It is further enacted That all our Courts bee kept att the Towne of Plymouth; except the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants shall see Reason to keep some Courts of assistants elsewhere within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment.

1642.

1658.

Wheras by the first Associates of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment the Courts of election were held in the month of January anually; and afterwards in the month of

March anually; by reason of the vnseasonablenes of those times of the  
 yeare; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that the elec-  
 tion Court bee holden the first Tusday in June anually and the other gen-  
 erall Courts to bee holden the first Tusday in october and the first Tusday  
 in March anually; ~~and that the Courts of Assistants bee holden the first~~  
 Tusday in ~~august~~ the first Tusday in December and the first Tusday in  
 february ~~and the first Tusday in May~~ Annually.

The times of  
 the Courts  
 when to be  
 kept.

Sence ordered  
 that there is  
 noe Court of  
 Assistants.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all such as  
 shalbee admitted freemen of this Corporation shall stand one whole yeare  
 propounded to the Court viz: to bee propounded att one June Court and to  
 stand soe propounded vntill the next June Court following and then to bee  
 admitted if the Court shall not see cause to the Contrary;

1658.

\*16

when men are  
 to bee admitted  
 to freedome.

Wheras a Committee was chosen viz: Mr Thomas Prence Mr Willam Coll-  
 yare Mr Thomas Dimmacke Mr James Cudworth Mr Josias Winslow John  
 Dunham seni<sup>r</sup> Gorge Soule and Constant Southworth to consider of the proposi-  
 tion propounded by the deputies to the Court held att Plymouth in october 1650  
 concerning the major pte of the Court to order the adjournments and desolu-  
 tions of the generall Courts and the makeing and repealing of lawes; they the  
 said Committee declared their minds to bee that matters in the aforsaid respects  
 to rest vnaltered as they were; and that for the future as formerly in the  
 makeing and repealing of lawes and adjournment of Courts wherin Comittees  
 are requisite the majestrates and deputies to bee considered as one body.

June 1650.

Majestrates  
 and Deputies  
 to acte as one  
 body.

Wheras diuers actes and orders touching the makeing and repealing of  
 lawes att June Courts and their adjournments is rendered with a dubiouse  
 Interpretation; and that this Court haueing by propositions to the seuerall  
 towneshipes; desired their answers in order to the regulateing therof;  
 but not receiueing any answare from sundry of them; haue seen cause to  
 declare their owne sence therof and therefore doe enact; that fitt and able  
 psons bee anually chosen out of the ffreemen to attend June Courts and the  
 seuerall adjournments therof by the approued Inhabitants quallified as in such  
 case is provided; of this Jurisdiction in their respectiue Townshipes; for depu-  
 ties vnto whom with the majestrates as the body Representatiue is comited  
 full power for the makeing and repealing of all lawes as vpon their seriouse  
 considerations they shall find \*meet for the publicke weale of this Jurisdiction;  
 and that then onely such lawes bee enacted; or repealed except the Gou<sup>r</sup> for  
 the time being shall see waighty and nessesary cause by the complaint of the

Sept 29 1658.

majestrates  
 and deputies  
 power in make-  
 ing and repeal-  
 ing lawes.

\*17

[PART III.] freemen or otherwise to call a speciall Court; either of the whole body of the ffreemen or their deputies; the ffreemen of this Jurisdiction being left to their liberties to send their voates by proxy for the choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer in such wayes as by order of Court is already provided and this order to stand in full force till the whole body of ffreemen shall take further order therein; It is alsoe further provided that vpon notice giuen; in an orderly way to the Gou<sup>r</sup> by the major pte of the ffreemen of this Jurisdiction of their apprehensions of a nessesitie of the whole body of ffreemen to come together; that then the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the time being shall take the first oppertunitie to summon in the body of ffreemen to advise and acte therein as the matter shall require;

1636. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That on the first  
 a Gou<sup>r</sup> and  
 seauen Assist-  
 ants to bee  
 chosen yearly. Tusday in June anually there shalbee a Gou<sup>r</sup> and seauen assistants chosen to Rule and Gou<sup>r</sup>en the said plantations and Townshipes within the lymitts of this Corporation; and this election to bee made onely by the freemen therof;

1636. And that the said Gou<sup>r</sup> in due season by warrant directed to the seuerall  
 all warrants to  
 goe forth in  
 the Kinges  
 name. Constables in the name of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> giue warning to the ffreemen either to make their psonall appeerance att the Courts of election or to send their voates by proxy for the choise of officers according to order and that all our Courts Warrants Summons and Comaunds bee all done directed and made in the Name of our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord the Kinge ☉

1660. It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That all our Courts Summons warrants and comaunds bee all done directed and made in the Name of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> of England our dread Sou<sup>r</sup>: and alsoe that all Ciuill officers and ministers of Justice in this Jurisdiction to bee sworne in his said Ma<sup>ties</sup> Name; as alsoe that the oath of fidelitie and all other oathes shall goe in that tenure;

\*18 \*The oath of a ffreeman.

1636. You shalbee truly Loyall to our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord the Kinge his heires and Successors; You shall not doe nor speake deuse or aduise any thinge or thinges act or actes directly or Indirectly by Land or water; that shall or may tend to the destruction or ouerthrow of any of these plantations or townshipes of the Corporation of New Plymouth; neither shall you suffer the same to bee spoken or done but shall hinder oppose and discourer the same to the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants of the said Collonie for the time being or some one of them; you shall faithfully submitt vnto such good and wholesome lawes and ordinances; as either are or shalbee made for the ordering and Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of the same; and shall endeauor to advance the good and growth of the seuerall

Townshippes and plantations within the Lymetts of this Corporation by all due means and courses ; all which you promise and sweare by the Name of the great God of heauen and earth simply truly and faithfully to pforme as you hope for healpe from God whoe is the God of truth and the punisher of ffalchood.

[PART III.]

\*Wheras in regard of age disability of body vrgent occations and other Inconveniencies that doe accrew sundry of the ffreemen are hindered ; that they cannot appeer att Courts of election ; in consideration wherof ; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that any freeman of this Corporation shall haue libertie to send his voate by proxy for the choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer and the deputies of the seuerall Townes chosen to attend the Courts of election and the seuerall adjournments therof ; shall in the Towne meeting in which they are chosen ; they or either of them ; giue notice vnto the ffreemen ; that those that Intend not to make their psonall appeerance att the Court of election are now to giue in their voates Sealed vp for the chosing of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer ; and the said deputies to obserue by a list of their names whoe haue voated and whoe haue not ; the which voates soe brought in to bee ymediately sealed vp and brought vnto and deliuered in open Court by the said deputies ;

1651.

\*19

voates by  
proxy.

Wheras the Court hath taken notice that diuers of the ffreemen of this Corporation doe neither appeer att Courts of Election nor send their voates by proxy for the Choise of majestrates &c It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that whosoever of the ffreemen of this Corporation ; that shall not appeer att the Court of election ; att Plymouth in June anually nor send their voate by proxy according to order of Court for the choise of Gou<sup>r</sup> Assistants Comissioners and Treasurer shalbee fined to the Collonies vse the sune of ten shillings for euery such default unlesse some vnavoidable Impediment hinder such in their appeerance ;

1650.

fines for not  
voating.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that att Courts of election the voates of all the ffreemen p<sup>r</sup>sent bee first read ; and next after them the deputies of the seuerall Townes shall orderly p<sup>r</sup>sent the proxy of their owne Towne.

1653.

\*20

the time of  
opening and  
reading of  
proxy.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that other publicke officers besides Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants bee chosen and established att the Court in June Annually viz: Comissioners and Treasurer and that other Inferior officers as Constables Grandjurymen and Surveyors of the highwaies bee then alsoe confiermed if approved by the Court ;

1658.

all officers to  
bee chosen and  
established in  
June ;

1658. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase there  
of the office of shallbee occation for a Corrowner that the next majestrate where such acce-  
a Corrowner. dent falls shall sitt as Corrowner and execute that office according to the  
this aded June Custome of England as neare as may bee ; It is further enacted by the Court  
1668. as an addition to this order, That the Corrowner shall psonally repaire vnto  
the place where such accident falls out and view the Corpes himselfe vnless  
it shall fall out att soe great a distance of place as hee cannot goe or some  
other Ineuitable Impediment doe hinder ; and in such case the constable of  
the Township where such accedent falls shall supply his place ; and the Cor-  
rowners enquest to be payed ordinary wages according to the time they are out ;

1636. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That the Gou<sup>r</sup> ; and  
two of the Assistants att least shall as occation shalbee offered in time con-  
majebrates to venient ; determine in such <sup>lesser</sup> ~~minill~~ Cases viz : vnder forty shillinges between  
determine all things vnder man and man as shall Come before them ; as alsoe in offences of smale nature  
40<sup>r</sup> ; shall determine doe and execute ; as in wisdome God shall direct them ;

\*21 \*It is enacted by the Court ^ ^ ^

\*22 \*The office of the Gou<sup>r</sup>:

1636. The office of the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the time being consisteth in the execution of  
such lawes and ordinances as are or shalbee made and established for the good  
of this Corporation according to the bounds and lymetts therof ; viz: in calling  
together or advising with the Assistants or Councill of the said Corporation  
vpon such matteriall occations (or soe seeming to him) as time shall bringe  
forth In which assembly and all other the Gou<sup>r</sup> to propound the occation of the  
assembly and haue a double voyce therin ; if the assistants Judge the case to  
great to bee desided by them and refer it to the Generall Court then the Gou<sup>r</sup>  
to Summon a Court by warning all the freemen that are then extant ; as alsoe  
incase the major pte of the ffreemen seing waighty cause for the whole body of  
ffreemen to meet together and in an orderly way acquaint the Gou<sup>r</sup> with their  
desires therof ; then hee shall sumon the whole body of ffreemen together  
with all convenient speed ; and there alsoe to propound Causes and goe  
before the Assistants in the examination of p<sup>t</sup>iculares and to propound such  
sentance as shalbee determined ; further it shalbee lawfull for him to arrest  
and comitt to ward any offenders ; provided that with all convenient speed  
hee bringe the cause to hearing either of the Assistants or generall Court  
according to the nature of the offence ; alsoe it shalbee lawfull for him to  
examine any suspicious p<sup>s</sup>ons for euill against the Collonie ; as alsoe to Interrupt  
or oppose such letters as hee conceiueth may tend to the ouerthrow of the



same; and that this office continew one whole yeare and noe more ~~without~~ [PART III.]  
 viz vntill another bee elected  
~~renewall by election;~~

\*The Oath of the Gou<sup>r</sup>:

\*23

You shalbee truely Loyall to our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord King Charles his heires and Successors; Alsoe according to that measure of Wisdom vnderstanding and descerning giuen vnto you; shall faithfully equally and Indifferently without Respect of p<sup>ersons</sup> Adminnester Justice <sup>according to Law</sup> in all Cases Coming before you as the Gou<sup>r</sup> of New Plymouth; You shall in like manor faithfully duely and truely execute the lawes and ordinances of the same; and shall labour to aduance and further the good of the Townshipes and plantations within the Lymetts therof; to the vttermost of youer power; and oppose any thing that shall seeme to hinder the same; soe healp you God whoe is the God of truth and the Punisher of falchhood;

i636.

Att the Court held att Plymouth the 11<sup>th</sup> of June 1664  
 this following Aded and the Gou<sup>r</sup> tooke oath thervnto

You shall alsoe Carefully attend what is Required by his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Priuy Councill; of the Gou<sup>r</sup>nors of the respectiue Collonies; In reference vnto an acte of Parliament for the Incourageing and Increasing of shipping and Nauigation bearing date from the first of December i660;

\*The office of an Assistant.

\*24

The office of an Assistant for the time being consisteth in appeering att the Gou<sup>r</sup>s summons and giueing his best advise both in publicke court and private Councill with the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the good of the seuerall Townshipes and plantations within the Lymetts of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment not to disclose but to keep secrett such thinges as concerne the publicke good and shalbee thought meet to bee concealed by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Councill of Assistants; In haueing a speciall hand in examination of Publicke offenders; and in contriueing the affaires of the Collonie; To haue a voyce in the sensuring of such offenders as shalbee brought to publicke Court; And That if the Gou<sup>r</sup> haue occation to bee absent from the Collonie for a short time; (by the Gou<sup>r</sup> with the consent of the rest of the Assistants) hee may bee deputed to Gou<sup>r</sup>en in the absence of the Gou<sup>r</sup>: alsoe it shalbee lawfull for him to examine and Comitt to ward wher any oçcation ariseth where the Gou<sup>r</sup> is absent provided the p<sup>erson</sup> bee brought to hearing with all convenient speed before the Gou<sup>r</sup> and the rest of the Assistants alsoe it shalbee lawfull for him in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Name to direct his warrants to any Constable within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment whoe ought faithfully to

i636.

[PART III.] execute the same according to the nature and tenure therof; and may bind  
 ouer psons for matter of crime to answare att the next ensueing Court of  
 his Ma<sup>tie</sup> after the fact comitted or the pson apprehended.

\*25

\*The Oath of an Assistant.

1636.

You shall all sweare to bee truely Loyall to our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord Kinge Charles  
 his heires and Successors; you shall faithfully truely and Justly accord-  
 ing to the measure of descerning and descretion God hath giuen you; bee  
 Assistant to the Gou<sup>r</sup> for this p'sent yeare; for the execution of Justice<sup>according to Law</sup> in all  
 cases; and towards all psons coming before you without psiallitie according to  
 the Nature of the office of an Assistant read vnto you Moreouer you shall  
 dilligently duely and truely see that the lawes and ordinances of this Corpo-  
 ration bee duely executed; and shall laboure to advance the good of the seu-  
 erall plantations within the lymett therof; and oppose any thinge that shall  
 hinder the same by all due meanes and courses soe healp you God whoe is  
 the God of truth and the Punnisher of falchood;

\*26

1636.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that att euery elec-  
 tion Court some one of the Assistants or some other sufficient man bee chosen  
 Treasurer for the yeare following whose place it shalbee to demaund and  
 receiue in whatsoever sune or sumes shall appertaine to the Royaltie of the  
 place either coming in by way of fine amercement or otherwise; and shall  
 Improue the same; for the publicke benefitt of this Corporation.

1644.

It is further enacted by the Court that the Treasurer shall att the  
 election Courts Annually giue in his accounts of his receipts and paiments for  
 his yeare to any that the Court shall appoint and to bee entered vpon Record  
 and thervpon to bee discharged;

1654.

It is likewise enacted by the Court that the Treasurer by vertue of his  
 said office shall take order that all debts due to the Countrey bee seasonably  
 brought in vnto such place or places as hee shall appoint that soe all dues and  
 debts due vnto any pson or psons from the Countrey may bee by him sea-  
 sonably and Satisfactorily defrayed except the publicke officers wages which  
 is otherwise provided for;

1658.

It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee in the libertie of the Treasurer  
 after a month is past after Judgment; by his warrant to require in any fine as  
 hee shall see reason.

\*The oath of the Treasurer.

\*27

You shall faithfully serue in the office of the Treasurer in the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth for this p'sent yeare during which time you shall diligently enquire after demaund and receiue whatsoeuer sune or sumes shall appertaine to this Gou'ment arising by way of fine Amercement Royaltie or otherwise and shall faithfully Improue the same for the vse of the Gou'ment and according to order dispose therof as occation shall require ; you shalbee redly to giue in a true account vnto the Court of youer actings in youer said office yearly att June Courts So healp you God ☩ ;

1659.

It is enacted by the Court that three men shalbee Nominated in the voates for Choise of Comissioners that soe incase of failing of either of the first two nominated in the voates, by Reason of some euident hand of God Impeding that then the third nominated to supply his place ;

1659.

\*The Oath of the Clarke of the Court.

\*28

You shall faithfully serue in the office of the Clarke of the Court for the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth You shall Attend the Generall Courts held for this Gou'ment att Plymouth aforsaid and the seuerall Adjournments therof; and the Courts of Assistants and there Employ youer selfe in such occations as are behoofull to youer said place and office ; you shall likewise attend such other meetings of the majestates of like nature as aboue expressed that shall or may fall out in the Interems of time betwixt the said Courts ; you shall not disclose: but keep secret such thinges as conserne the Publicke good ; and shalbee thought meet to bee Concealed by the Gou<sup>r</sup> And Councell of Assistants ; You shall faithfully Record all such thinges as you shall haue order from Authoritie to Comitt to Publicke Record and shall faithfully keep the publicke Records of this Jurisdiction Soe healp you God ☩ ;

1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that the Clarke of the Court shall haue twenty pounds p annum besides his ordinary fees allowed by the Court ;

1651.

\*The fees of the Clarke of the Court

\*29

allowed and agreed vpon by the Court ;

Imp <sup>r</sup> For euery Recognizance for the good behaiour four	} -	00. 08. 00	To the Cryer 8 <sup>d</sup> .
shillings takeing and four shill the releasing - -			
Item for euery Recognizance of the peace 2 shills the	} -	00. 04. 00	To the Cryer 4 <sup>d</sup> .
takeing and 2 <sup>s</sup> the releasing - - -			

[PART III.]	Item for a warrant of the peace or any other graunted by the Court	00. 02. 00
	for a warrant of the good behauior - - - - -	00. 04. 00
	for a Copy of an order two shillings - - - - -	00. 02. 00
	for an Inditement - - - - -	00. 02. 00
	for a Repleauine - - - - -	00. 02. 06
	for entering of an action - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for a warrant to Summon a Jury - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for recording a verdict - - - - -	00. 01. 06
	for an ordinary warrant from the Gou <sup>r</sup> - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for recording of a bargaine or gifts of house or lands - - -	00. 02. 06
	for entering of a bargaine of beasts or Cattle - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for drawing and entering a cobby of an euidence of land } graunted by the Court - - - - - }	00. 05. 00
	for registering of a Will - - - - -	00. 02. 06
	for registering an Inventory - - - - -	00. 02. 06
	for a supena for witnesses - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for entering a graunt of land by the Court - - - - -	00. 01. 00
	for a serch of an order will $\text{£}$ - - - - -	00. 00. 04
	for a cobby of a will - - - - -	00. 01. 00
	for a cobby of an Inventory - - - - -	00. 01. 00
	for entering a freeman - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for recording of a marriage - - - - -	00. 00. 06
	for recording Contracts for servants - - - - -	00. 00. 04
	for drawing vp or makeing of an execution - - - - -	00. 01. 06

\*30

\*The oath of the Cheife Marshall.

1652.

You shalbee reddey to attend the Generall Courts and their seuerall Adournments and the Courts of Assistants and alsoe the Court of Comissioners when they meet in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; and the Gou<sup>r</sup>nors pson especially att these Courts; You shall faithfully with what speed you may collect and gather all such fines and sumes of money you shall haue warrant soe to doe by the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his Assistants; and shall with like dilligence leuy the goods of any pson for which you shall haue warrant soe to doe by any execution graunted by the Court and that the same soe collected or leuied you shall with all Convenient speed deliuer into the Treasurer or the psons to whom the same shall belonge and shall serue all Attachments directed to you which shall com to youer hands; and shall pforme doe and execute all such lawfull Comaunds directions and warrants; as by lawfull Authoritie heer established shalbee comitted to youer care and charge without fauor or psiallyty to any pson

and shall take onely your ordinary fees allowed without exaction vpon any pson; and shall safely keep as head marshall all such psons as shalbee comitted to your Custody by the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his Assistants see healp ℥.

[PART III.]

Moreouer it is enacted by the Court that the Cheife Marshall haue power (incase hee see Ocation to require aide and assistance of any to assist him in the execution of his office; and the adminnestration of his s<sup>d</sup> office to extend to all places within the Lymetts of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment.

i658.

\*The Cheife Marshall is allowed twenty marke p anum for his wages besides his ordinary fees allowed by the Court;

\*31  
i652.

The fees of the Cheife Marshall;

Item for serueing an execution - - - - -	00. 05. 00
Item for his Journey about it two pence p mile - - -	00. 00
Item for serueing an Attachment - - - - -	00. 02. 06
Item for a Comitment - - - - -	00. 02. 06
Item for Imprisonment 2 <sup>s</sup> 6 <sup>d</sup> p day - - - - -	00. 00. 00
Item for euery action that is entered - - - - -	00. 00. 06
Item the one halfe of all fines not exceeding - - -	00. 06. 00

It is enacted by the Court that the Cheife Marshall shall haue 2<sup>s</sup> in the pound for gathering of fines ℥ if they bee not brought in by the pties themselues.

More of the Cheife Marshall see execution serued; and fines leuied.

\*The oath of the Vnder Marshall.

\*32

You shalbee reddey to Attend the Generall Courts and Courts of Assistants and doe such seruice as shalbee comaunded you by the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his Assistants; and shall reddily execute and Inflict all such sensures; and punishments as by Authoritie of this p<sup>r</sup>sent Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee Judged to bee Inflicted vpon any dillinquents and offenders, according to the Nature of all such warrants and mandates as shalbee directed to you without fauor or psiallitie to any pson and shall faithfully and safely as vnder keeper or vnder Marshall keep all such dillinquents malefactors and fellons as shalbee comitted vnto you and shall take onely your ordinary fees allowed without exaction vpon any soe healp ℥

i652.

The Vnder Marshall is allowed twenty Nobles p anum besides his fees allowed by the Court;

i652.

[PART III.]

1660.

It is enacted by the Court that the vnder Marshall shall haue twenty nobles more aded to his former wages to bee payed out of the Treasury and that for the future hee shall not expect any fees for the keeping of any prisoner saue onely to haue 2<sup>s</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> for Comitment and two shillings and six pence for Release as formerly.

1659.

It is enacted by the Court that all sentances and sensures that shall fall out to bee Inflicted by the Vnder Marshall viz: whipping stocking & stickmatising hee shall bee payed for the same ; by the order of the Court.

1646.

It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons shall henceforth cast contempt vpon the Marshall or any of his by reason of and conserning his said office shalbee fined to the vse of the gou<sup>r</sup>ment ten shillings for euery default ;

\*33

1658.

\*It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee lawfull for the Gour<sup>r</sup> or Assistants to presse any either trades men or others to bee Employed in the behalfe and for the vse of the Countrey as to prouide or repaire prisons stockes whipping posts or other Instruments of Justice and all such to be payed with current Countrey pay.

1658.

It is enacted by the Court that the Publicke officers wages shalbee payed in Corne ;

1658.

It is enacted by the Court that all Corne that shalbee <sup>deliuered</sup> ~~paid~~ in paying the publicke charges of the Countrey shalbee payed att one current prise ;

Att the Court of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> holden att Plymouth the 10<sup>th</sup> day of March 1675 Jonathan Pratt was established in the office of vnder Marshall and tooke his oath to p<sup>r</sup>forme the said office according to the Nature and in the p<sup>t</sup>iculars therof ; excepting puting to death ; of any offender which the Court did vnanimously engage to him that hee shalbe Clearly ffreed from ; and that they will otherwise provide for such executions when they shall att any time fall out ;

\*34

\*The Oath of A Constable ;

1636.

You shall sweare to bee truely Loyall to our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord King Charles his heires and Successors you shall faithfully serue in the office of a Constable in the ward of \_\_\_\_\_ for this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare according to that measure of Wisdome Vnderstanding and Discretion God hath giuen you in which time you shall dilligently see that his Ma<sup>ties</sup> peace Comaunded bee not broken but shall carry the pson or psons offending before the Gour<sup>r</sup> of this

Corporation or some one of his Assistants and there attend the hearing of the case and such order as shalbee giuen you ; you shall apprehend all suspicious psons and bring them before the said Gou<sup>r</sup> or some one of his Assistants as aforesaid You shall duely and truely serue such warrants and giue such summons as shalbee directed vnto you from the Gou<sup>r</sup> or Assistants before mentioned and shall laboure to advance the peace and happines of this Corporation and oppose any thinge that shall seeme to anoy the same by all due meanes and courses soe healp you God whoe is the God of truth and the punisher of ffalchood ;

[PART III.]

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authritie therof that the Constables in euery Towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall warne the Townsmen wherof they are to come together as they doe for other townes busines when the Comittees shall thinke it fitt ; as well to acquaint them with what is propounded and enacted att the Court as to receiue Instructions for any other busines they would haue done ;

\*35

i640.

Constables to warne townne meetings.

It is enacted by the Court that the Constable that liue remote hence in the further plantations shalbee freed from attendance att the Generall Courts after they are sworne except there shalbee speciall cause to retaine them ;

i639.

Constables freed from attendance at Courts.

It is enacted by the Court that all fines vnder forty shillings that shall fall in any of the remote townes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee leuied by the Constable of the Towne by warrant from the Treasurer which remote townes are explained by the court to bee Taunton Rehoboth Eastham and Bridgwater ;

i657.

Constables leuy fines.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any Constable within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment haue occation to goe out of the Townshipp wherin hee is Constable for some time hee shall haue power <sup>l</sup>to procure and depute another in his stead as his deputie to execute his place vntill his returne as effectually as hee himselfe might doe ; provided that the pson whom hee soe deputeth bee not one that hath serued in the place within two yeares before except hee bee willing and incase any Constable shall neglect to prouide and depute one in his stead as aforesaid to forfeit ten shillinges for euery default ;

i639.

by procureing is ment due satisfaction.

\*It is enacted by the Court that euery Constable of this Jurisdiction shall haue a Constable staffe wherby to distinguish them in their office from others and to bee provided by the Treasurer and to bee deliuered by the foregoing Constable to him that succeeds them yearly ;

\*36

i659.

Constable to haue a staffe.

Wheras some Trouble and Inconuenience hath arisen that some haue bine chosen to the office of Constable and haue rather chosen to pay the fine for

i660.

fine for not seruing as a Constable.

[PART III.]

merly Amerced (for such default) then to serue in the said office and soe the towne Nessesitated to make a new choise puting them to further Charge It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any man being chosen by any Towne to the office of a Constable and shall refuse to serue therein shalbee fined the sume of four pounds the one halfe therof to the Towne in which they are chosen ; and the other halfe therof to the vse of the Collonie ;

1643.  
Rators &  
theire Rules.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That in euery Towne of this Jurisdiction there shalbee three or foure men chosen by writing of their Names in papers as the majistrates are chosen ; to rate all the Inhabitants of their Towne according to their estates or faculties that is according to goods lands Improued faculties and psonall abillities whether the rates bee for any of the Townes in ptticular or for Generall Charges ; and by Improued lands are vnderstood meddow lands plowed lands and hoed lands the orders therein to bee obserued are these ;

first that the Constable shall Summon the Townsmen to come together and if hee neglect when hee is thervnto lawfully warned to forfeit twenty shillings ;

\*37           \*That if the Townsmen doe not come together vpon the Constables warn-  
2           ing and choose Rators the towne to forfeit fve pounds.

3           That if the Rators soe elected doe not make the Rate and Transcribe  
and deliuer or cause to bee deliuered a Coppy therof to the Constable within  
ten daies or sooner if the occation shall require to forfeit ten shillings a peece  
for euery such default.

4           That if the Constable doth Neglect to gather the said rates or cause  
them to bring it in within forty daies next after hee hath the said rate or  
sooner vpon speciall occation ; hee shall pay it himselfe and to bee recouered  
by suite ;

5           That the Constable <sup>is heerby Impowered</sup> ~~shalbe haue power~~ to distraine vpon any that shall  
neglect to pay his rate being demaunded and bring it to the place appointed  
by him and shall haue twelue pence for his paines about the destresse ;

Lastly That all fines and forfeitures which shall fall by the breach of any  
of these actes shalbee leuied for the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ;

1658.  
more of leuy  
of Rates when  
townes fined.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase any  
Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee fined that the Court shall appoint three men  
to make a rate to leuy the fine whoe shall proceed therein according to the  
rules sett downe in the orders about the rates of the Countrey as neare as  
may bee ; and incase such men as shalbee soe appointed to make the



rates shall neglect it they shall pay the fine themselves ; and such said rates as shall be made a Copy thereof shall be delivered to the Constable to be levied as rates for other Charges. [PART III.]

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authority thereof That it shall be lawful for the Governour as well to Impannell such his Majesties Subjects as are of good report and freeholders upon Juries although no freemen to do service thereon as well as such as have taken up their freedom. \*38  
1636.  
who may be  
Impaneled on  
Juries.

It is enacted by the Court that all tryalls whether Capitall or between man and man be tried by Juries according to the precedents of the lawes of England as neare as may be. 1636.  
all tryalls to  
be by Juries ;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authority thereof that if a Jury be Impaneled for tryall of causes and the parties agree afterwards ; yett they shall pay the Jury ; 1644.  
Jurys to be  
paid though  
parties agree ;

It is enacted by the Court that the Jury shall have six pence a man and the foreman twelve pence in such cases of Controversy as they shall go on. 1635.  
The Jurys  
fees.

It is enacted by the Court that at the entry of every action the charges of that action be defrayed before the action be entered. 1653.  
The Charges  
of an action  
to be paid  
at the entry.

Inasmuch as the Jury men for tryall of causes betwixt party and party have bene summoned out of the Towne of Plymouth and other townes neare therunto and by the frequency thereof it hath proved burthensome It is enacted by the Court that out of other Townes of this Jurisdiction the remote townes excepted as occasion shall require there shall be one man of every towne required to attend the Courts for such purpose whose names shall be specified ; in the warrants that are Issued forth for the warning of the Court ; 1661.  
Jurymen to  
be specified  
in the warrants  
that warne the  
court.

It is enacted by the Court That henceforth no summons be Issued out before the action be entered and the charges defrayed. 1661.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authority thereof That a great Quest be Impaneled by the Governour and Assistants ; which are to be chosen out of the severall Townships of this Governour according to order of Court ; and warned to serve his Majesty by enquiring into the abuses and breaches of such wholesome lawes and ordinances as tend to the preservation of the peace and good of the Subject and that they present such to the Court as are guilty that soe they may be prosecuted by the Court by all due means. \*39  
1636.  
The grand  
enquest how  
to be chosen.

It is enacted by the Court that all misdemeanors of any person or persons as tend to the hurt and detriment of societie civillity peace and Neighbour- 1633.  
matters present-  
able.

[PART III.] hood bee enquired into by the Grand enquest and the p'sons p'sented to the Court that soe the disturbers therof may bee punished and the peace and welfare of the Subject peacably preserued ;

i646. grandjury to view waights measures ladders &c.  
It is enacted by the Court ~~and the Authoritie therof~~ that the Grandjury men in euery Towneship shall once in the yeare ; yearly view all the measures waights and tole dishes in their seuerall Towneships and see that they bee lawfull according to order ; and that euery housholder haue ladders sufficient and p'sent the defects ;

i659. when grand-Jurymen to appeer to take oath.  
It is enacted by the Court that the Grand jury men in each Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; bee warned att election Courts to make their appeerance the fift day of that weeke to take oath.

i639. Course to bee taken with Idle p'sons.  
\*40  
\*ffor the preventing of Idlenes and other euills occationed therby It is enacted by the Court That the grandjurymen in euery Towne shall haue power within their seuerall Townships to take a speciall view and Notice of all manor of p'sons married and single dwelling within their seuerall Townships that haue smale meanes to maintaine themselves and are suspected to liue Idlely and loosly ; and to require an account of them how they liue ; and such as they find delinquents ; and can not gine a good account vnto them That they cause the Constable to bringe them before a Majistrate in their towne if there bee any ; if there bee none before the Celect men appointed for such purpose That such course may bee taken with them as in their wisdomes shalbee Judged Just and equall ;

i640. noe p'sentment but on oath.  
Repealed June i670.  
It is enacted by the Court that noe p'sentment heerafter shalbee exhibited to the Grand enquest to bee brought to the Court ; except it bee done vpon oath and that it shalbee lawfull for any of the Assistants or any such as are deputed ; To adminnester an oath in such case ; viz: it is to bee vnderstood on their owne knowlidge or others oathes ;

i656. none to bee condemned without two witnesses.  
Repealed June i670.  
It is enacted by the Court that any one that for the future shalbee p'sented to the Court for any fact on the Testimony of one witnes although vpon oath shall not bee for the same condemned without a second witnes or concurring cercomstances.

\*41  
i659. grandjury-mens wages.  
\*Wheras the Grand enquest is a place of great trust and concernment in the Comonwealth in discharge wherof is required expence of time and Charge It is enacted by the Court that the seuerall Townes of this Jurisdiction shall pay their grandjury men towards their expence of time and Charge att their seuerall Courts two shillings and sixpence a day and

nothing att the election Courts and that onely fitt and able p̄sons bee Chosen for that seruice ; [PART III.]

The oath of a Grandjury man ;

You shall true p̄sentment make of all thinges giuen you in Charge ;  
 You shall p̄sent nothing of mallice or illwill ; youer owne Councell and  
 youer fellowes ; in reference to this oath you shall well and truely keep Soe  
 healp you ſ̄c. i659.

It is enacted by the Court that if any shalbee chosen to serue on the  
 grand enquest and shall refuse to serue ; hee shalbee fined to the Collonies vse  
 the sume of ten shillinges for euery Court that hee is absent in the yeare for  
 which hee is chosen to serue and incase hee shall wholly exclude himselfe  
 all the yeare ; hee shalbee fined the sume of forty shillinges to the Collonies  
 vse ; vnlesse hee can giue sufficient reason to the Contrary vnto the Court ; i658.  
fine for not  
serueing on  
the grand jury

\*Wheras Complaint is made that the ffreemen are put to many Incon-  
 veniencyes and great expences by their Continuall attendance att the Courts ;  
 It is therefore enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof for the ease  
 of the seuerall Townes of this Goūment that euery towne shall make Choise  
 of two of their ffreemen and the towne of Plymouth of foure to bee Com-  
 ittees or Deputies ; to Joyne with the bench to enact and make such lawes and  
 ordinances as shalbee Judged to bee good and wholsome for the whole ; pro-  
 uided that the lawes they doe enact shalbee propounded one Court to bee con-  
 sidered of vntill the next and then to bee approued of ; except the case  
 requires p̄sent confeirmation and if any acte shalbee confeirmed by the bench  
 and Comittees which vpon further deliberation shall proue prejudisiall to the  
 whole ; that the ffreemen att the next election Court after meeting together  
 may repeale the same and enact any other vsefull for the whole ; and that  
 euery Townshipe shall beare their Comittees charges ; which is two shillings  
 and six pence a day ; and that such as are not ffreemen but haue taken the  
 oath of fidelitie and are masters of families and Inhabitants of the said  
 Townes as they are to beare a p̄te in the charges of the Comittees soe to haue  
 a voat in the choise of them ; provided they choose them onely of the ffreem-  
 en of the same towne wherof they are ; but if such Comittees shalbee Insuf-  
 ficient or troublesome ; that the bench and the other Comittees may dismise  
 them and the towne to Choose other ffreemen in their places ; \*42  
i638.  
Towne depu-  
ties.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That wheras the  
 Number of ffreemen in many places is but smale and the Inhabitants of  
 Townshipes many more whoe hauc equall voates with the ffreemen in the choise \*43  
i658.  
more of Depu-  
ties.

[PART III.] of Deputies whoe being the body of ffreemen representatiue together with the majestrates haue equall voates for the enacting of lawes whoe by weaknes prejudice or otherwise it hath or may come to pase that very vnfitt and vnworthy psons may bee chosen that can not answare the Courts trust in such a place ; That all such Courts as Majestrates and Deputies are to acte in making of lawes and being assembled the Court in the first place take notice of their members ; and if they find any vnfitt for such a trust that they and the reason therof bee returned to the towne from whence they were sent that they may make Choise of more fitt and able psons to send in their stead as the time will pmitte ;

1646. It is enacted by the Court that if any Townshipe in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment being more of Depu-  
ties. orderly therto required shall neglect and refuse to elect and choose Committees according to the aforesaid order That towne soe Neglecting or refusing to bee fined to the Gou<sup>r</sup>ments vse forty shill and euery Comitty soe chosen and makes not his psonall appeerance ; in the Court att the day appointed there to doe his seruice to bee fined twenty shillings vnlesse hee can shew a reason approued by the Court ;

\*44  
1646.  
more of Depu-  
ties. \*Wheras the seuerall Townes of this Jurisdiction were to send their Deputies which must arise out of the ffreemen to attend the three generall Courts of the yeare Now vpon the speciall complaints of the Deputies of the townes soe sent professing themselves to bee oppressed therby ; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritye therof That the whole body of ffreemen shall appeer att the election Court which is the first Tusday in June successiely and then to make or repeale such lawes orders and ordinances as shalbee found meet and wholsome for the ordering of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that then alsoe they p<sup>r</sup>sent such deputies as haue bine chosen by their Townes according to order formerly established whoe are to attend the same and its seuerall adjournments as the occations of the Countrey shall require ; and whatsoever lawes orders and ordinances shalbee made or repealed bee att that Court and the seuerall adjournments therof onely done except the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants see cause to call a speciall Court ; and other Courts to attend matters of Judicature and the majestrates onely to attend the same ;

1649. It is enacted by the Court that att Courts of election next after the when the Dep-  
ties business to be attended. choise and swearing of Majestrates and other officers the Generall occations of the Countrey wherin deputities are requisite bee attended except extreordinary occasion comes in the way.

\*It is enacted by the Court that the Court of majestrates and deputies shall haue power as to receiue accounts soe to giue allowance to any pson in publicke place for lose or damage hee sustaines as they shall thinke meet ;

\*45

i652.

majestrates &amp; Deputies power.

It is enacted by the Court that if any stranger or forraigner haue any occasion to comence a suite att any time betwixt the Courts for the tryall of a cause of considerable vallue ; hee hath libertie to purchase a Court for such a purpose if hee shall put in Securitie to defray the charge ; and that there shall not bee lesse then three of the Majestrates att euery such Court ;

i658.

a stranger may purchase a Court.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That an execution shalbee graunted forth att the end of one month after the verdict and Judgment is graunted and not before except the pty bee departed the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; and that when the marshall goeth forth to serue the execution the plaintiffe or his deputie shall goe with him to prise the goods soe distressed and if occasion shall require the defendant shall haue libertie to choose another man ; and the Marshall and those two shall apprise the goods or chattles soe taken ; but if the defendant doe neglect or refuse to make such a choise ; the Marshall shall choose a man on his behalfe ; and as they or any two of them shall prise the goods soe they shalbee then and theire deliuered vnto the plaintiffe or his deputie and the Marshall discharged ; and if the said goods come to more then the debt and charge amount vnto then the plaintiffe shall returne the ouerpluse vnto the defendant in Countrey pay within six daies next after hee receiueth the said goods ; but if the plaintiffe liueth out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; then hee shall fourthwith returne the ouerpluse or giue Securitie to the defendant to doe it within the said six dayes ;

i655.

about serueing an execution by the marshall.

\*It is enacted by the Court that all executions Issueing out of the generall Court or Court of Assistants shalbee executed by the Marshall onely ;

\*46

i645.

more of executions.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that it shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Majestrates or any of them to direct Summons to Any pson in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to answare to any suite comenced against them ; and it shalbee as Authentick as if it were done by warrant to Attach or arrest them ;

Summons Authentickall for appearance to answare a suite.

It is enacted by the Court that the Prison shalbee erected att Plymouth.

It is enacted by the Court that the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall allow fourpence a day to maintaine a prisoner Comitted for fellonie or misdemenor if they bee not able to maintaine themselues and to bee payed by the Treasurer and allowed vpon his accounts.

prisoners allowance

i646 2<sup>d</sup>i660 3<sup>d</sup>i663 4<sup>d</sup>

was aded.

[PART III.]

1636.  
stockes &  
whipping post.

It is enacted by the Court That in euery Towneship of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment there shalbee a paire of Stockes and a whipping post erected in such places as shalbee thought meet by the seuerall Naighborhoods where they Concerne vpon the penaltie of ten shillings for euery Townshipe that shalbee defectiue therin.

\*47

\*Capitall offences Lyable to death

1636.

Treason or Rebellion against the pson of our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord the King ; the State and Comonwealth of England ; or this Corporation

Wilfull murder ;

Sollemne Compaction or Conversing with the diuill by way of witchcraft or the like ;

Wilfull or purposed burning of shipps or houses

Sodomy Rapes buggery ;

1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That whoesoever shall comitt Adultery shalbee seuerly Punished by whipping two seuerall times viz: once whiles the Court is in being att which they are convicted of the fact and the second time as the Court shall order and likewise to were two Capitall letters viz: **A D** Cut out in Cloth and sewed on their vpermost garments on their arme or backe ; and if att any time they shalbee taken without the said letters whiles they are in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment soe worne to bee forthwith taken and publickly whipt ;

\*48

\*Offences Criminall

1645.  
against Carnall  
Coppulation.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That any pson or psons that shall Comit Carnall Copulation before or without lawfull Contract shalbee punished by whipping or els pay ten pounds fine apeece and bee Imprisoned during the pleasure of the Court soe it bee not aboute three daies but if they bee or wilbee married the one to the other ; then but ten pounds both and Imprisoned as aforsaid ; and by a lawfull Contract the Court vnderstands the mutuall consent of parents or gaurdians if there bee any to bee had ; and a sollemne promise of marriage in due time to each other before two competent witnesses ; and if any pson or psons shall Comitt carnall Coppulation after contract and before Marriage they shall pay each fifty shillings and bee both Imprisoned during the pleasure of the Court soe it bee not aboute three daies ; or else incase they cannot or will not pay the fine then to suffer corporall punishment by whipping ;

1639.  
against swear-  
ing.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that whosoever shall prophanly sweare or curse by the name of God or any of his Atributes

word or workes hee or shee shalbee sett in the Stockes soe it exceed not three  
 houres or bee put in prison according to the Nature and qualitie of the pson ;

[PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall steale or attempt to steale  
 shippes boates munition or ~~other things~~ it bee Accounted felonie and soe to  
 bee Punished ;

against steal-  
 ing. 1639.

It is enacted by the Court that such as either drinke drunke in their  
 psons or suffer any to drinke drunke in their houses ; bee enquired into  
 amongst other misdemeanors and according Punished or fined or both att the  
 descretion of the majestrate ;

1639.  
 more of drunk-  
 enes.  
 See the law  
 about ordinary  
 keepers.

\*It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever seruant or apprentice or  
 labourer shall ployne or steale or Imbezell his masters goods shall make  
 double satisfaction and restitution either by payment or servitude as the Court  
 shall Judge meet for the first default ; and for the second default ~~of the~~  
~~labourer~~ to make double restitution and either find surties for his good  
 behavior or bee whipt ;

\*49  
 1645.  
 against ser-  
 vants & ployn-  
 ing.

Wheras Complaint is made that some haue brought Cards into some  
 Townes of this Jurisdiction wherby seuerall psons ; mens both servants  
 and Children haue bine drawne together to spend their time in playing att  
 such vnlawfull games to the coruping of youth with other sad consequences  
 that may fall by the pmision of such practises ; It is enacted by the Court  
 and the Authoritie therof That whosoever shall bring into this Jurisdiction  
 or keep in his house any Cards for such purposes as aforesaid or shall suffer  
 any to play att Cards or Dice att any time in his house or where hee hath to  
 doe ; or any that shalbee acters att such vnlawfull Games shalbee fined for  
 the same forty shillings and for such as are servants or children that shall  
 play att Cards or Dice for the first offence to bee corrected att the descretion  
 of their parents or masters ; and for the second offence to bee publickly whipt ;

1655.  
 against play-  
 ing att Cards  
 & Dice.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that euery pson of  
 the age of descretion (which is acoumpted sixteen yeares) whoe shall wittingly  
 or willingly make or publish any lye which may bee pnisious to the publicke  
 weale or tending to the damage or hurt of any pticulare pson or with Intent  
 to deceiue or abuse the people with falce newes or reports shalbee fined for  
 euery default ten shillings ; and if the pty bee vnable to pay ; then to bee sett  
 in the Stockes soe longe as the court shall thinke meet ;

1660.  
 against lying.

\*Wheras some abuses haue formerly broken out amongst vs by disguising  
 wearing visors and strange apparrell to laciuiouse ends and purposes ; It is

\*50  
 1645.

against wear-  
ing visors &c.

therefore enacted by the court and the Authoritie therof That if any pson or psons shall heerafter vse any such disguisment visors strange apparrell or the like to such laciuous and euill ends and Intents and bee therof convicted by due course of law shall pay fifty shillings for the first default or else bee publickly whipt and bee bound to the behaiour if the Court shall see meet ;

1645.  
against wilfull  
burning of  
feuces.

It is enacted by the court that if any pson or psons shall wilfully and of sett purpose burne any mans ffence or ffences shall make good the damage or bee bound to his good behavior.

1645.  
against re-  
moueing land  
markes.

It is enacted by the Court that any pson or psons that shall plucke vp remoue or deface any land markes or bounds betwixt pty and pty that haue bine or shalbee orderly and sufficiently sett vp by psons thervnto designed ; shalbee fined from twenty shillings to fwe pounds according to the Nature of the offence.

1645.  
wilfull break-  
ing fences  
gates &c.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That any pson or psons that shall wilfully and of sett purpose breake downe another mans ffence or gate or bridge to the anoyance of either a pticulare pson or the generall ; shall make vp such said ffence gate or bridge att his owne charge and pay the damage therby sustained ; and bee fined for the first default fifty shillings and for the second default fined fwe pounds ; and bound to his good behavior.

\*51  
1646.  
against vnciuill  
takeing To-  
bacco.

\*Wheras there is great abuse in takeing of Tobacco in very vnciuill manor in the streets and dangerously in out houses as barnes staules about hay stackes and other such places It is therefore enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons shalbee found or seen heerafter takeing Tobacco publickly in the open streets of any Towne of this Jurisdiction or in and about Barnes staules hay-stackes Corn stackes hay yards or any such like places or out houses That euery such pson or psons soe offending shall forfeite and pay to the Townes vse for the first default twelue pence for the second default two shillings ; and it shalbee lawfull & by this acte warrantable for the Constable of euery Towneship without further warrant vpon sight and Information to distraine his or there goods for it which doe refuse to pay it vpon his demaund ; and to bee accountable of what he receiues yearly att the election Courts ; souldiers in time of exercice excepted ;

1633.  
1646.  
against vnde-  
screet fiering  
the woods.

Wheras many haue sustained great damage by the vndescreet fiering of the woods though Justly occasioned thervnto It is enacted by the Court that none shall fier the woods att any time but they shall giue warning therof to the Naighbors about them ; and the time of fiering them to bee from the



fifteenth of february to the latter end of April alsoe that if any pson att any time shall fier any of the woods ; and hath noe Just occation soe to doe hee shalbee fined ten shillings to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or bee whipt. [PART III.]

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that whosoener shall forge any deed or writing wherby any estate of lands either by Inheritance or for tearme of yeares shalbee pased and the right heires disinherited and shall produce and publish the same to such deceightfull ends and purpose and bee therof convict by course of law shall pay the pty greiued double damage and bee fined halfe soe much as the pty greiued recouereth of him ; and incase hee bee not able to pay it to bee publickely whipt and burned in the face with a Roman F ; \*52  
1645.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That if any officer or keeper of publicke Records or writings shall wilfully steale Imbezell or make away any such publike Records or writing soe comitted to publicke Record or keeping or shall alter any of them or any pte of them by Raising out or ading therto or otherwise ; shalbee disfranchised and lose his office and burnt in the face except in triuiall Cases ; 1645.  
against de-  
facing of  
Records.

It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons shall endeauor or goe about directly or Indirectly to Corrupt any officer keeping any publicke Records or writings to procure him to deface alter or Imbezell any such Records or writings shalbee fined according to the Nature of the offence soe it bee not aboue forty pounds or bee whipt ; against such as  
doe corrupt  
Register  
keepers.  
1645.

\*It is enacted by the Court that all such as deny the Scriptures to bee a Rule of life ; shall receiue corporall punishment according to the descretion of the majestrate soe as it shall not extend to life or limb ; \*53  
against deni-  
all of the scrip-  
tures.

Wheras there hath bine many Complaints for want of due maintainance for minnesters (as some haue reported) It is enacted by the Court that noe Pastoure or Teacher of any Congregation shall remoue before his Complaint hath bine tendered to the majestrates and they haue heard both sides ; and that vpon such complaints if there appeers to bee a reall defect in the hearers of the minnesters soe complaining ; the majestrates shall vse all gentle means to pswade them to doe their duty heerin ; but if any of them shall not heerby bee reclaimed but shall psist through plaine ostinacye against an ordinance of God then it shalbee in the power of the majestrate to vse such other meanes as may put them vpon their duty ; 1655.  
for minnesters  
maintainance.  
1655.  
Repealed  
Septem: 1664.

Wheras this Generall Court takinge into their serious Consideration the

[PART III.]  
 more of min-  
 nisters main-  
 tainance.  
1657.

great defect that either is or like to bee in seuerall Townshipes of this Jurisdiction for want of an able Godly teaching minnestrey and the great prejudice to the soules of many like to ensue and being desirouse according to our dutyes that such defects should not bee for want of due Incouragement to such as either are or shalbee Employed in soe good a worke of the Lord for his honor and the good of soules ; and in Consideration that inasmuch as the seuerall Townshipes graunted by the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment was that such a Companie might bee receiued as should maintaine the publicke worship of God there ; doe Therefore Judge that the whole both Church and Towne are mutually engaged to support the same ; and doe therefore order and agree \*That in whatsoeuer Township there is or shalbee an able Godly Teaching minnistry which is approued of by this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment That then foure men bee chosen by the Inhabitants or incase of their neglect chosen by any three or more of the majestates to make a Just an equall proportion vpon the estates of the Inhabitants according to their abillities to make vp such a convenient maintananc for his comfortable attendance on his worke as shalbee agreed vpon by the Church in each Township where any is with the concurrence of the rest of the Inhabitants if it may bee had or by the majestates aforesaid incase of their apparent neglect ; and that distresse accordingly as in other Just cases bee made vpon such as refuse to pay such their proportions which is in Justice due But incase there bee any other way wherby any Township doe or shall agree that may effect the end aforesaid this law not to bee binding to them ; To bee explained thuse ; That onely such pson or psons as refuse to beare their pte with the rest of the Church or Towne in due maintanance and support of Minnistry this law to bee in force onely to them but not vnto others that doe their duty ;

\*54

against villify-  
 ing churches  
 ꝑc.  
1650.

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever shall villify by opprobrious specces or tearmes any Church or ordinance being therof lawfully convicted shall forfeit and pay to the vse of the Collonie ten shillings for every default ;

against breach  
 of sabbath.  
1650.  
 this aded June  
 1670;

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever shall prophane the Lords day by doing seruill worke or any such like abuses shall forfeit for every such default ~~ten~~<sup>forty</sup> shillings or bee publickly whipt ;

\*55

against neglect  
 to come to the  
 worship of God.  
1661.

\*It is enacted by the Court That whatsoeuer pson or psons shall frequently absent or neglect vpon the Lords day the publicke worship of God that is approued of by this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall forfeit for every such default ; ten shillings ;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authority thereof That hence forth noe publicke meeting bee set vp within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment but such as the Court shall approue of.

1657.

Wheras complaint is made of great abuses in sundry places of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of Prophaning the Lords day by Trauellers both horse and foot by bearing of burdens carrying of packes & vpon the Lords day to the great offence of the Godly well affected amongst vs; It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof That if any pson or psons shalbee found Transgressing in any of the precincts of any Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment hee or they shalbee forthwith apprehended by the Constable of such a Towne and fined twenty shillings to the Collonies vse or else sit in the stockes four houres except they can giue a sufficient reason for their soe doing; and they that transgresse in any of the aforsaid pticulars shall onely bee apprehended on the Lords day and on the second day following shall either pay their fine or sitt in the stockes as aforsaid;

another against  
prophanation  
of the Sabbath.  
1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof That all such as refuse to take the oath of fidelitie as Quakers or such as are manifest encurragers of such shall haue noe voyce in choise of publicke officers in the place where they dwell or shalbee Employed in any place of trust while they continew such;

against Qua-  
kers.  
1658.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof

\*56

That noe Quaker Rantor or any such corrupt pson shalbee admitted to bee a freeman of this Corporation;

against Qua-  
kers.  
1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof; That all such as are opposers of the good and wholesome lawes of this Collonie or manifest opposers of the true worship of God or such as refuse to doe the Countrey seruice being called therevnto shall not bee admitted ffreemen of this Corpora- tion being duely convicted of all or any of these;

such as may  
not bee free-  
men.  
1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof That if any pson or psons that are or shalbee ffreemen of this Corporation that are Quakers or such as are manifest encurragers of them and soe Judged by the Court or such as shall speake contemptuously of the Court and of the lawes thereof and such as judged by the Court grosly Scandalous; as lyers drunkards swearers & shall lose their freedom of this Corporation;

such as shall  
lose their  
freedom;  
1658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie thereof That all psons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that are att their owne dispose and haue not taken the oath of fidelitie shall repaire vnto some one of the majestrates of this Jurisdiction to take the said oath; which if they shall neglect or refuse to doe; such pson

fine for not  
takein the oath  
of fidelitie.  
1661.

[PART III.] or persons shall be summoned to every election Court to make their appearance therat during the time of their abode in this Government; and if any such person or persons shall then refuse; to take the said oath they shall be fined; the sume of five pounds to the Colonies use;

\*57

\*The order of Court Concerning  
the Councill of Warr.

In Regard of the many appearances of danger towards the Countrey by enemies; and the great necessity of Councill and advise in which respect the Court thought meet to make choice of a Councill of Warr consisting of eleven persons whose names are elsewhere extant in the Records of the Court; which said eleven or any five of them being orderly called together their act to be accounted in force; and they to be continued in their places vntill others be elected to be orderly called together is ment being summoned by the Governour or Major or the President of this Councill or his deputie; or in case of their absence any two magistrates of the Councill of warr;

1653.  
1659.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That the Councill of Warr shall have power To Issue out warrants in his Majestyes name to Impresse such an Number of men and horses in every Towne as by proportion the said Towne is to sett forth and alsoe to Issue out warrants in said Majestyes Name to the said Townes for Armes and provision and all things Necessary for them; and what charges shall arise; to be levied on each Towne proportionable as other publicke rates and to give Commission to any Cheife officer vnder their Charge either in time of peace or warr;

1659.

The proceeding of the Councill of Warr in the  
Constituteing and Commissionating of a Major.

The Councill of Warr being Assembled doe hereby Constitute Impower and Commissionate you our Trusty and welbeloued frind I W to be as Cheife Officer ouer the milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction bearing the title of a Major and to acte therein as is provided by order of Court Annexed to your office; according to such Instructions as you have or shall from time to time receive from the Councill of Warr In psuance wherof all Captaines Inferiour officers and souldiers are hereby Required to be in Reddy Subjection to you during your Continuance in the said office which shall be vntill the Councill of Warr shall see cause to order otherwise;

1658.

Given vnder our hand  
and Seale T P President  
with the consent of the rest  
of the Councill of warr;

## \*Instructions for the Major ;

\*59

You shall take into your Comaund the seuerall Milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction both horse and foot and take care that they bee orderly Trained vp in the vse of armes.

I  
1648.

You shall take Care that armes be fix and seruicable.

2

You shall Carfully appoint such watches and Gaurds as may bee needfull for the honor and safty of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ;

3

You shall yearly appoint generall Musters or meetings of such Companies as can with any conveniency meet together and with the aduise of your Councell order the same.

4

Incase of any suddaine and vnexpected approach of an enimie or Insurrection withiu our selues you shall Indeaour to put those Companies into such a posture of defence ; as your selfe and such of your Councell of warr shall giue you Instruction therabouts ;

5

You shalbee reddy att all times to obserue and execute such further Instructions either respecting discipline or reall seruice as shall from time to time by the Councell of warr bee directed to you ;

6

You shall on all occations aduise with such as the Councell of Warr shall appoint to bee of your Councell ; and they for the p<sup>r</sup>sent haue chosen those heerafter Nominated ; ¶

7

See booke of orders and passages of the court ;

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That incase any Cheife milletary officer bee wanting in any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment such Township shall p<sup>r</sup>sent two or three p<sup>r</sup>sons of the fittest they haue for that place to the Court ; and such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons as shalbee approued by the Court shalbee established in such place and office ; and such Cheife officer to chose their vnder officer with the Consent of the body.

\*60  
1646.  
of the Choise  
of a milletary  
officer in euery  
Towne.

It is enacted by the Court that as the Captaine Leiftenant and Ensigne are established in their places by Authortie and approbation of the Court ; soe such Capt: Leiftenant and Ensigne shall not lay downe their places but by the consent and approbation of the Court ; vpon the penaltie of five pounds for euery Captaine fifty shillings for euery leiftenant and fifty shillings for euery Ensigne soe laying downe his place without the leaue and likeing of the Court and if any Captaine leiftenant or Ensigne shall neglect to traine their men on the daies appointed or shalbee neglegent in his or their places ; vpon proffe therof ; shalbee fined ten shillings for euery default ;

1646.  
fine for not  
serueing in a  
Capt. Leift. or  
Ensignes  
place.

It is enacted by the Court that the Cheife military Comaunder in euery

1642. Towne shall haue power to call forth men to exercise them in their armes  
 Chiefe mil- and to appoint daies of training and the sarjeants to giue warning therof and to  
 itary officers be done as oft as the Court hath appointed ;  
 power.

1640. It is enacted by the Court that all the milletary Companies within this  
 six daies train- Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbee trained at the least six times in the year ;  
 ing.

\*61 \*It is enacted by the Court that in the time of feare and danger and suddaine  
1642. assault of an enimie the cheife milletary Comaunder in euery towne shall haue  
 Chiefe mil- power to call the souldiers of that towne together and put them in a posture  
 itary officers of warr ; whose Comaunds euery souldier shall obey for the defence of the  
 power. Towneship and that they follow the directions of the milletary Comaunder of  
 that towne in keeping watch and ward prouided that the ordinary watch bee  
 sett and appointed with the majestraites aprobatation if there bee any.

more of Cheife It is enacted by the Court that the Cheife milletary officers in euery  
 milletary offi- Towne shall sett a fine vpon such as absent themselves on daies of training  
 cers power. if there bee not sufficient reason giuen for their absence prouided the fine  
1645. bee with the Consent of the Companie or the major pte therof and such  
 fines to bee gathered by the Clarke of that companie and to bee for the ben-  
 efit of the same ;

milletary offi- It is enacted by the Court that the milletary officers in euery Towne  
 cers see to shall see that the Armes of that towne bee fix and compleat for length and  
 armes. bore and p<sup>r</sup>sent those that are defectiue ;  
 1654.

souldiers must It is enacted by the Court that all and euery p<sup>r</sup>son within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment  
 bee subject to shalbee subject to such milletary order for training and exercyse of armes ; as  
 milletary or- hath bine agreed vpon and inacted by the Court ;  
 ders.  
1633.

The fines of such as are defectiue in their armes

That are wholly defectiue	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 10. 00
That want a peec	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 06. 00
That want a sword	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 02. 06
That want powder	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 05. 00
That want bullets	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 02. 00
<del>That want match</del>	-	-	-	-	-	-	00. 01. 00

\*62 \*The Guns or peeces allowed for seruice are these viz: musketts fierlockes  
 guns allowed and matchcockes see that they haue four fathom of match att all times reddy  
 seruicable. and for euery matchcocke Calliuers Carbines and fowling peeces see that they  
1642. be not aboue bastard muskett or Calliuer bore ;  
 This order as  
 it respects  
 matchcocks is  
 Repealed July  
 10: (77.)

It is enacted by the Court that every Township in this Government each township shall provide two sufficient fierlocke peeces two swords and two powches for every thirty men they have in their towne; and soe proportionable to their Number they are to sett out bee they greater and lesser; which shalbee reddey att all times for service vpon any occasion vpon such penaltie for every delinquent as the Court shall Judge meet according to the Nature of the offence;

Townes Armes.  
1646.

It is enacted by the Court that every Township in this Government shall provide a barrell of powder and ledd or bulletts answerable; to bee kept by some trusty man or men in every Towne that it may bee reddey for defence in time of need and danger.

Townes powder and shott.  
1641.

It is enacted by the Court that every pson both for him selfe and every man servant hee keepeth able to bear armes haue a peece powder and shott viz: a sufficient muskett or other seruicable peece for warr with bandoleers sword and other appurtenances; and that for himselfe and every such pson vnder him hee bee att all times furnished with one pound of powder and four pound of bulletts with foure fathom of match for every match-cocke muskett;

housholders to haue armes and Amunition.  
1636.

\*It is ordered by the Councell of Warr

\*63

That every Towne that shalbee defectiue in the want of a Drum att any time for the space of two monthes shall forfeit the sume of forty shillings.

1653.  
fine for want of a Drum.

It is ordered by the Councell of warr that every towne provide halberts for their sarjeants of their milletary Companie;

1653.

It is ordered by the Councell of warr that a Considerable Companie of halfe pikes bee provided in every towne att the charge of the township; viz: wher eighty men are; able to beare Armes; there twenty to bee provided and soe proportionable to their Number bee they greater or lesser;

1653.  
halfe pikes to bee procured.

The oath of a Clarke of a milletary Company.

You shall faithfully serue in the office of a Clarke of the milletary Company of £ for this p'sent yeare during which time you shall dilligently obserue such sett times of training as your officers shall appoint You shall keep an exact list of the Names of your Millitary Company; and take notice of all such defects as shall arise by the breach of any wholesome orders made by the said Company; and gather in all such fines as belong therunto and giue a Just accoumpt thereof to the Company or such as they shall appoint.

1653.

fine for not  
serueing as  
Clarke of a  
military Com-  
panie;

It is ordered by the Councell of warr that all such as are chosen Clarke of any milletary Companie of this Jurisdiction shalbee sworne; and any that shall refuse to serue as Clarke for one yeare shalbee fined twenty shillings and hee that is next chosen to haue the said sume;

\*64

The Gou<sup>r</sup> or  
3 assistants  
may presse  
horses.

1636.1644.

\*It is enacted by the Court that incase there shalbee need of horses vpon speciall occation for the Countreyes seruice It shalbee lawfull for the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any three Assistants to presse such and soe many as they shall see reason to Imploy provided that they take order that the owners bee payed for them; but if any such horse or horses miscarry in the seruice; the prise of such horse or mare to bee made good to the owner by the Countrey; and the horse to bee prised att his goeing forth.

maimed soul-  
diers to bee  
maintained.

1636.

It is enacted by the Court that if any shalbee sent forth as a souldier and shall returne maimed hee shalbee maintained competently by the Countrey during his life;

Scotes & Irish  
may traine.

1655.

It is enacted by the Court that all such Scotes or Irish as are in any Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall beare Armes and traine as others; except such as are seruants from month to month;

Smiths to  
mend all armes  
defectiue.

1642.

It is enacted by the Court that all Smithes within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment bee compelled to amend and repaire all defectiue armes brought vnto them spedily and to bee paid in wheat or butter and the Smith refusing to answare it att his prill;

\*65

a troope how  
to bee raised.

1658.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That a Troop of horse well appointed with furniture viz: a saddle and a case of petternells for euery horse shalbee raised out of the seuerall Townshipes to bee redy for seruice when required; and maintained for the purpose to bee raised as followeth;

viz: Plymouth -	-	-	3	Yarmouth	-	-	3
Duxburrow	-	-	2	Barnstable	-	-	3
Scittuate	-	-	4	Marshfeild	-	-	3
Sandwich	-	-	3	Rehoboth	-	-	3
Taunton	-	-	3	Eastham	-	-	3
Sowamsett	-	-	1	Bridgwater	-	-	2

1658.

In all thirty and three; and that all such shalbee freed from foot seruice and from watching and to bee redy by June next ensueing the date heerof on the penaltie of the forfeiture of ten pounds for euery towne that shall neglect;



Liberty is graunted vnto the Major to Admitt of soe many vounteers into the troop of horse as will make vp the Number forty eight ; the Comission officers excepted and all such to continew three yeares att the least ;

libertie for  
vounteers to  
bee aded to  
the troop.

i662.

Wheras the milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction are entered into a Regementall posture and therefore that the vse of Pikes is nessesarie ; and some alreddy provided for that end ; It is enacted by the Court that the charge of the said pikes shalbee borne by the Townes respectiuey ; and that notwithstanding this order ; That those that exersiseth with the said Pikes shall keep their other armes  $\text{£}$  fix and compleate soe as they may bee fitt for seruice ;

i660.

Concerning  
Pikes.

\*fforasmuch as Complaint is made that many Indians presse into diuers ptes of this Jurisdiction wherby some of the plantations begine to bee oppressed by them It is therfore enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that noe strang or forraigne Indians shalbee pmitted to come into any pte of this Jurisdiction soe as to make their residence there ; and for that end that notice bee giuen to the seuerall Sagamores to preuent the same ;

\*66

i660.

against strang  
Indians com-  
ing into the  
Gouernment.

It is enacted by the Court that wheras it is holden very vnlawful and of dangerous consequence and it hath bine our constant costome from our very first begining that noe p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons haue or euer did purchase rent or hier any land herbage wood or timber of the Indians but by the majestrates consent ; That if any psou doe heerafter purchase rent or hier any lands herbage wood or timber of the Natiues in any place within this Gouernment without the consent and assent of the Court euery such pson or psons shall forfeite fve pounds for euery acree which shalbee soe Purchased rented hiered and taken and for wood and Timber to pay fve times the vallue therof to bee leuied to the Collonies vse ; and in case that any Inhabitant of this Gouernment or other notwithstanding this order shall presume to purchase hier or any way appropriate or possesse themselues of any of the lands of the Indians without the Courts approbation and leaue ; although the fine or forfeiture cannot att p<sup>r</sup>sent be obtained yett the lands soe purchased or procured by any ; shalbe forthwith seized vpon for the Countreyes vse.

i643.

against hiering  
lands of the  
Indians.

this aded June  
i668.

In reference vnto the law prohibiting buying or hiering land of the Indians directly or Indirectly bearing date Ann<sup>o</sup> i643 The Court Interpretts these words alsoe to comprehend vnder the same penaltie a prohibition of any mans receiueing of any lands vnder pretence of any gift from the Indians without approbation of the Court likewise the prohibition of any English to giue powder shott Amunition horses or boates is Intended vnder the same tearme of Indirect selling vnto the Indians vnder the same penaltie ;

i660.

none may re-  
ceiue lands by  
gift from the  
Indians.

[PART III.]

\*67

1656.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof; That all Indians liueing neare any Towneship of this Jurisdiction shalbee strictly charged not to make any alarum in the night by shooting or otherwise vnlesse nessesitated thervnto; as they will answare it att their pill;

1656.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that noe Indian shall discharge any gun on the Lords day att any thinge to the breach of the sabbath and disturbance of the English as they will answare it att their pill;

1652.

It it enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that henceforth the Indians within this Jurisdiction bee not pmitted to doe any seruill worke on the Lords day as by fishing fowling hilling planting or carrying of burdens &c and if they doe after notice giuen therof; they shalbee warned to the next generall Court by the Constable of the place where they soe transgresse.

1639.

Repealed July  
1669.

It is enacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof that none shall giue trad trucke or exchange directly or Indirectly with the Natiues or Indians; other then Englishmens servants to giue or pay him mony Gould or siluer for the same vpon the penaltie of forfeiting twenty for one by him or her that shall soe doe;

1639.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall sell or barter directly or Indirectly any wine or strongwaters to any Indians vnlesse incase of sicknes or faintnes; and then onely with the consent or foreknowlidge of a majestrate if there bee any in the Township or in defect of him; with the concent and foreknowlidge of the Comittees or Grandjurymen of the said Towneship and but a smale quantitie; and for every default to pay five pounds to the Collonies vse.

1656.

It is enacted by the Court that henceforth noe one shall make sale of any manor of Barques or boates sayles or Riging to any Indian or Indians on paine of forfeiting that which is soe sold and ten times the vallue therof.

1656.

It is enacted by the Court that none shall sell any horse or mare coult or foale to any Indian or Indians vpon paine of forfeiting every such horse or mare coult or foale that shalbee soe sold and ten times the vallue therof.

1652.

It is enacted by the Court that noe pson within this Goufment shall furnish any Indian with any cask vpon the penaltie of the lose of the prise of the caske the one halfe to the Countrey and the other halfe to the enformer.

1639.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall giue trade trucke or exchange with the Natiues for any kind of milletary Armes; as guns of any

length or sort ; or any shott ledd bullets or powder ; or swords daggers rapiers or mend or reparaie any kind of armes for them shall forfeite twenty for one to the vse of the Collonie ; as much of this order as prohibiteth the selling of powder and shott to the Indians is repealed. July 1669. [PART III.]  
i660.  
this aded June  
1669.

And the like penaltie to them that shall lend any gun to an Indian ;

\*Wheras Complaint is made that many vnder pretence of hiering Indians for to bee theire servants for a month or longer time doe furnish them with guns powder and shott to kill foule deare &c It is enacted by the Court that whoesoeuer henceforth shall hier or Employ any Indian or Indians and furnish them with guns powder or shott or any one of them shall forfeite for euery such default forty shillings ; except they bee Indians that haue bin servants for diuers yeares ; and are in a good measure Ciuilliced and approued of by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants ; \*68  
i651.

It is enacted by the Court that noe man shall make any pticulare vse of any of the Indians lands without leaue of the Court ; i663.

This Court takeing notice that there is a very great defect of appeerance att the Generall trainings and that hitherto nothing hath bine done effectually in reference vnto the troopers for the gathering of theire fines ; June 1664.

This Court doth order that such fines as are by the troop settled for defect of appeerance att any Generall Training that vpon an order from the Major or the Captaine of the Troope the Constables of such Townes where any such defects are shall forthwith collect the fine in some good and current pay and soe much besides as may Transport it vnto the Clarke or some place that hee shall appoint for the receiueing of it ;

It is alsoe enacted by the Court that noe Trooper whilst hee stands listed in the Troope shall att any time put away or dispose of his Trooping horse vnlesse hee haue some other horse that is approued by some of the Comision officers of the Troop on penaltie of double the fine of non appeerance.

Morouer it is enacted by the Court That sufficient warning being giuen of a generall Muster ; noe busines or occations by sea or land ; if in the Countrey shall excuse non appeerance theratt ; nor any thinge but sicknes lamnes or Countrey seruice ;

It is enacted by the Court that if any one of the foot souldiers of any mililitary Companie of this Jurisdiction shall vnnessesaryly exempt himselfe from appeerance att the generall Trainings att the times and places appointed except incase of sicknes lamenes Countrey busines or the like shalbee fined fve shillings a day for euery day they shall neglect incase they can not giue a i662.  
i664.

[PART III.] sufficient reason therof to the milletary Comaunder in cheiffe and these fines to bee as well for the daies of marching out and home; as for the daies of exercise in training.

\*69

\*Att the Generall Court of Election held att  
Plymouth the 8<sup>th</sup> day of June 1664.

The body of the ffreemen of this Corporation being assembled it was agreed and voated by them that an addresse shalbee made vnto his Ma<sup>tie</sup> for the further confeirmation of our Pattent with as much conveniency as may bee; and for the management and ordering of matters conserning it both for the raiseing of moneyes and appointing of men to bee Employed therin The Countrey haue refered the same to the Court of Majestrates and deputies;

i664.

The body of the freemen of this Corporation being assembled in Court; haue ordered; and doe heerby declare their resolutions to maintaine their Just Rightes which for many yeares they haue bine possessed of in all those lands from Cape Codd to Saconett point with Pochasset Causumsett and the lands about Rehoboth to Patuckett Riuer and as farr vp the said Riuer till wee meet the Massachusetts line which crosses the said Riuer and thence to Coahasset as the line Runs;

i664.

And that incase any pson or psons bee seated or shall seat themselues within any the said lands or cause any cattle to bee brought within the said bounds or otherwise acte to our Treaspas without leaue from this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and not withdraw after warning giuen them; that then some effectuall course bee taken for the remoueuall of them;

And for that end it was likewise voated by the said Court that letters should bee directed from this Generall Court to the Gour<sup>r</sup> and Councill of Road Iland for the asserting of our Just Rightes as aforesaid; and that they would Employ their interest ouer such to reclaime them as haue thrust in vpon vs neare to Pochasset or elsewhere;

\*70

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all ordinary keepers or retaylers of stronge waters doe pay an excise of six pence a gallon for all such liquors as are made in the Collonie and drawne forth and retailed by them; and twelue pence a gallon for all such as they bring in or haue brought in vnto them from other ptes and eight pence a gallon for all wine that shalbee brought in and retailed as aforesaid and that those that are appointed in each Towne to looke after the law concerning excessiue bringing liqors into the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall alsoe take vp the excise; and to haue two pence a gallon for all liquors destilled in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and four pence a

gallon for all such as shalbee brought into the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and two pence a gal-  
 lon for all wine that is brought in and retailed as aforsaid and that all such  
 retailleurs or ordinary keepers shall; make payment of the said Excise vnto  
 those that are appointed to receiue it; att the same time that they bring  
 in such wine or liquors or that it is brought in vnto them; or giue a bill  
 vnder theire hand for the payment therof in some short time after; vpon  
 the penaltie of paying a fine of fiue pounds for any that shalbee brought  
 in and not excised or securitie giuen for the payment therof as aforsaid;  
 and if any one chosen shall refuse to serue hee shalbe fined forty shil-  
 lings to the vse of the Collonie;

[PART III.]

This aded  
June 8 (67.)

## The Names of the Receiuers of the Excise in each Towne.

Plymouth	John Morton	Barnesta.	Henery Cobb
	Wil <sup>l</sup> am Harlow		Nathaniel Bacon
Duxbur.	Benjamine Bartlett	Marshfeild	John Bourne
Scittuate	Edw. Jenkins		
	John Daman	Rehoboth	Leiftenant Hunt
Sandwich	James Skiffe		Richard Bullocke
	Thomas Tobey		
Taunton	James Walker	Eastham	John Done Jun <sup>r</sup>
	Francis Smith		Wil <sup>l</sup> am Walker
Yarmouth	M <sup>r</sup> Hawes	Bridgwater	John Willis
	Rich: Tayler		

## The oath to bee giuen to those that receiue the excise.

fforasmuch as the Court haue seen cause to order an excise to bee layed  
 vpon sundry thinges

You shall dilligently Attend the execution of all such orders in such  
 case provided and both demaund and receiue & giue in such sume or sumes  
 as shalbee due to bee payed by any the said orders; You shall faithfully keep  
 a true account of all such sumes as you shall therby receiue and faithfully  
 deliuer vp a true account therof vnto the Treasurer as hee shall demaund it;  
 according to order Soe healp &c;

i662.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That Inheritances  
 shall decend according to the comendable Custom tenure and hold of east  
 greenwich.

\*71

An<sup>o</sup> i636.  
Greenwich  
tenure.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all exchanges  
 giufts morgages leases or other conveyances of houses and lands shalbee

i636.  
all sales &c to  
bee recorded.

[PART III.] acknowledged before the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any one of the Assistants and comitted to publicke record and the fees to bee paied ;

1661.  
Wife to haue a thirds. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any man die without Will his wife shall haue a third pte of his Lands during her life and a third pte of his estate for euer ;

The wife must consent to sale of lands.  
July 6 1646. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That the Assistants or any one of them shall haue full power to take the acknowledgment of a bargaine and sale of houses and lands soe that they keep a booke therof and cause them to bee recorded with all convenient speed ; and that the wife heerafter come in and consent vnto and acknowledg the sale therof alsoe ; But all bargaines and sales of houses and lands made before this day to remaine feirme to the buyer notwithstanding the wife did not acknowledg the same ;

lands must pay debts.  
1633. It is enacted by the Court that if any dies more in debt then their estates of goods and chattles comes vnto if the psons soe deceased haue bought any lands in his lifetime to the Impaireing of his estate otherwise ; That the lands soe bought bee sold to make satisfaction to his Creditors ; but wheras a portion of lands is disposed to each for the subsistence of his or her selfe and family ; That such land remaine vnto the Surviuers him or her heires and noe seizure being allowed the creditor in such case ;

\*72  
1636.  
Children borne in the Countrey their priuiledge ; \*It is enacted by the Court that such children as are heer borne and next vnto them such as are heer brought vp vnder their parents ; and are come to the age of descretion allowed and want lands for their accomodations bee provided for in place convenient before any that either come from England or elsewhere.

1636.  
of lands engaged to ser-vants. It is enacted by the Court that whoesoeuer shall couenant to giue lands by Indentures ; to their servants att the expiration of their seruice shall make good the same out of their proper lands the countrey being free from any such engagement ; and therefore not to bee expected ;

All lands must be bounded. It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all townes in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; take course that the true bounds of euery of their Inhabitants land bee certainly knowne ; and sufficient bound markes to their pticulare lands on the penaltie of the forfeiture of ten shillings for euery such neglect the one halfe to the enformer and the other halfe to the Towne ; and this to bee done att or before the fifteenth day of     1659 ; and incase the Towne bee neglectiue they to bee liable to the fine of three pounds to the Collonies vse ;

It is enacted by the Court that where lands and tenements falls in Joynt ptenorship either by gift graunt or purchase or otherwise ; that if any of the ptenors doe die before the deuision therof shalbee made That the heires and assignes of such as shall soe decease shall not bee deprived of their Right title and Interest into such lands and tenements but shall haue his or their proportion ; as duely and equally as any of the surviuers or their heires or assignes any acte order costome and prouision made by this Court to the contrary in any wise notwithstanding as fully and amply as if deuision therof had bine formerly ; made ;

1643.  
of lands in  
ptenorship.

It is enacted by the Court that euery Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall provide a booke for the recording of such lands as are possessed by any for which they haue not euidence ; and all such shall bringe Testimony of witnesses vnto such as the Towne shall appoint to take notice of the said euidence ; which shalbee fiue in number of the same towne ; and what the said fiue or any three of them being mett together shall conclude of they shall cause the Towne Clarke of the same towne to enter the same into the towne booke abouesaid ; and to bee published that if any within the tearme of two yeares can make better claime they shall come in ; and incase none doe by the time prefixed ; that it may be brought to the Court Record and Recorded and soe shalbee reputed sufficient euidence for the future ;

1654.  
euery towne  
shall haue a  
booke to record  
lands &c.

\*It is enacted by the Court that any that are p<sup>r</sup>sented by any Towne in this Jurisdiction to any Majestrate in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to bee Surveyors or Measures of lands ; and such as are apointed to try and seale measures and all towne Clarkes shall haue an oath adminnestred vnto them by the Majestrates ;

\*73  
1649.  
all measurers  
of land &c to  
bee sworne.

It is enacted by the Court that there shalbee in euery towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment a Clarke or some one appointed and ordeined to keep a Register of the day and yeare of the marriage beirth and buriall of euery man woman and child within their towneship ; and to haue thripence apece for each pticulare pson soe registered ; and further it is enacted that euery father or mother and next in relation shall certify to the towne clarke or register keeper the name and day of the beirth of euery child soe borne in his house within one month next after it is borne or bee fined for euery such default three shillings the one halfe to the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and the other halfe moyetie therof to the clarke or register keeper vpon his complaint and that euery pson married shall signify his and her name with the day on which they are married vnto the said clarke or register keeper within one month next after his said marriage vpon the like penaltie of three shillings the one halfe therof to the

1646.  
TowneClarkes.

[PART III.] vse of the Collonie; and the other halfe to the said clarke or register keeper vpon his complaint and alsoe that euery master or mistris of the family in the which any pson dieth or pson next in relation to them soe dead shall giue notice vnto the said Clarke or register keeper; the name of the pson and the day of his said buriall and in defect therof to forfeit three shillings for euery default; the one halfe to the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and the other halfe to the clarke or register keeper upon his complaint; and that the clarke or register keeper of each Township shall exhibite a true and pfect Coppy fairly written anually att March Courts vnto the Court of the beirthes marriages and burialls of the yeare past; and lastly that the Clarke or register keeper of euery Township shall publish all the contracts of marriages and haue twelue pence for his fees for euery marriage as hee publisheth orderly;

\*74

\*The oath of a Towne Clarke.

i654.

You shall faithfully serue in the office of a Towne Clarke of the Towne of \_\_\_\_\_ for this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare and soe long as by mutuall Consent the Towne and you shall agree during which time you shall carfully and faithfully keep all such Records as you shalbee Intrusted withall; and shall record all towne acts and orders and shall enter all Towne graunts and Conveyances you shall record all beirtes marriages and burialls that shalbee brought vnto you within youer towne and shall publish all Contracts of marriages you shalbee required to doe according to order of Court bearing date the 20<sup>th</sup> day of October i646 soe healp you God;

i636.

Marriage must  
bee with con-  
sent of parents.

It is enacted by the Court that none bee allowed to Marry that are vnder the Couert of Parents but by their Consent and approbation but incase consent cannot bee had then it shalbee with the consent of the Gou<sup>r</sup> or some assistant to whom the psons are knowne whose Care it shalbee to see the marriage bee fitt before it bee allowed by him; and after approbation bee three seuerall times published before the sollemnising therof.

\*75

i638.

none may sol-  
licite to mar-  
riage on paine  
of fine or pun-  
ishment.

\*Wheras diuers psons vnfitt for marriage both in regard of their young yeares and alsoe in regard of their weake estate some practising the Inveigling of mens daughters and maides under Gaurdians contrary to their parents and Gaurdians likeing; and of maid seruants without the leaue and likeing of their Masters; It is therfore enacted by the Court that if any shall make any motion of marriage to any mans daughter not haueing first obtained leaue and consent of the parrents or masters soe to doe shalbee punished by fine soe it exceed not fve pounds or corporall punishment att the discretion of the bench and according to the nature of the offence;



It is enacted by the Court that if a motion of Marriage bee duely made to the master and through any senistery or Couetuous desire hee will not consent therunto ; then the cause shalbee made knowne to the majestrates ; and they to sett downe such order therin as vpon examination of the case shall appeer to bee most Just and equall on both pties ;

1636.

against couet-  
uouse masters  
that hinder  
there servants  
from marriage.

It is enacted by the Court that noe servant comeing out of his time ; or other single pson bee suffered to keep house or bee for themselues till such time as hee or they bee competently provided for of armes and amunition according to order of the Collonies and that if such bee yett wanting they bee provided for as aforesaid or else provide themselues such masters as may provide for them ;

1636.

young men  
must provide  
armes before  
allowed house  
keepers.

It is enacted by the Court that none bee allowed to bee housekeepers or build any Cottages or dwelling houses till such time as they bee allowed by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Councill of Assistants or some one or more of them and that this order bee strictly obserued ;

1636.

none to bee  
allowed house  
keepers but by  
the Gou<sup>r</sup> and  
Assistants.

\*It is enacted by the Court that noe servant coming out of England or elsewhere ; and is to serue a master for some time bee admited to bee for himselfe ; vntill he haue serued out his time either with his master or some other ; although hee shall buy out his time ; except hee haue bin an houskeeper or master of a family or meet or fitt to bee soe.

\*76

servants must  
serue out  
there time be-  
fore pmitted to  
keep house.

1638.

It is enacted by the Court That noe pson or psons shalbee admitted heerafter to liue and Inhabite within the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of New Plymouth without the leaue and likeing of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the Assistants att least:

1636.

none may bee  
admitted into  
the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment  
without the  
likeing of the  
majestrates.

The oath of Any resideing in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment.

You shalbee truely Loyall to our Sou<sup>r</sup> Lord y<sup>e</sup> Kinge his heires and Successors ; and wheras you make Choise att Present to reside within the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of New Plymouth ; you shall not doe or cause to bee done any acte or actes directly or Indirectly by land or water that shall or may tend to the destruction or ouerthrow of the whole or any of the seuerall plantations or Townshipes within the said Gou<sup>r</sup>ment That are or shalbee orderly erected and established ; but shall Contrarywise hinder oppose and discour such Intents and purposes as tend therunto to the Gou<sup>r</sup> for the time being or some one of the Assistants with all Convenient speed You shall alsoe submitt vnto and obey all such good and wholsom lawes ordinances and officers as are or shalbee established within the limetts therof Soe heelp you God whoe is the God of truth and the punisher of ffalchood ;

The oath of  
fidelitie.

1636.

\*77  
1661.  
penaltie of re-  
fusing to take  
the oath of  
fidelitie.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all psons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that are att their owne dispose and haue not taken the oath of fidelitie shall repaire vnto some one of the majestrates of this Jurisdiction to take the said oath; which if they shall neglect or refuse to doe such pson or psons shalbee summoned to euery election Court to make their appeerance theratt during the time of their abode in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and if any such pson or psons shall then refuse to take the said oath they shalbee fined the sume of fife pounds to the Collonies vse;

1639.  
Townes liber-  
ties to make  
orders.

It is enacted by the Court that all Townshipes in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue libertie to meet together and to make such towne orders as shalbee needfull for the maintainance of good naighbourhood; and to sett penalties vpon delinquents; prouided their orders bee not repugnant nor Infringe any publicke actes; and the fines and penalties shalbee disposed of afterwards to their pticulare townshipes;

1639.  
more of townes  
liberties.

Wheras the Townes within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment haue formerly had libertie to meet together to make some Towne orders which are thought to bee defectiue for that they conceiued they had not power to make assesments rates and taxes for raising such nessesary expences as shalbee disbursed about the generall occations of the Towne concerning the Comonwealth It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that euery Township shall haue libertie to meet together and make leuies rates and taxes for their townes Charges and to distraine such as shall refuse to pay the same vpon warrant from the Court or Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of the Assistants;

\*78  
1642.  
none may  
bring in stran-  
gers without  
the towns con-  
cent.

\*It is enacted by the Court that if heerafter any Inhabitant or Inhabitants of any towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall receiue or bring in any pson or psons as is apparently likely to bee chargable to the township; against whom Just exception is made att the time of his coming or within a month after; & without the consent and assent of the Townsmen in a lawfull generall townmeeting the ptie or pties that soe receiued or brought them shall discharge the towne of them;

1642.  
of deseased  
psons coming  
out of England  
or othwise &  
concerning  
their main-  
tainance.

It is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons Coming out of England or elsewhere bring any pson or psons whoe by reason of Impotencye disease or otherwise is apparently likely to bee Chargable to the place where hee shall come to Inhabite; the pson or psons soe bringing in any pson or psons shall discharge the township of them during the time of the deseaseds abode there but incase any Inhabitant within this Collonie shall bringe ouer from England or elsewhere or procure to bee sent to them any servant or ser-

vants which by Gods prouidence shall fall deseased lame or Impotent by the way or after they come heer they shalbee maintained and prouided for by their said Masters during the time of their seruice and couenants although their said masters release them out of their said seruice; and afterwards to bee releued by the townshipe where hee liues. [PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court; that if any Children or elder psons shalbee sent or come from one towne to another to bee Nursed Scooled or otherwise educated or to a Phisition or Chirurgion to bee Cured of any desease or wound &c and come to stand in need of releife; they shalbee releued and maintained by the townshipes whence they came or were sent from; and not by that township where they are soe nursed educated or att cure and incase they come or bee sent from any place out of this Collonie then if the nurse ducator or Phisition or Chirurgion; take not sufficient Securitie of the psons to bee nursed educated or att cure; to discharge [the township] of and from all cost or charge which shall or may come and befall the said Township in which hee and they is soe to bee nursed educated or cured; that they the said Nurse educator Phisition or Chirurgion; as neglecteth the same shall discharge the township of them; them selues; i642.  
more of psons  
likly to bee  
chargable.

\*It is enacted by the Court that euery pson that liueth and is quietly settled in any Township of this Gou'ment; and not excepted against within the Compas of three montes after his coming; in this case shalbee reputed an Inhabitant of this place; \*79  
i642.  
whoe are to  
bee reputed  
Inhabitants of  
townes.

Wheras it was enacted as abouesaid that a pson quietly settled in any towne of this Gou'ment &c the space of three monthes should bee reputed an Inhabitant there; It is enacted by the Court; that that acte shalbee construed onely to haue relation to poor psons; and it is alsoe prouided that that acte shall not any wayes enable any pson to bee reputed an Inhabitant in any Township within this Gou'ment that shall or doth refuse to take the oath of fidelitie &c although hee hath bine resedent there for some time; i644.  
The former  
order about  
towne dwellers  
explained.

It is ordered by the Court that those that haue releife from the townes where they liue; and haue children and doe not Employ them that then it shalbee lawfull for the Township to take order that those Children bee put to worke in fitting Employment according to their strength and abillitie or placed out by the townes. i64i.  
about poor  
children.

Wheras it is obserued that there are diuers psons in this Gou'ment which are not able to prouide Competent and convenient food and rayment for their Children; wherby it is that poor children are exposed vnto great want and extremitie i658.  
more about  
poor people &  
their children.

[PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that two or three men shalbee chosen in euery township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment That all such as are not able to prouide nessesary and convenient food and clothing for their Children and will not dispose of them; themselues soe as they may bee better prouided for; such said children shalbee disposed of by the said men soe appointed as they shall see meet soe as they may bee comfortably prouided for in the premises; and the seuerall townes shall returne the names of such men as shalbee deputed and chosen to the Court;

\*80  
i642.  
of prouision  
for y<sup>e</sup> Poor.

\*It is enacted by the Court that euery Township within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall make competent prouision for the maintainance of their poor according as they shall find most convenient and suitable for themselues by an order and generall agreement amongst them; in a publicke Towne meeting;

of townes  
bounds.

It is enacted by the Court that the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants shall appoint some to sett forth the bounds of Townshipes as formerly they haue done;

i639.  
of highwaies.

It is enacted by the Court that if an highway bee wanting in any Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment vpon complaint That then the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of the Assistants Impanell a Jury and vpon oath charge them to lay out such waies both for horse and foot as in consience they shall find most beneficiall for the Comonwealth and as little p<sup>r</sup>judiciall to pticulares as may bee; and that all old foot pathes shalbee still allowed except other prouision bee orderly made; and that where there are allowed foot pathes ouer any mans ground which is fenced vp; the owners of such ffences shall make sufficient stiles or gates.

i644.  
i646.  
Survey of high-  
waies.

It is enacted by the Court That the Surveyors of highwaies shall giue three daies warneing to the teames and other pticulare p<sup>r</sup>sons when they are to amend the highwaies as often as need shall require prouided they doe not warne one Teame or one p<sup>r</sup>son twice; before they haue gon ouer all the Teames and p<sup>r</sup>sons in their Townshipe; and if any bee warned as aforesaid and shall neglect hee shalbee fined three shillings a day; and for euery Teame soe warned that shall neglect eight shillings a day; and that the Surveyors of such Townes where such neglect is shall returne their names to the next majestrate that by warrant the said fines may bee required by the Constable of the Towne for the Townes vse; and euery Surveyor that shall neglect his duty in repairing the highwaies shall forfeite five pounds to the Collonies vse; and if it soe fall out that in the yeare all the Teames and p<sup>r</sup>sons haue not bine warned to the worke aforesaid that they bee all warned ouer before they begine againe; and that the Surveyors shall hier a teame or man and to bee payed out of the fine of him that is absent;

\*It is enacted by the Court that the will and Testaments of such as die bee orderly proued before the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants the next Court after the pty is deceased provided the court bee not within one month after the death of the Testator and a full Inventory duely vallued bee p<sup>r</sup>sented with the same before letters of adminnstration bee graunted to any; of all the goods and Chattles of the said p<sup>r</sup>sons; alsoe if incase any man die without will; then his goods bee by his wife or other neárest to him Inventoried and duely vallued and p<sup>r</sup>sented to the Gou<sup>r</sup> and assistants att the time foremen- cioned and if it be a single p<sup>r</sup>son without kinred heer resedent; that then the Gou<sup>r</sup> appoint some to take a Just Inventory of the same vpon oath to bee true and Just as in other the cases before mencioned;

\*81

i633.

of Wills and Inventories.

It is enacted by the Court that if any man being weake and sicke and otherwise of disposing memory to declare his mind and will concerning the disposing of his lands or goods before two or more of the ffreeholders of the place where hee liues; It shalbee vpon their oathes recorded and remaine feirme according to such devise or bequest.

i645.

Nuncupatiue Wills.

It is enacted by the Court that none shalbee suffered to retaile wine strong waters or beer either within doores or without except in Inns or victual- ling houses allowed; and that noe beer bee sold in any such place to exceed in prise twopence the Winchester quart;

i636.

of retaileing strong liquor wine &amp;c.

It is enacted by the Court that noe stronge Liquors shalbee sold in any place within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that shall exceed in prise three shillings a quart;

i659.

the prise of li- quors retailed.

It is enacted by the Court that noe Liquors shalbee sold in any pte of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that shall exceed in prise six shillings the gallon except it bee English speritts.

i663.

More of the prise of liquor retailed.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall sell any wine or stronge waters in any towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment being not allowed by the Court shalbee fined five pounds to the vse of the Collonie;

i663.

None may re- taile liquors except allowed by the Court.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That noe ordinary keeper in any Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall p<sup>r</sup>mit any single p<sup>r</sup>sons either children or servants vnder the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of parents or masters or any that are not housekeepers to buy any stronge liquors or wine in their houses or where they haue to doe without libertie from their parents or masters; vpon the penaltie of paying a fine of five shillings; for euery default.

\*82

i663.against single p<sup>r</sup>sons drinking in ordinaries.

Wheras great Complaint is made of Intollorable abuse in diuers ptes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment by the bringing in of soe great quantities of wine and stronge

i663.

Of serching boates for li- quor &amp;c

[PART III.] water by which great excesse is occasioned both amongst English and Indians ;  
 It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that whatsoever wine or  
 strong waters shalbee brought into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment by any boat barque or other  
 vessell or into any plantation by any Carrier Wagganor or boates master ;  
 they or any of them soe bringing in strong water or wine ; shall emediately  
 vpon their ariuall ; before they breake bulke or vnload giue in an Invoyce therof  
 to such pson or psons as the Court shall appoint thervnto vpon the penaltie  
 of forfeiting all such goods one third to the Collonie a third to the enformer  
 and a third to those that are appointed to Invoyce and serch ; and incase the  
 goods soe forfeited shall appeer not to bee the masters of the vessell or the  
 wagganors, the damage that shall acrow to the owners of such goods shalbee  
 made good by the said master or wagganor and incase any such goods shalbee  
 brought into any Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment by any vessell or waggon ; the  
 master or wagganor not knowing therof That then the forfeiture therof shall  
 fall vpon the owner of such said goods and incase any such goods shalbee in  
 any mans costody that is not Invoyced ; they or the vullue of them shalbee  
 forfeited as aforesaid ; and incase any master of a vessell or a wagganor shall  
 ariue att such times as the psons appointed to Invoyce are not att home  
 That then it shalbee sufficient notice giuen if the said master or wagganor  
 leaue a note therof att the house of the said pson deputed with his wife or  
 some other of descretion in his family ; and incase any master carrier or wag-  
 ganor shall haue cause to suspect any such goods may bee concealed in any  
 caske or sacke amongst other goods ; It shalbee lawfull for him to detaine it  
 vnder his hand vntill hee haue enformed the pson or psons appointed to take  
 care therof in whose power it shalbee to open and serch the same ; and  
 incase any shalbee found that hath bine so consealled It shalbee forfeited one  
 third to the Collonie one third to the master and another third to the sercher ;  
 Morouer all such as are appointed to Invoyce such goods are authorised  
 by the Court to serch any mans boate house or waggon for such goods  
 as occasion shall require and incase any shalbee found that hath bine soe  
 concealed It shalbee forfeited as aforesaid ; and that all such psons as shalbee  
 appointed to take Invoyce of such goods shall giue in an account vnto euey  
<sup>1</sup> of the Generall Courts ; That soe the Court of Majestrates may as they shall  
 see cause enquire after the orderly dispose of such wines or strong liquors  
 wherein if they haue not a satisfactory answare they may inflict such suitable  
 penaltie by fine or otherwise on such abusiue disorderly disposers therof as  
 they may Judge requisett for remedy of that abuse ;

See a further  
 apendix or  
 adition to this  
 order the 23  
 page forward  
 in this booke.

this aded July  
 10<sup>th</sup> 1677.

---

<sup>1</sup> The original law has here been changed by the substitution of the last five lines on this page as an amendment or addition, being written upon a slip of paper so pasted over the original as to conceal

\*It is enacted by the Court that none doe keep victualling houses or ordinaries or draw wine but such as are allowed by the General Court ; and that if any victualler or ordinary keeper doe either drinke drunke himselfe or suffer any psons to bee drunke in his house they shall pay five shillings a peece and if the victualler or ordinary keeper doe suffer any Townsmen to stay drinkeing in his house above an houre att one time the victualler or ordinary keeper shall pay for euery such default twelue pence ; and the pson soe staying aboute the said houre three shillings and four pence ; and by drunkenes ; is vnderstood a pson that lispes or faulters in his speech by reason of ouermuch drinke or that staggers in his goeing or that vomitts by reason of excessiue drinking or can not follow his calling The pson or psons that shalbee found guilty in these or any of them shall for the first default pay five shillings and for the 2<sup>cond</sup> default ten shillings to the Collonies vse and for the third default bee bound to the good behavior ; and if hee or they can not or will not pay the fines then to bee sett in the stockes and soe for the fourth time to bee fined five pounds or bee whipt and soe from time to time as often as they shall soe Transgresse ;

[PART III.]

\*83

1646.

against drunk-  
enes.

It is enacted by the Court that the Children or servants as dwell neare any victualling house bee not allowed Intertained or suffered by the Master of the said house there to drinke and spend their time but if any such can bee proued it bee esteemed a misdemenor pünisha<sup>be</sup> in the said victualler and to bee enquired into.

1636.

against chil-  
dren or ser-  
vants drinking  
in victualling  
houses.

fforasmuch as great inconueniencies haue bine occasioned by younge men and other labourers that haue dieted in Inns and Alehouses especially whoe haue had other houses to repaire vnto in the same Towne ; It is therefore enacted by the Court that none shall diett in Inns and Alehouses nor haunt them which are in the Townes they liue in ; nor make them the ordinary place of their abode ;

1638.

against dieting  
in ordinaries.

or obliterate a portion of the manuscript. A careful removal of this paper has disclosed to view the following paragraph.

[D. P., 1860.]

of the Generall Courts ;\* that soe the Court may enquire after and take due course for the preuension of such abuse ; and this court doth Impower the Majestrates to take such effectuall course against any that they shall find to transgresse in this kind ; as they may incase of other misdemenors ; and further this Court doth require all psons within this Gou<sup>ment</sup> ; that doe or shall still any stronge waters ; to give in account vnto the psons appointed thervnto of their disposall of them ; both of the quantitie and the psons to whom sold ; on the penaltie of his forfeiting the value of such liquors as hee shall not giue in a third to the collonie a third to the enformer and a third to such psons as are appointed to envoyce and serch ;

\*

\*84

1654.  
libertie to sell  
wine &c to the  
sicke though  
not retaillers  
alowed ;

\*It is enacted by the Court that incase of weaknes or sicknes of any pson or psons in any Towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; and that such as are deputed to draw and sell wine and strongwaters haue none It shalbee lawfull for any one that hath any such That they may sell it for such Intents and purposes as to releiue the weake and sicke notwithstanding any former order to the contrary provided it bee with the likeing and approbation of the majestrate if there bee any in that towne ; and incase there bee none that then it bee with the consent of the Constable ; of the Towne ;

1653.  
libertie for  
ffishing fowl-  
ing &c.

It is enacted by the Court That ffishing fowling and hunting bee free provided if any damage comes to any pson by the procecution of such exerceice ; restitution bee made or the case actionable but if any man desire to Improue a place and stocke it with ffish of any kind for his private vse ; It shalbee lawfull for the court to make any such graunt and forbid all others to make vse of it ;

1637.

It is enacted by the Court that six score ffishes shalbee accounted to the hundred of all sorts of ffish ;

1636.

It is enacted by the Court that one Comon Standard bee vsed by all for waights and measures and that according to Winchester which is the Standard of England ;

1652.  
standard  
for waights  
measures.

It is enacted by the Court That every Towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue a standard for measures of Corne made by those that are provided att Plymouth by a former order of Court for that end to try and seale there measures by which are to bee vniforme amongst them and to bee made round ; and these to bee made by the last of Nouember 1658 and to bee kept by the seallers of every Towne for the Townes vse ;

It is enacted by the Court

1637.  
of measurs  
and seallers.

That in every Towne within this Jurisdiction there bee one appointed to try and seale measures ; and to haue for every measure foure pence which shalbee tryed and sealled by him ; and onely round measures to bee alowed to by and sell by ; and that the seauerall Townes shall choose a fitt pson for each of them for sealler and to p<sup>r</sup>sent him to a majestrate to bee sworne ;

\*85

\*The oath of a Sealler of Measures

1661.  
The oath of  
a sealler of  
measures.

Wheras You are Chosen to the office of a sealler for the Towne of You shall during your continuance in your said office truly and ffaithfully seize and scale all such measures as are or shalbee att any time brought in



vnto you for that end ; according to such Standards as are allowed and [PART III.]  
 prouided by the Countrey Soe helpe  $\text{℥}$  ;

It is enacted by the Court that none shall sell by any vnsealed waights i645.  
 and measures which are not waight and measure by the Standard ; and that all must make  
the waights  
and measures  
to bee made  
according to  
the standard.  
 if any shall soe doe they shall loose such waights and measures and make  
 restitution to the pties soe wronged by such waights and measures ; and shall  
 pay to the Collonies vse for euery such default of falce waight and measure ;  
 for the first Time six shillinges for the second time thirteen shillinges and  
 foure pence ; and for the third time twenty shillinges and such waights and  
 measures to bee burnt ; and that a pile of waights according to Winchester  
 bee procured to bee the Standard ; and that the sealler shall haue for sealling a  
 peny for euery waight vnder a quarter of a pound ; and for all aboue a quarter  
 of a pound to six pound two pence a peece ; and for all aboue six to a hun-  
 dred pound foure pence ;

It is enacted by the Court that noe Miller within this Jurisdiction shall i638.  
 take aboue the sixteenth pte of a bushell for grinding such Corne as is brought of millers and  
grinding of  
corn.  
 vnto him to bee ground and that all Millers within this Jurisdiction shall  
 either grind there Corn sufficiently that is brought vnto them for that end  
 or else that vpon complaint to the Court therof and the thinge proued ; the  
 Miller shall pay for euery such default six pence for euery bushell to the  
 pty greiued and six pence to the Treasurer to the vse of the Collonie ;

\*It is enacted by the Court that euery Miller within this Jurisdiction \*86  
 shall haue two toule dishes viz: a quart and a pottle but to bee soe made that i645.  
 vpheaped they will hold noe more but a quart and a pottle by the measure millers toule  
dishes.  
 allowed and those to bee sealed by the last of Nouember i658 or else to pay  
 ten shillinges for euery month soe longe as the said Miller keepeth them  
 vnsealed ; and that all millers shall prouide Scales and waights to wey mens  
 Corne by ; as occation shall require ;

It is enacted by the Court that all such cask as shalbee made by any i652.  
 Cooper within this Jurisdiction shall haue the two first letters of his Name sett Caske to bee  
marked.  
 on euery such caske hee makes by a burnt marke ; vpon penaltie of the losse  
 of such Caske the one halfe to the enformer and the other halfe to the Countrey.

It is enacted by the Court that all Coopers within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; are i652.  
 to make all there Caske according to London gage vpon the like penaltie.

It is enacted by the Court that euery towne within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall i652.  
 choose a fitt pson for serching of Caske and packing of ffish and meate and  
 p<sup>r</sup>sent them to a majestrate to bee sworne.

1633  
 & 1659.

It is enacted by the Court that euery Constablericke haue a sufficient pound to Impound Cattle that shall transgresse any such orders as are or shalbee made ; on the penaltie of fine pound for euery towne that shall Neglect ;

1658.

It is enacted by the Court that euery pound keeper shall haue six pence for euery horse that hee Impoundeth.

1663.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall by pound breach lett out any beast or cattle lawfully Impounded shall pay a fine of fifty shillings for euery such default ;

\*87

1653.  
 vnruley Cattle  
 to bee Im-  
 pounded.

\*It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever damage comes to any by Cowes goates mares sheep or hoggs by breaking into mens pticulare Inclosures ; It shalbee lawfull for the psons soe damnified to Impound them ; and two sufficient men to view the damage which accordingly shalbee giuen and payed ;

1652.  
 of sufficient  
 fences.

It is enacted by the Court that such ffences as are Judged sufficient against oxen and Cowes shalbee allowed sufficient against horses and mares ; and if any horse beast breake into any Corne or grasse ouer such sufficient ffence ; the owners of such horses shall pay the damage proued as if they were Impounded.

1655.  
 more of Cattle  
 Impounded.

It is enacted by the Court that incase any cattle horses or hoggs shall treaspas vpon any and bee by them Impounded ; and after they are Impounded they remaine foure daies after notice giuen to the owners ; and bee neither repleuied nor agreed for ; It shalbee lawful for them as Impound them ; to make publicke sale of them after publicke notice giuen to the Inhabitants of the towne of their Intension soe to doe ; and after damages satisfied the remainder to bee returned to the owners.

1633.

It is enacted by the Court that noe man shall heard his owne Cattle or other mens to the p'judice of any att or neare his or their house vpon their land but vpon due Notice and warning shall reforme it or the case bee actionable ;

1658.  
 Diuers orders  
 about horses.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that euery Towne within this Gou'ment shall haue some publick brand marke for their horses to distinguish them from other townes and alsoe some fitt psons appointed to take notice of mens publicke markes for horses and register them in a booke with their day and yeare which may bee the towne clarke and the said pson to haue four pence a peece for euery horse kind hee registreth.

That all psons that are resedent in any Township and haue horses goeing there ; giue in vnto the said pson from time to time theire seuerall markes of theire horses with theire age that soe they may record them. 2

\*That if any horse kind being aboue two yeares old and noe marke wherby the owners of them may bee clearly knowne that the said pson soe deputed takeing notice of any such doe signify the same to the Marshall the next generall Court that soe hee may bee three times cryed with his age and couller ; and that if within six monthes afterwards any vpon due euidence can owne them paying all Nessesary charges hee may haue him ; but if in six monthes time none can owne him that then the said horse kind bee looked at as belonging to the Countrey ; and the Treasurer to take order to dispose of him for the Countreyes vse as the Countreyes stocke defraying all nessesary charges. \*88 3

That noe pson or psons marke any horse kind younge or old but before sufficient witnes that none bee wronged ; 4

That noe pson or psons take vp any horse kind soe as to send them out of this Gou'ment before hee or they carry the same to the pson deputed and soe euidence it to bee his or theires for whom taken vp and take a note vnder his hand and that hee shall enter it ; both day and yeare ; 5

That if any pson or psons shalbee found carrying any horse kind out of this Gou'ment without a note vnder the hand of the pty deputed aforesaid from whence hee came ; That the horse bee secured att the owners charge vntill a note bee procured ; and the pson that brought him bee fined fiue pounds to the Collonies vse ; If an Inhabitant ; but if a stranger not knowing the order ; the like penaltie vpon him that deliuered him ; if an Indian to bee publicly whipt by the Constable where hee shalbee taken with the horse. 6

That noe Indians bee pmited to course or take vp any horses except in companie with the English and that with consent and approbation of a majestrate if there bee any in that towne if not with the approbation of the Towne clarke ; 7

Wheras seuerall Complaints haue bine made to the Court by diuers of great wronges and damages by straying horses not onely of other townes but alsoe of other Jurisdictions and noe redresse this Court ordereth That all such psons whose horses soe treaspas and yett noe redresse or satisfaction tendered ; that the Township soe agreiued as they haue oppertunitie doe Impound the said horses vntill some due satisfaction bee giuen or Composition made for the Treaspas and alsoe all other due for theire Impoundinge ; 8

[PART III.]

\*89

\*The Markes for horses for distinctions of the Townes ;

ffor Plymouth a **P** on the neer buttocke  
 ffor Duxburrow a **D** on the neer buttocke  
 ffor Scittuate an **S** on the neer buttocke  
 ffor Taunton a **T** on the neer shoulder  
 ffor Sandwich an **S** on the neer shoulder  
 ffor Yarmoutha **Y** on the neer shoulder  
 ffor Barnstable a **B** ; on the neer Buttocke  
 ffor Marshfeild an **M** on the neer buttocke  
 ffor Rehoboth an **R** on the neer buttocke  
 ffor Eastham an **E** on the farr shoulder  
 ffor Bridgwater a **B** on the neare shoulder  
 Swansea an **S** : on the farr shoulder.

June  
1659.

It is enacted by the Court that if any Towne shall neglect to procure a brand marke by the last of July next for to marke horses according to order shalbee fined fve pounds ;

June  
1659.

It is enacted by the Court that evey owner of horses in this Jurisdiction shall take the first oppertunitie to marke and enter their horses according to order and incase any shall neglect soe to doe betwixt this and March next shall forfeite fve shill: to the Towne for evey horse found vnmarked ;

1661.

It is enacted by the Court that all stray horses or horse kind that noe pticulare can make any Just proffe that they are his or theirs shall appertaine vnto the Countrey ;

It is enacted by the Court that all such as take vp any strays that shalbee found and proued soe to bee they that take them vp and giue enformation conserning them shall haue one pte of three for their labour ;

1661.

It is enacted by the Court that the rules and waies to bee obserued for the tryall of strays shalbee by their age markes and Couller ;

\*90

Of Cattle treas-  
passing the In-  
dians.

1659.

\*Wheras Complaint is made that the Indians in seuerall ptes of this Jurisdiction liueing in remoue ptes from any townshipes ; haue receiued great damage by the horses and hoggs of the English ; It is enacted by the Court that it shalbee lawfull for the Indians soe anoyed by the horses or hoggs of the English whoe liue remote from any towne ; to bring such horses or hoggs of the English to the pound in the next towneship ; and there to bee kept till the owners take a course to satisfy the damage and such Indians to haue

twelve pence a peece for hoggs (if they bring them about eight Miles and alsoe that if any neate Cattle shall treaspas the Indians; it shalbee lawfull for them to Impound them that soe they may haue reasonable satisfaction. [PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court That none shall make sale of any boards planks or timber out of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that hath bine growing in any swampes that are reserued for publicke vse without leaue but shall onely soe doe of such as arise out of their owne proper grounds ;

i636.

It is enacted by the Court that for the preuenting of such Inconueniencies as may befall the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment by the want of Timber ; That noe man of what condition soeuer shall sell or Transport any manor of workes ; as frames for houses planks boards shiping shalopes boates canooes or what-soeuer may tend to the destruction of Timber how little soeuer the quantity bee without the consent approbation and likeing of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and assistants and if any bee found faulty heerin and shall Imbarque or convey to that end to make sale of any of the pticulares aforsaid expressed or Intended by this order the said timber to bee forfeited ; and to bee fined twice the vallue therof soe sold to bee leuied for the vse of the Collonie ; except what ariseth within their owne Township or pticulare lands ;

i626.  
prohibition of  
selling timber  
of the Gou<sup>r</sup>-  
ment.this clause  
aded i658.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall saw any boards in any place within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that is not in the bounds of any pticulare Township shall pay to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment one shilling and eight pence for euery Thousand to bee payed to the Treasurer for the vse of the Collonie and of timber and planke according to the proportion answarably ;

i652.

\*Whereas Complaint is made that much Timber is felled on the comou and lett lye and not Employed; and suffered to rott there; by those that felled it; and therby the Countrey much damnified; It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall or hath felled any timber on the Comon and doth not either square or riue it within halfe a yeare after it is felled; It shalbee lawfull for any other to make vse therof as hee shall see meet;

i658.  
against abu-  
sive felling of  
Timber.

\*91

Whereas sundry psons both Quakers and others wander vp and downe in this Jurisdiction and follow noe lawfull calling to earne their owne bread; and alsoe vse all Indeaours to subvert Ciuill state and to pull downe all churches and ordinances of God; to thrust vs out of the waies of God; Notwithstanding all lawes p<sup>r</sup>ouided to the contrary; Bee it therefore enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that with all convenient speed a worke

i658.  
of a house of  
correction.

[PART III.] house or house of Correction bee erected; That all such vagarants as wander vp and downe without any lawfull calling; and alsoe all Idle p̄sons or rebellious children or servants that are stubborne and will not worke to earne their owne bread and yett haue not wherewith to maintaine themselues may bee put to the house of Correction; and there bee Employed in such worke as shalbee there provided for them; and to haue noe other supply for their subsistence then what they shall earne by their labour all the while that they continew there; and alsoe that some faithfull man bee appointed by the Court to bee ouerseer of this house of correction whoe shall carfully obserue such orders as shalbee from time to time directed to him from the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of his assistants concerning any p̄son or p̄sons that may [bee] sent to him.

1660.  
more of the  
house of Cor-  
rection.

In reference to the puting in execution the order about the house of Correction; It is ordered by the Court that an addition shalbee erected of fourteen foot long of equall hight with the prison att the one end therof; with two chimneyes in it; one in the lower rome and the other in the vper rome with a yard before it fenced with a fence of eight foot high made of boards and the Treasurer is to take some speedy course for the doeing of it; and that a fitt p̄son bee chosen by the majestates to bee the ouerseer therof.

\*92  
1655.  
whoe are to  
bee admitted  
into the col-  
lonie.

\*Wheras it hath bine an ancient order bearing date March the seauenth 1636 That noe p̄son coming from other ptes bee allowed an Inhabitant of this Jurisdiction but by the approbation of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the majestates att least; and that many p̄sons contrary to this order of Court are crept into some Townshipes of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; which are and may bee a great disturbance to our more peacable proceedinges bee it enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any such p̄son or p̄sons shalbee found that hath not doth not apply and approue themselues soe as to procure the approbation of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the assistants That such bee enquired after and if any such p̄sons shalbee found that they either depart the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; or else that the Court take some such course therin as shalbee thought meet &c;

1658.  
of the cheife  
marshall his  
leuing of fines.

It is enacted by the Court that when the vper Marshall shall haue occasion to leuy any fine or fines hee hath libertie by this order to chose one to prise the goods or Chattles taken by destresse and the delinquent hath liberty to chose another if hee please but if the delinquent shall refuse to gitt another then the Marshall and him whom hee hath chosen shall prise the said goods or Chattles and incase they bee required by the Marshall to prise the said goods or chattles and shall refuse hee shalbee fined fve shillings for euery such default to the Collonies vse; and what expence of time and paines

any shalbee att in priseing such said goods or chattles hee shalbee reasonably satisfied for the same ; [PART III.]

fforasmuch as many p̄sons are greatly corrupted with the Quakers doctrines by reading their bookes writings or epistles which are sent and distributed into sundry places within this Jurisdiction ; It is therefore enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that incase the Constable or grandjurymen shall find or heare of any Quakers bookes epistles or writings hee shall seise on them and p̄sent them to a majestrate or the next Court. i659.  
of Quakers.

It is enacted by the Court that there shalbee in the seuerall townshipes of this Jurisdiction a Cage erected especially att Sandwich Duxburrow Marshfeild and Scittuate and that the charge of them shalbee defrayed out of such fines as shall arise out of the said Townshipes soe the charg exceed not three pounds. i660.  
of Cages.  
Repealed July  
4, i667.

\*Wheras by a former order of Court all p̄sons were required to giue notice to the Constables of their seuerall p̄sencts of all such p̄sons as were knowne to bee forraigne Quakers now this p̄sent Court doth enact that it shalbee lawfull for any Inhabitant within this Jurisdiction vpon their knowlidge and haueing oppertunitie ; to vse all such Indeaours to apprehend all such Quakers and to deliuer them to the Constable or bring them before the Goūr or some one of the Majestrates. \*93  
i660.  
against Qua-  
kers.

Wheras wee find that of late times the Quakers haue bine furnished with horses and therby they haue not onely the more speedy passage from place to place to the poisoning of the Inhabitants with their cursed tenents ; but alsoe therby haue escaped the hands of the officers ; that might otherwise haue apprehended them ; It is therefore enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof ; That if any p̄son or p̄sons whatsoever in this Goūment doth or shall furnish any of them with horse or horse kind ; the same to bee forfeited and seized on for the vse of this Goūment ; or any horses that they shall bring into this Goūment or shalbee brought in for them and they make vse of shalbee forfeited as aforesaid ; and that it shalbee lawfull for any Inhabitant to make seizsure of any such horse and to deliuer him to the Constable or the Treasurer for the vse of the Collonie ; i660.  
against Qua-  
kers.

It is enacted by the Court that any one that shall bringe in any Quaker or Rantor by land or water into this Goūment ; viz: by being a guide to them or any otherwise shalbe fined to the vse of the Goūment the sume of ten pounds for euery such default ; i660.  
against bring-  
ing in of Qua-  
kers.

[PART III.]

i660.

It is enacted by the Court that the Law Concerning not coming to our meetings that the fines shall not bee leuied vntill the Court shalbee in a capasitie to order otherwise ;

\*95

i661.

against enter-  
teining Qua-  
kers.

\*It is enacted by the Court that henceforth noe pson or psons shall pmitt any meetings of the Quakers to bee in their house or housing on the penaltie of being summoned to the next generall court and there being convicted therof ; shalbee publickly whipt or pay a fine of fve pounds to the Collonies vse ;

against vaga-  
bonds.

i661.i663.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that if any pson or psons shall come into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment That according to the law of England may Justly bee accounted vagabonds ; the Marshall or the Constable of the Towne wherevnto they come ; shall apprehend him or them ; and vpon examination soe appeering ; hee shall whip them or cause them to be whipt with rodde ; soe as it exceed not fifteen stripes ; and to giue him or them a passe to depart the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and if any such pson or psons shalbee found without their passe ; or not acteing according thervnto they shalbee punished againe as formerly ; and incase any Constable of this Jurisdiction shalbee vnwilling or can not procure any to Inflict the punishment aforesaid ; that then they shall bringe such psons to Plymouth to the vnder Marshall and hee shall Inflict it ;

of pressing  
messengers for  
y<sup>e</sup> countrey.

i658.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that incase there shalbee occasion to Employ a messenger in the Countreyes busines that it shalbee lawfull for any of the Majestrates ; to presse any pson or psons to goe on the Countreyes occations and to bee paid out of the Countreyes stocke.

i661.

all evidences  
to bee kept on  
file ;

It is enacted by the Court that henceforth all evidences and Testimonies that shalbee produced for the clearing of any case shalbee giuen vnto the Court in writing and to bee kept vpon the file ;

about woulues.

It is enacted by the Court that all woulues that shalbee kild by any English in any pte of this Jurisdiction they that kill them shalbee payed by the townes in whose precincts they are killed and such Indians as kill any woulues they shalbee satisfied by the Treasurer ;

\*96

i661.

about makeing  
ffish att the  
Cape ;

\*It is enacted by the Court that noe stranger or forraigner shall Improue any of our lands att the Cape for the makeing of ffish without libertie from the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and that all such as shall haue libertie shall attend such further orders as shalbee giuen them conserning the same and they shall pay six pence a kentle for all such ffish as shalbee made as aforesaid ; for the Collonies vse ;



It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that all ordinary keepers or retaillers of strongewaters doe pay an excise of six pence a gallon for all such liquors as are made in the Collonie and drawne and retailed by them ; and twelue pence a gallone for all such as they bring in or haue brought in vnto them from other ptes ; which they shall draw forth and retaile as aforsaid and that all retaillers and ordinary keepers shall twice in the yeare viz: in the month of May and in the month of october giue in to the Treasurer or his assignes a true account of all such liquors as they bring in or shalbee brought in to them and retailed as aforsaid vpon the penaltie of paying a fine of five pounds for any that shalbee brought in ; and not accounted for as aforsaid ;

1662.  
of excise vpon  
liquors.

this is other-  
wise ordered  
June 1664.

Wheras Complaint is made of some ordinary keepers that they doe allow psons to stay on the Lords daies drinking in their houses in the Intrimes of time betwixt the exercises especially young psons and such as stand not in need therof; It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That noe ordinary keepers in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall draw any wine or Liquors on the Lords day for any ; except iu case of Necessitie for the releife of those that are sicke or faint or the like for their refreshing on the penaltie of paying a fine of ten shillings for euery such default ;

1662.  
against draw-  
ing liquors on  
the Lord daye.

\*Wheras there hath bine much controuersy occasioned for want of a full and cleare settlment of matters relateing vnto such Whales as by Gods prouidence doe fall into any pte of this Jurisdiction ;

\*97

This Court doth therefore order for the preuention of any discontent or controuersy for the future and for a finall Issue and settlment (soe farr as in the Court lyeth) about the same ; That for all such whales as by Gods Prouidence shalbee cast on shore in any pte of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment or shalbee by any cutt vp att sea and brought on shore in the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment there shalbee for euery such ffish one full barrell of Marchantable oyle payed vnto the Countrey deliuered att Boston ; by such townes or psons as are Interested in the lands where they fall or shall soe cutt vp any ffish att sea ; and incase that any ffish bee soe considerably torne or wasted that a full quarter pte bee gone then to pay but halfe a barrell and for such Inconsiderable peeces of ffish as are lesse then halfe they shall pay Nothing ; and for the resedew of such ffish or the produce of them as remaines ; the Countreyes pte. being discharged It shalbee freely att the dispose of such Townes wher it falls or for the benefitt of such as cutt them vp if taken on drift without such bounds as haue bine formerly sett the same being still continewed ;

of whales.  
1662.

the Countreys  
due of euery  
such whale  
was altered  
from a hogs-  
hed to a bar-  
rell the 14<sup>th</sup> of  
June 1670.

The Court proposeth it as a thinge they Judge would bee very comendable and beneficiall to the townes where Gods Prouidence shall cast any

more of  
whales.  
1662.

[PART III.] whales if they should agree to sett appart some pte of euery such fish or oyle for the Incurragement of an able Godly minnester amongst them ;

i661.  
more of  
whales.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That whosoever taketh any Whale on drift att sea without those bounds and limites alreddy sett and bring them on shore hee shall haue the one halfe and the Countrey the other halfe ; and the Countrey to allow Caske for their pte of the oyle ;

i661.  
more of  
whales.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever shall find any whale on shore on the Cape or elsewhere that is out of any Townese bounds and is on the Countreyes bounds or limittes shall allow the Countrey two hogsheads of oyle cleare and payed to the Countrey ;

\*98  
i662.  
the sale of  
Kenebecke  
Ratified.

\*Wheras it is giuen forth that diuers are vnsatisfied about the sale of Kenebecke and that oppertunitie is p'sented vnto vs for the haueing of it againe the deputies haueing considered of the p'mises ; and finding noe way p'senting it selfe by the takeing of it againe fore the better advantage of the Collonie haue with one consent agreed ; and doe expresse themselues heerby ; that they ; desire not to meddle with it againe but doe ratify the sale therof ;

i662.

It is ordered by the Court that the Treasurer shall procure a booke of the Statutes of England for the vse of the Collonie.

i662.

It is enacted by the Court that the generall Training shalbee one yeare att Duxburre and another yeare att Yarmouth ; that is to say euery other yeare att one of those places for the future ;

fine for non  
appeering att  
generall train-  
ing.  
There is an  
adition to this  
order before  
in this booke  
see fines of  
troopers.

[see page 223.]  
i662.

It is enacted by the Court that if any one of the foot soldiers of any milletary Companie of this Jurisdiction shall vnnessesarily exempt himselfe from appeerance att the generall training att the times and places appointed except incase of sicknes lamenes Countrey busines or the like shalbee fined fve shillings a day for euery day they shall neglect incase they can not giue a satisfactory reason therof vnto the milletary Comaunder in cheife.

It is enacted by the Court that the whole troop of horse both they and the volenteers aded to them shall haue the same libertie that was graunted to those that were the first troopers viz: to bee freed from foot seruice watching and warding and likewise their horses to bee rate free ;

\*99  
i662.  
about Injuries  
done to the  
Indians by the  
cattle of the  
English.

\*Wheras Notwithstanding all orders that haue bine made for the preventing of wronge done to the Indians by the horses and hoggs of the English ; It doth appeer that the Indians liueing in remote ptes from any Towneshippes doe sustaine much wronge by the horses and that the English

doe sustaine much damage in their particulars thereby; the Court having seriously considered thereof and finding some Inconveniency in coming to a generall order about the same have thought good to propose it to the severall Townshippes of this Jurisdiction as a thinge much concerning them; that such Townshippes where such wronge is; doe speedily take some course within themselves about the same either by agreeing with the Indians to healep them to fence their Corne or by compounding with them to secure their Corne themselves where places are vncapable of fencing for want of stuffe or otherwise as shalbee found most suitable to their Condition to prevent future Inconveniencies that may come by their Neglect of the same. [PART III.]

Wheras the Court have formerly provided against the prophanation of the Lords day by vnnecessary Travelling on that day; and alsoe have provided against the setting vp of any publicke meeting without allowance of the Government this court doth desire that the Transgression of these orders may be carefully looked vnto if it may bee. and  
advertisement  
to obserue di-  
uers orders.

It is enacted by the Court that if any Indian or Indians shalbee found drunke in any Township of this Government that they bee fourthwith taken by the Constable of the towne and sett in the stockes and that if any Liquors shalbee found with the Indians; that it bee forfeite to the vse of the Government; and that it shalbee lawfull for any man to seize any Indian found drunke or any liquors found with the Indians and bring him or it to the Constable to be ordered and disposed of as aforesaid vnlesse any Indian shall make it appear that hee hath such liquors according to order of Court; and the said Indians that shalbee sett in the stockes as abovesaid shall defray the charge thereof which is two shillings and six pence a time for euery of them; i663.  
against In-  
dians being  
drunke.

It is enacted by the Court That euery Township of this Government shall haue a booke of the lawes of the Collonie; and that they bee read openly once euery yeare; i658.

In reference vnto such woulues as are or shalbee killd by the Indians the Collonie being out of stocke It is ordered by the Court that a pcell of Wampam in the Treasurers Costody may bee deuided and put into the hands of Leiftenant Freeman Leift: Hunt and the Treasurer; for the paying of the Indians fifteen shillings p head; they bringing in the head when they demand their pay and these men to giue an account this time twelue month of what they shall disburse on this account and if any of them shall disburse more then the peage committed to them; then they to bee repayed againe either by rate or otherwise. June i663.  
of payement  
for woulues  
killing.

[PART III.]

\*100

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof concerning the settling of New Plantations in an orderly way that Notwithstanding the graunt of lands to any pticulare p̄sons ; incase such lands lye soe remote as the Inhabitants therof can not ordinarily frequent any place of publicke worship that then noe p̄son bee admitted ; after the date heerof to goe to Inhabite vpon any such lands without such a competent companie or number of Inhabitants as the Court shall Judge meet to begine a societie as may in a measure carry on thinges in a satisfactory way both to Ciuill and Religouse respects ; and for the more comfortable carrying on therof ; It is further ordered that such p̄son or p̄sons as shall haue the graunt of such lands about such places and will neither att the p̄sent liue on them themselues ; nor sell nor lett them to others that would ; that then such lands not yett Inhabited att the begining or progresse of such societies shalbee lyable to bee rated in some meet proportion towards the defraying of such Nessesary charges as shall arise either on Ciuill or Religious respects as abouesaid especially respecting an able godly minnistry in such place or places ;

1663.  
an order concerning the settling of new Plantations in an orderly way ;

Alsoe for such places alreddy begun with an Inconsiderable Number viz: Saconeasett Accushenett &c That it bee comended vnto them to apply themselues in some effectuall way for the Increase of their number as they may carry on thinges to better satisfaction both in Ciuill and Religious respects especially that they endeauor to procure an able Godly man for the dispensing of Gods Word amongst them and for their quickening and Incouragement therein this Court doth order that all such lands as are within their respectiue places though not Inhabited shalbee lyable to bee rated in some measure of proportion for the defraying of such charges as shall nessesarily arise concerning the p̄mises ;

And for the quickening and Incouragement of the well affected in the Towne of Sandwich or any other plantation within this Goūrment whoe shalbee actiue that way ; This Court taking into their seriouse consideration the great need therof in euery plantation as to the propagation of the Gospell and flurrishing of religion ; the great and knowne end of our Transplanting into these p̄tes of the world as alsoe of the graunt of competent quantities of lands to the respectiue plantations and ; therefore according to their duties Incombent on them ; doe heerby declare their reddines to assist such well affected as afforsaid by puting forth their power (where there shalbee need) for the raising of comfortable and competent maintainance for such able faithfull men as shall be procured in such Townshippes and make it their worke to attend vpon the minnistry of the Word of God amongst them from all such respectiue Inhabitants as shall Inhabite any such lands ; according to such former order as by the Court is alreddy prouided in such case ;

It is proposed by the Court vnto the seuerall Townshipes of this Jurisdiction as a thinge that they ought to take into their serious consideration that some course may bee taken that in euery towne there may bee a Scool-master sett vp to traine vp children to reading and writing ;

[PART III.]

i663.

Septem: i664.

\*Wheras the Clarke of each Milletary Companie of this Jurisdiction is required to gather in all fines which are or shalbee belonging to their Companie It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof; that incase any shall refuse to pay any such fines as are or shalbee orderly Amersed The said Clarke is heerby Authorised by destresse to leuy all such fines by vertue of his said office without any further order ;

\*101

Septem: i664.

Wheras the Towne of Scittuate preferred a petition to this Court requesting that the Treasurers account may bee more particularly sent to the seuerall Townshippes of this Jurisdiction ; The Court haue ordered that henceforth att euery election Court any of the Townes aforsaid may if they please to send any meet pson to Joyne with others to take the Treasurers account ; and soe to acquaint their respectiue towns therewith in as particular a manor as may bee ; which wee hope may satisfy ;

It is enacted by the Court that the Constable of each Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>-ment shall gather in all fines that shall fall within his liberties not exceeding five pound ; and to haue two shillings on the pound for gathering them ;

June.  
i665.

It is enacted by the Court that all psons lyable to bee rated in euery towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment bee rated according to their visible estates and faculties that is according to their faculties and psonall abillities whether they are in lands both meddow lands Improued lands or dormont lands appropriated or in cattle goods or stocke Employed in Trading in boates barques &c: mills or other vizable estate ; but for the Incouragement of trafficke ; that it bee ordered that barques Catches and biger vessells may not bee rated about halfe their vallue ; dormont lands both vpland and meddow such as lyeth without  $\times$   $\times$  to bee rated for euery hundred acres according to forty shillings estate ; and if any pson lay downe any pte of his propriety to the Comonage of the Companie their associated together ; hee shalbee rated but for what quantitie hee keepes his propriety in ; and concerning stockes Employed in trading att home in and about the place where hee liues ; shalbee rated onely for two thirds of such stockes soe Improued as thuse one hundred and twenty pound stocke to bee Employed in trading shalbee rated for eighty pound and soe proportionable ;

i665.

Concerning dormant lands that the psons bee rated in such townshippes as the psons that owne them Inhabites in.

[1 out of townshippes. — vol. iv. 102.]

[PART III.]

\*102

\*Actes and orders made and concluded by the Generall Court of Majestrates and Deputies Assembled att Plymouth the eleuenth day of October i665.

i665.

Wheras in regard of the remote distance of our honored Gou<sup>r</sup> his former habitation and being ; the Countrey saw reason to desire and request his remouall vnto the towne of Plymouth for the more convenient adminnestration of Justice ; and that by Gods Prouidence hee is now remoued to his great Inconveniency and detriment ;

This Court haue ordered and doe vnanimously agree to allow vnto him the sume of fifty pounds p<sup>r</sup> annum soe long as hee shall remaine in the place of Gou<sup>r</sup> :

And wheras hee is resedent in a place purchased by the Countrey for that end ;

This Court haue likewise ordered that incase hee shall decease att any time while hee is in the place of Gou<sup>r</sup> and Inhabiteing the said seat or being ; that then his family shall and may without molestation continew in the said place or seat for the full tearme of one yeare after his decease att the least ; and likewise that incase there should bee any alteration that any other should bee chosen to the place of Gou<sup>r</sup> whiles hee liueth that hee shall and may notwithstanding remaine in the said place without molestation for the full tearme of one yeare after such alteration att the least ;

This repealed  
July 5: (67.)  
i665.

In reference vnto the more comfortable carying on of Gou<sup>r</sup>ment It is enacted by the Court that the Countrey proceeding on in their election of Assistants as formerly ; such of the old majestrates as shalbee chosen that they bee allowed each ten pounds a yeare and the charge of their Table defrayed soe many of them as shall serue in that place ;

And for such as shalbee chosen that haue not formerly serued that they bee allowed onely the charge of their Table ;

And incase any shalbee chosen and shall refuse to serue hee shalbee fined fve pounds to the vse of the Collonie ;

It is enacted by the Court that both that which is allowed for the charge of the Majestrates Table and likewise that which is allowed them by way of sallary shalbee Transferred into the costody of the Treasurer and that what is to bee for the charge of their Table it bee payed in specy according vnto former order concerning the same and wheras the sume of fve pounds therof was formerly to bee payed in money to the Treasurer as p<sup>t</sup>e of the said pay ;

that this yeare the said five pounds bee payed in money to bee raised out of the oyle that shalbee due to the Countrey; and the Treasurer to make vp the said five pounds vpon account in other pay in leiu therof vnto the Countrey; [PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court that in euery Towne of this Jurisdiction there bee three or five select men Chosen by the Townsmen out of the freemen such as shalbee approued by the Court for the better manageing of the affaires of the respectiue Townshippes; and that the sellect men in euery Towne or the major pte of them are heerby Impowered to heare and determine all debts and differences arising between pson and pson; within their respectiue Townshippes not exceeding forty shillings; As alsoe they are heerby Impowered to heare and determine all Differences ariseing between any Indians and the English of their respectiue Townshippes about damage done in Corne by the Cowes swine or other beasts belonging to any Inhabitants of the said respectiue Townshippes and that the determinations of the abouesaid Differences not being satisfied as was agreed; the pte wronged to repaire to some majestrate for a warrant to recouer such award by distraint;

i665.

It is further enacted that the said select men in euery Townshippes approued by the Court; or any of them shall haue power to giue forth sumons in his ma<sup>ties</sup> name to require any psons complained of to Attend the hearing of the Case and to sumon witnesses to giue Testimony vpon that account and to determine of the Controuersyes according to legall euidence and that the psons Complaining shall serue the sumons themselues vpon the psons complained against; and incase of their none appeerance; to proceed on notwithstanding in the hearing and determining of such controuersyes as comes before them; and to haue twelue pence a peece for euery award they agree vpon;

It is likewise enacted by the Court that such Indians as plant in any Township of this Jurisdiction that they shall secure their Corne by sufficient ffences from any damage that may come therunto by the Cattle of the English amongst whom they dwell; and for such Indians as shall plant on their owne land out of the bounds of any Township That the English are either to healep them in fencing their Corne or to satisfy for such damage as shalbee done vnto them by their cattle or beasts therein;

i665.

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof; That all matters of misdemeniors that the majestrates shall take cognizance of without p<sup>r</sup>sentment by the Grand enquest; they haue full power to proceed and determine therein by fine or otherwise as the nature of the offence may require as if p<sup>r</sup>sented;

\*103

i665.

[PART III.]

1665.

In asmuch as noe house of Correction is yett prouided in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to receiue and punish such as not onely liue Idlely and vnprofitably but are otherwise vicious and wicked in their carryage towards their parents or otherwise ;

It is enacted by the Court That any two maiestrates of this Jurisdiction haueing examined the case shall haue power to Centance such offenders to bee punished by stocking or whipping according to the nature of the offence ;

1665.

It is enacted by the Court that such as shalbee sentenced by the Court to pay any fine to the Countrey shall giue sufficient securitie vnto the Treasurer for the same before hee depart the Court and incase hee refuse shalbee comited vntill hee soe doe ;

1665.

It is enacted by the Court that any pson that shalbee supenaed to appeer att the Court as a witnes in a case shalbee payed two shillings and sixpence a day ;

1665.

It is enacted by the Court that a Constable bee allowed twelue pence for the serucing of a summons ; and two shillings and six pence for an attachment ;

1665.

Wheras complaint is made vnto the Court of great abuse in sundry townes of this Jurisdiction by psons their behauing themselues prophanly by being without dores att the meeting house on the Lords daies in time of exercise and there misdemening themselues by Jestng sleeping or the like It is enacted by the Court and heerby ordered that the Constables of each Township of this Jurisdiction shall in their respectiue townes ; take speciall notice of such psons and to admonish them ; and if notwithstanding they shall persist on in such practices that hee shall sett them in the stockes and incase this will not reclaime them that they returne their names to the Court ;

1665.

It is enacted by the Court that what Comissions haue bine formerly graunted by the Court to any to Purchase land for the Countrey bearing date about twelue monthes from this p<sup>r</sup>sent Court ; bee called in and bee of none effect as to future Improuement ;

1665.

It is enacted by the Court That in euery Township within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment there bee two sufficient woulfe trapps made betwixt this date and the first of march next and to bee constantly baited and dayly attended vpon the penaltie of five pounds on each Townshipp as are neglegent and defectiue therin to bee payed to the Collonie ;

1665.

It is enacted by the Court that noe master of a family shall make or cause to bee made within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment about the number of sixteen barrells



of Tarr for this following yeare vnder the penaltie of three shillinges p barrell forfeite to the Collonie; and euery single pson is heerby prohibited from making any Tarr directly or Indirectly for this following yeare vnder the aforsaid penaltie; and this order to take place from the first of march next ensueing the date heerof

[PART III.]

The order prohibiting the selling of Powder and shott to the Indians is repealed;

1665.

\*fforasmuch as That notwithstanding all former orders against abuse by stronge liquors; there is great quantities brought in; To the great prejudice of the Gourment

\*104

It is by this Court further enacted as an addition to former orders respecting Liquors That all strongwaters that are brought into this Collonie by priuate psons or for their vse shalbee excised as well as what is drawne in publicke houses; and for the Incurragement of such men as in each Township are or shalbee appointed to serch or enquire after abuse or breach of order respecting liquors the Court doth allow vnto them the one halfe of all such forfeitures and confiscations as shall arise in that towne by any breach of order respecting the same and the like allowance shalbee made to any other that shall discouer such abuse; and that they may more carefully attend their charge the Court doth require them to take oath to bee faithfull and carefull respecting the p<sup>r</sup>mises.

1665.

Wheras it is prohibited for any to sell trad or giue liquors directly or Indirectly to the Indians the Court conceiuing that if any Indian or Indians haue any; that they must haue it in some eregular way;

This Court therfore orders That if any man either English or Indian shall find any Indian or Indians haucing or carrying any liquors It shalbee lawfull for him to apprehend the said Indian or Indians and seize on the said liquors as stollen goods vntill the said Indian or Indians make it Justly appeer before some Majestrate or the select men of that Township of whom and wher and how they had the same and for their paines that any expend in the p<sup>r</sup>mises they shalbee allowed the one halfe of the said liquors soe apprehended or the vallue of it;

1665.

\*Actes and orders made and concluded the seauenth of June Ann<sup>o</sup> Doffi 1666.

\*105

**I**T is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That the warrants bee Issued out yearly from the June Courts for the bringing in of the rates for publicke charges of the Countrey; and the seuerall sumes to bee deliuered to the Treasurer or att Boston or att Plymouth as hee shall appoint;

1666.

[PART III.] by the first weeke of Nouember and the Constables to haue the receiptes by the foremencioned time ; and each Constable is heerby Impowered to presse boates or Cartes with oxen or horses ; and the boates Cartes oxen and horses to bee payed for fraighting and carriage according to the ordinary prise for carrying goods or corne vpon other occations for theirre naighbours and for the kinds of pay to accomplish this designe for the Countreyes occations the one third pte is to bee in wheate or porke or both one other third pte in barley or butter or both and the other third pte in beife Indian Corne pease or rye or any of these or some pte in Tarr provided it exceed not a third pte of the last third ;

It is enacted by the Court and the Authority therof That all debtes shalbee payed in the specye for which a man doth agree and that all damages which shall arise according to the Judgment of the Court vpon occations of debt defamation or Treaspas shalbee payed in any good currant Countrey pay att prise Current.

It is enacted by the Court and the authorite therof that henceforth nothinge bee entered vpon the Record of the Court respecting lands in reference, to exchanges morgages leases or other conveyances but such as shalbee vnder hand and seale before witnesses and that all such deeds bee exhibited to a majestrate according to order and that the said Majestrate endorse thereon and the same alsoe to bee entered and noe other.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all sales g[ifts] exchanges leases morgages or other conveyances whatsoever of any houses or lands heerafter made or to bee made which shall not be acknowledged within six monthes after the makeing therof before the Gou<sup>r</sup> or some one of the Assistants shalbee accounted null and void in law ; except such lands as by the Will or Testament of any man disposed which may not haue convenient oppertunitie of acknowledgmet therof before a Majestrate.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that there shalbee but three Courts in the yeare for the tryall of causes by Jury (viz) The first Tusday in march the first Tusday in July and the last Tusday in october Annually ; alwaies provided it shalbee lawfull on speciaall occations which shalbe judged of by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the Assistants for any either of our owne Collonie or others to purchase a Court in the Interems of time betwixt the said Courtes ; and that there shalbee att euery such Court the Gou<sup>r</sup> and three of the majestrates att the least and that henceforth there shalbee noe Courtes of Assistants except the Gou<sup>r</sup> on speciaall occation shall see reason to

summon such a Court ; and it is further enacted by the Court that all tryalls vnder forty shillings shalbee tryed by the select men ; and that none vnder forty shillings shalbee tryed att the aforsaid Courtes except in cases of appeale from any of the Respective Townes ;

[PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That one or two of the select men whom the Court shall appoint in each Township of this Jurisdiction bee heerby Impowered to adminnester an oath in all cases comitted to them as alsoe to graunt an execution for such psons as neglect or refuse to pay their Just dues according to the verdicte of the said psons ; and that the said select men in euery Towne ; bee vnder oath for the true pformance of their office ; and if any pson finds himselfe agreiued with the verdict of the said select men ; Then they haue their liberty to apeale to the next Court of his Ma<sup>tie</sup> holden att Plymouth provided that forthwith they put in Securitie to prosecute the apeale to effect and alsoe enter the grounds of their apeale ; and in case any Towne doe neglect to chose and p<sup>r</sup>sent such yearly vnto the Courts of election ; That euery such Towne shalbee lyable to pay a fine of five pounds to the Countreyes vse ;

1658.

\*The oath of a Celect man.

\*106

You shall according to the measure of wisdom and descretion God hath giuen you faithfully and Impartially try all such cases between pty and pty brought before you ; as alsoe giue summons respecting your trust according to order of the Court as a Celect man of the                      Towne of                      for this p<sup>r</sup>sent yeare soe healp ꝑc.

It is enacted by the Court ;

That the Celect men in euery Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall take notice of all such psons That are or shall come into any of the Townshippes without the approbation of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the Assistants according to order of the Court and the said Celect men shall warne the said psons to aply themselues for approbation according to order ; which if they shall refuse or neglect ; the said Celect men are heerby Impowered to require the pson or psons to appeer att the next court to bee holden att Plymouth and to require Securitie for their appeerance which if any refuse to doe the said Celect men shall enforme the Constable of the Towne where hee liueth which said Constable shall forth with carry the said pson or psons before the Gou<sup>r</sup> or some one of the Assistants of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ;

Whearas the Court takes notice of great neglect of frequenting the publicke worship of God vpon the Lords day ; it is enacted by the Court and the

[PART III.]

authoritie therof That the Celect men in each Townshipe of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall take notice of such in their Townshippes as neglect through prophannes and slothfulnes to come to the publicke worship of God ; and shall require an account of them ; and if they giue them not satisfaction that then they returne their names to the Court

It is enacted by the Court that henceforth the Majestrates bee not freed from Countrey rates or charges ;

It is enacted by the Court that henceforth noe p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall still any Strongwaters without lycence on the forfeiture of such stronge liquors or the vallue of them ;

It is enacted by the Court That noe horse or horse kind shalbee driuen or carried out of any Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment by any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons that are not of the said towne without the consent of the owner therof vnder the penaltie of fīue pounds for euery such horse beast ;

Wheras complaint is made of the Indians their stealing of the hoggs of the English and making sale of them and concealing of them by cutting of their eares &c: It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That henceforth noe Indian shall giue any eare marke to his swine vpon the penaltie of the forfeiture of such swine the one halfe to him that shall seize on them ; and the other halfe to the Countrey except hee bringe true Testimony where hee had such swine soe marked before a majestrate or the Celect men ; and that the Indians haue due notice heerof ; and this order to take place from october next ;

Since renewed  
again and re-  
vised the 2<sup>cond</sup>  
of July 1667.

Memorandum that the Receiuers of the excise in each Township of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment are freed from their office by the Court and that the Treasurer hath liberty to lett it forth in the behalfe of the Countrey

\*107  
1667.

\*Att the 2<sup>cond</sup> session of the Generall Court holden att Plymouth the 2<sup>cond</sup> of July 1667

**I**T was enacted by the Court That noe p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shall sell any Cyder To any Indian vnder the penaltie of ten shillings for euery such default ; Ordinary keepers excepted for the moderate refreshment of Trauellers ; and that none be allowed to sell any Cyder by retaile to any English without Lycence on the same penaltie as in like case of selling liquors is prouided and that none allow any p<sup>r</sup>sons to spend their time by tipleing of Cyder Liquors &c: in their houses: and That incase any Cyder be found in the Costody of any Indians It shalbe lawfull for any man to take it away from them ;

It is enacted by the Court That fifty pounds yearly be allowed to such assistants as shall for the future be chosen and serue in that place and the charge of their Table be defrayed; [PART III.]

In reference to mililitary concernments It is enacted by the Court that noe single psons vnder twenty yeares of age either children or servants shall voate as to that accompt or any that are not settled Inhabitants of that place and haue taken the oath of fidelitie.

It is enacted by the Court that such as comitt fornication or comon drunkards that noe fine be receiued from them for their fact vntill they haue bin convicted therof before the Court vnlesse some vnavoidable Impediment shall hinder their appearence theratt.

It is enacted by the Court That the Townsmen or pticular psons whose horses or any cattle doe Treaspas vpon the Indians vpon their owne lands out of Townshipes by spoiling their Corn; shall agree with them for the p<sup>r</sup>servation therof or to healp them to ffence; and incase they shall neglect soe to doe; they shall pay the full damage that shall come by their Cattle soe Trespassing.

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever are or shalbe chosen to be surveyors of the highwaies shall att the expiration of the yeare giue an account of their actinges about the highwaies to the select men of that Towne.

It is enacted by the Court That such Constables which doe or shall neglect to bring in the rates according to times appointed That whatsoever damage shalbe sustained therby shalbe payed and made good by such Constable or Constables.

It is enacted by the Court that the Indians be prohibited to make any vse of any horses neat cattle or hoggs appertaining to the English which may be woired or otherwise killed by any accident vntill they haue libertie from the owners of such cattle soe to doe.

The order proibiting selling of powder and shot to the Indians reuiued and established. This againe repealed July 1669.

It is enacted by the Court That incase any Indian or Indians shalbe found to haue any powder or shott Armes or Liquors and will or doth affirme that they had it of this or That pson of the English; if the said pson shall vpon his oath Testify and affirme That hee or shee hath not sold giuen or healped the said Indian or Indians vnto the said powder or shott or Liquors they shalbe accompted to bee ffree and cleare of the said fact or otherwise to

[PART III.] be rendered giulty and to be procecuted accordingly; and this tryall to be before either a majestrate or one of the Celect men of the Towne appointed to giue an oath;

\*108  
1667.

\*It is enacted by the Court That henceforth noe more lands be graunted to psons without the pticulare Townshipes for the tearme of seauen yeares ;

It is enacted by the Court that in such Townshipes where occation ariseth for the destressing vpon the estates of any for the minnester such estate soe destressed shall by the Constable of That Towne be deliuered to such of the Towne as shalbe appointed and in defect therof to such as by two majes- trates shalbe ordered to receiue it and to dispose of it as they shall see cause ;

It is enacted by the Court That the lands which are not as yett bounded betwixt the English and the Indians may be bounded and mutually agreed on by both p'ties ;

It was concluded by the Court that a proposition shalbe made from the Court to the seuerall Townshipes of this Jurisdiction in reference to a Collec- tion or Contribution to be made towards the defraying of the charge of the printing of the history of Gods dispensations towards **N E**: in Generall in speciall towards this Collonie ;

[Acts and orders made and concluded by the Generall Court held at Plymouth the third day of June 1668]

\*109  
1668.  
Repealed June  
sixt 1669.

**I**T is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that noe knotts be henceforth gathered by any either English or Indians To make Tarr of them ; And that noe Tarr be made by any either English or Indian within this Goufment from the sixteenth day of July next ; on the penaltie of the for- feiture of all such knots or Tarr the one halfe therof to the Informer and the other halfe to the vse of the Collonie.

Wheras great Complaint is made of great abuse by reason of ffishermen that are strangers who ffishing on some of the ffishing ground on our Coast in Catches dressing and splitting theire ffish aboard through theire Garbidg ouer- board to the great anoyance of ffish which hath and may proue greatly detre- mentall to the Countrey ; It is ordered by the Court that something be directed from this Court to the Court of the Massachusetts to request them to take some effectuall course for the restraint of such abuse as much as may bee ;

It is ordered by the Court that there shalbe a Generall Training of both horse and foot att the Towne of Plymouth in the second weeke of october

1669 and once in three year for the future the places to be att Plymouth Taunton and Yarmouth successiuey that is to say this first att Plymouth as aforsaid the second att Taunton and the third att Yarmouth att the time of the yeare aboue mensioned and that eury <sup>ferman</sup> ~~souldier~~ be prouided with <sup>two pound of</sup> powder against the time appointed to be Improued in the said expeditions and exercises att ~~his owne charge~~; the Townes Charge. [PART III.]

An acte for the preuension of the diuersion of the execution of Justice by fraud or couen ;

That where an estate can not be found to satisfy any fine or mult due vnto the Countrey or to answere a Judgment obtained against any pson att the pticulare suite of any ; The pson of any soe fined or cast in law shalbe ceured to be responsible thervnto.

It is ordered by the Court and the authoritie therof That noe pson neither Inhabitant of this Jurisdiction nor any other shall att any time either by vertue of libertie from the Court to purchase lands of the Indians or vpon any pretence whatsoever shalbe suffered to buy or receiue (in any way of the Indians) any of those lands that appertaine vnto mount hope or Cawsumsett necke or any other such neckes or tracts of land as there is a body of Indians vpon ; and the Court shall judge they can not liue without ;

It is enacted by the Court That all the Kinges highwaies within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shalbe forty foot in breadth att the least ;

In reference vnto the proposition made to the Court concerning the makeing of prouision for the Cecuring of such lands as are held by doubtfull title It is refered and heerby p<sup>r</sup>sented to the seriouse consideration of the seuerall Townes of this Jurisdiction to send in their Judgments and proposalls concerning the same vnto the next Court of election.

It is ordered by the Court That wheras the recognizance for the good behavior the fees therof was formerly four shillings the takeing and foure shillings the releasing ; That henceforth it shalbe two shillings and sixpence the takeing and two shillings and sixpence releasing.

\*It is enacted by the Court ; That libertie is heerby graunted to the English in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment to Sell horses to the Indians ; prouided eury horse soe sold be brought to the Towne Clarke of that Towne where hee is sold and ten shillings in mony and deliuer it to the said Clarke for the Collonies vse whoe shall record his marke or markes ; and haue twelue pence of the said \*110  
June 2<sup>nd</sup>.

[PART III.] mony for his paines ; and Incase any shall sell any horses to the Indians and Neglect soe to doe ; hee shall forfeit euery such horse or the vallue therof to the Collonies vse ;

It is further enacted by the Court That noe pson within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall sell or giue any mare to the Indians on the penaltie of the forfeiture of euery such mare or the vallue therof to the vse of the Collonie ; and that noe Indian shalbe suffered to keep any mare in this Collonie on like penaltie of the forfeiture of euery such mare or the vallue therof to the Collonies vse ;

1669.  
July sixt.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof ; That none shall sell wine liquors Cyder or beer by retaile in this Collonie except they haue a Lycence: and to pay for their lycence according to the Capasitie of the place where they liue ;

	viz: Plymouth -	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	10. 00. 00	
	That is to say James Cole seni <sup>r</sup>	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	08. 00. 00	
the one halfe of these sumes to be payed in Mony.	Thomas Lettice	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	02. 00. 00	
	Duxburrow	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	01. 10. 00	
	Scittuate	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	02. 10. 00	
	Sandwich	The Treasurer hath agreed with Willam Swift									
	Taunton	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	02. 00. 00
	Barnstable	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	02. 00. 00
	Yarmouth	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	01. 10. 00	
	Bridgwater	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	01. 00. 00	
	Rehoboth	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	01. 10. 00	

Morouer it is enacted by the Court that all such Lycenced ordinaries shall not suffer prophane singing daunceing or reuelling in their houses on the penaltie of ten shillings for euery default and that all ordinary keepers be ordered to keep good beer in their houses to sell by retaile and that some one in euery towne be appointed to see that the beer they sell be suitable to the prise they sell it for ;

Repealed June  
11<sup>th</sup> 1670.

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That noe barke nor board shalbe transported out of this Collonie nor noe kind of Timber except it be wrought vp in vessells or Caske on penaltie of forfeiting of all the same or the vallue therof ; to the vse of the Collonie ;

Repealed June  
11<sup>th</sup> 1670.

It is enacted by the Court that noe boards shalbe brought into this Col- lonie and that noe boards shalbe sold in this Jurisdiction to exceed in prise fise and forty shillings a thousand deliuered att the watersyde in the Town- shipp where they are sawen on the penaltie of paying a fine of ten shillings



a Thousand to the vse of the Collonie and this order not to take place vntill the next october Court; [PART III.]

\*It is enacted by the Court that some one of the Celect men of euery Towne of this Jurisdiction be heerby Impowered to Issue forth warrants in his Ma<sup>ties</sup> name to arrest or attach any pson or psons or in defect of them their goods to answare any suite within their Cognizance as occation may require \*111

It is enacted by the Court that none shall voate in Towne meetings but ffreemen or ffreeholders of twenty pound ratable estate and of good conversation haueing taken the oath of fidelitie;

It is enacted by the Court that all Censures by fine from ten shillings and vnder shalbe payed in mony; and that the fine for fornication be payed forthwith in Mony or else to be punished with corporall punishment.

It is enacted by the Court that the Constables in euery respectiue Township of this Jurisdiction shall serue such executions as shalbe directed to them by any of the Celect men of the respectiue townships.

It is enacted by the Court that whosoouer hath three sonnes in his family that beare armes in the Milletary Companie; their father shalbe freed from that seruice if the Councill of warr or any three of them shall see cause

Wheras great Inconuenience hath arisen by single psons in this Collonie being for themselues and not betakeing themselues to liue in well Gou<sup>rn</sup>ed famillies It is enacted by the Court that henceforth noe single pson be suffered to liue of himselfe or in any family but such as the Celectmen of the Towne shall approue of; and if any pson or psons shall refuse or neglect to attend such order as shalbe giuen them by the Celectmen; That such pson or psons shalbe sumoned to the Court to be proceeded with as the matter shall require;

Wheras by order of the Councill of Warr the Townes of this Jurisdiction respectiuely are to find drumes pikes halberts and Coullers att their owne Charge; It is thought meet and accordingly ordered by the Court that all such troopers as find and maintaine their owne armes be excused from bearing any charge in such drums pikes halberts and Coullers.

Wheras seuerall psons liueing out of this Jurisdiction doe possesse seuerall p<sup>r</sup>sells of land within this Jurisdiction which is out of any p<sup>r</sup>ticular township; It is enacted by the Court that all such land be Rated accordingly as other lands dormont or Improued to the Countreyes vse; viz: such as are dormont as other dormont lands and such as are Improued as other Improued lands within this Jurisdiction;

[PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court that a Cercomstantiall error in a Summons or warrant shall not be taken as a sufficient ground for a nonsuite wher otherwise both the p<sup>t</sup>ie and case concerned therin may be rationally vnderstood ;

Concerning the order about the next Generall training the latter p<sup>t</sup>e of the order to run thuse ; and that euery fierman be provided with two pound of powder against the time appointed to be Improued in the said expedition and exercises att the Townes charge.

\*113

\*It is enacted by the Court that henceforth noe p<sup>er</sup>son shall haue libertie to bring any Liquors into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment for themselues or others to giue or sell but such as are Lycenced ; more then for th<sup>e</sup>ire owne p<sup>t</sup>icular vse ; which shall not exceed six gallons in the yeare and each mans that is soe brought in shalbe distinct in vessells one from another and incase any doe it shalbe forfeite or the value therof one third to the Countrey and one third to the Informer and one third to those that are lycenced to sell ; but if it appeer that any man of quallitie whose condition calleth for further expence in his family that then this law shall not reach them ; onely this is to be vnderstood that vnder pretence of this hee shall not giue or sell to be carryed abroad except it bee soe that the ordinary keepers haue none to supply the nessesities of them that are sicke ;

This order repealed June 1670.

It is enacted by the Court that wheras minnestres maintainance is to be raised by rate according to order of Court bearing date 1657 which vpon neglect is to be taken by distresse as by the said order doth appeer ; yett for preuenting off offence (and if it may be of destresse) This Court doth order ; That the Majestrate in each Towne where there is any ; and the Celect men or any one of them where there is noe Majestrate ; be heerby Impowered vpon notice of default heerin ; To Summon euery such p<sup>er</sup>son or p<sup>er</sup>sons ; to the next Court to answare the said Neglect ; and incase such p<sup>er</sup>son or p<sup>er</sup>sons doe not make out Just cause for such neglect they shalbe amerced double the sume proportioned to him or them to the Collonies vse to be disposed of by the Court ;

It is enacted by the Court that the Constable or his deputie in each respectiue Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall dillegently looke after such as sleep or play about the meeting house in times of the publicke worship of God on the Lords day and take notice of their names and returne such of them to the Court whoe doe not after warning giuen to them reforme ;

As alsoe that vnnesesary violent ryding on the Lords day ; the p<sup>er</sup>sons that soe offend ; their names to be returned to the next Court after the said offence ;

It is enacted by the Court That any p<sup>er</sup>son or p<sup>er</sup>sons that shalbe found

smoaking of Tobacco on the Lords day ; goeing too or coming from the meetings within two miles of the meeting house shall pay twelue pence for euery such default to the Collonies vse ;

[PART II.]

It is enacted by the Court that none shall suffer to goe att large to ffeed in any Commons within this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment any stoned horse being aboute two yeares old ; and not thirteene hands high att least from the lower pte of the hoofe to the vper pte of the whither ; euery hand containing four inches standard measure ; in paine to forfeite the same horse or the vallue therof the one halfe to the Country and the other halfe to him or them which shall seize such horse of lower stature ; soe that first by the assistance of the Constable or Celect men of Any township where such seizeure is made or seizior dwelleth ; such horse being by the seizior first brought to the next pound, shall there by such an officer in the p<sup>r</sup>sence of three sufficient men be measured and found lower then the stature aboute mensioned ; this order to take place from and after the first of October i670.

The orders prohibiting the selling of powder and shott and mony to the Indians are repealed ;

\*ffor quieting mens estates and avoiding suites in Law

July 10<sup>th</sup>  
1669.  
\*115

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof ; That noe pson or psons haueing had for the space or tearme of ten yeare fully past and expired any right or titles of enterey into or cause of action for any lands teniments or hereditiments whatsoever now detained from him or them shall therinto enter or comence suite for but within fve yeares next after the end of this p<sup>r</sup>sent session of Court and att noe time after ;

And that none shall att any time heerafter make any entery into or comence suite for any lands teniments or hereditiments but within fifteen yeares next after his or their right title or cause of action or suite which shall heerafter first descend fall or acrow to the same : otherwise such title shalbe for euer after barred and the pty claiming and his and their heires vtterly excluded from entery into the same ; Prouided Neuertlesse that if any pson or psons which hath or shall haue such right title or cause of action be or shalbe att the time of the said right title or cause of action first descended acrowed come of<sup>1</sup> fallen within the age of twenty one yeares feme Couert non compos Mentis Imprisoned or beyond the seas then such pson or psons his or their heires shall or may notwithstanding the said fifteen yeares expired ; bring his action or make his entery att any time within fve yeares next after his or their full age discouerture coming of sound

[1 or]

[PART III.] mind Inlargment out of prison or coming into this Countrey ; take benefitt of and sue forth the same and att noe time after the said five yeares ;

It is further enacted by the Court that such pson or psons as haue had right or title vnto or cause of action for any lands teniments or heridittiments hetherto detained from him or them for the space or tearme of twenty yeares fully past and compleat and neglected hitherto to make his or their eentry or to comence suite for the same or haueing had such right title or cause of action for the space or full tearme of eighteen yeares now past and shall neglect to make such eentry into or suite for within the space or full tearme of two yeares next after the end of this p<sup>r</sup>sent session of Court shall in either of these cases be for euer barred excluded and vtterly disabled from such eentry or suite to be made excepting as in the abouesaid prouiso according as by the statute of England made Ann<sup>o</sup> 21 Jacobi Regis Capt: 16 Instituted an acte for limitation of actions and avoiding suites in law as in such case prouided ; It haueing bine the vsuall manor and costome of this Court to haue recourse as much as might be to the Lawes of England in such case wherin there is noe other law prouided by this Court more suitable to our Condition ;

\*117  
1670.  
June.

[June<sup>th</sup> 8: 1670]

\*This being aded to a former order of Court bearing date June 1657 is determined to be the way for raisinge minnesters Maintainance ; and all other orders respecting the same are heerby repealed ;

Ministers  
salary.

fforasmuch as it appeereth to be greatly Inconvenient that the minnesters should be troubled to gather in the rates for their maintainance ; and may be an occation to prejudice some psons against them or their ministry ; It is enacted by the Court that att June Courts yearly two meet psons in each Towne be appointed by the said Court vnlesse the townes haue alreddy prouided ; whoe shall take care for the gathering in of their minnesters maintainance for that yeare by Inciting of the people to their duty in that respect demaunding it when due and if need be by procuring distraint vpon the estate of any that shall neglect or refuse to pay their rates or proportions towards his support according to order of Court in that case prouided ; and incase any minnester shall Scruple to receiue what is soe raised ; It shall Neuertheles be gathered as abouesaid and be disposed as the Court shall order or advise for the good of the place.

Wheras It hath bine and is the pious care and true intent of this Court that all such plantations and Townshipes as are by them Graunted should maintaine the publicke sabbath Worship of God and the preaching of the

word and doe to that end affoord them such proportions of lands as may accomodate such a society as may be able to maintaine the same ; and yett through the corruption or sinfull neglect of many or most of the Inhabitants of some plantations they content themselues to liue without the minnistry of the word to the great dishonor of God and danger of their soules ; there being great reason to feare that many may be acted therein by worldly & couetous principles ; It is by this Court enacted that in such Townshippes where noe Minnister is resident ; especially if it appeers that the generallyty of the Inhabitants are remise in the obtaining of one the generall Court may and shall henceforth Yearly Impose a certaine sune to be raised by rate vpon the Inhabitants of such plantations or Townshippes which shalbe kept as a stocke for building of a meeting house or for Incurragement of a minnister to labour amongst them or other such pious vses as the Court may Improue it in for their good ;

[PART III.]

June.  
1670.

And in reference to the Towne of Dartmouth that the sune of fifteen pounds be leuied by rate with the Countrey rates vpon all the Inhabitants to be in a reddines for and towards the vses aboue expressed ;

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever being chosen by any Towne of this Jurisdiction to serue as a Celect man in the said Towne and shall refuse to serue in that place shall pay the sune of twenty shillings the one halfe to the Towne and the other halfe to the vse of the Collonie ; and that the Gou<sup>r</sup> shall chose another to serue in his stead.

It is enacted by the Court That there shalbe noe attachment graunted by the Celect men against any ffreeman or settled Inhabitant and that there shalbe three Courts of the Celect men in the yeare: viz: in the month of ffebruary in the month of May and in the month of October ; and noe other except the Celect men shall see cause ;

It is enacted by the Court that incase of Appeale the appealant shall summons the defendant to answare att that Court to which hee appeals and shall produce all the Testimonies that were made vse of att the first Tryall of the case vnder the hand of the Celect men or any one of them from whence the appeale comes and noe new Testimony to be admitted ; and the case to be tryed by Jury and if the appealant be againe cast ; to pay double damages and all costes and that any one of the Majestrates of this Jurisdiction shall graunt a precept for such an appeale as occation may require ;

Wheras a former order respecting the Issueing of differences between English and Indians seemes dubiouse this Court doth determine That all In-

[PART III.] juries complained of arising between English and Indians shalbe brought to Issue by the Celect men in each Townshipe before whom any complaint shall legally appeer ; except onely in capitall matters and titles of lands ;

[<sup>1</sup> furdere] ffor the prevention of the prophanation of the Lords day It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That the Celect men of the severall Townes of this Jurisdiction or any one of them may or shall as there may be occasion take with him the Counstable or his deputie and repaire to any house or place where they may suspect that any slothfully doe lurke att hom or gett together in companies to neglect the publicke worship of God or prophane the Lords day and finding any such disorder shall returne the names of the psons to the next Court and giue notice alsoe of any pticulare miscarriage that they haue taken notice of that it may be enquired into ;

\*118  
1670.  
June.

\*Wheras the Prouidence of God hath made Cape Cod comodious for vs for ffishing with saines ; and some careles psons haue anoyed the same by casting theire ballast neare the shore where such conveniency is ; or by leaueing the Garbidge of ffish or dead ffish to lye there roting wherby such anoyance is ; This Court doth therfore order that whosoener shall treaspas in any of the said kinds of Annoyance shall pay the sume of forty shillings to the Collonies vse for euery such default vnto the pson that the Court doth appoint to looke after the same ; alsoe this Court doth further order that whosoener of our Inhabitants that draw Mackerell on shore there ; shall pay to the Collonies vse sixpence p barrell for euery barrell soe taken or the quantity that may amount to a barrell ; and for euery barrell or the quantitie therof soe taken by any fforaigners in the aforsaid place shalbe payed one shilling and sixpence to the Collonies vse by the pson or psons that soe ffish there and att the beginning of any voyage attempted there ; the pson or psons soe doing shall att the enterance on the voyage put in sufficient Ceuritie vnto the pson appointed by the Court vnder this trust for the payment of the aforsaid sume or sumes ;

Thomas Paine is appointed by this Court and impowered as a bayley by land and water to demaund and receiue for the Collonies vse the aboue mentioned sumes as they may att any time become due or payable ; and to take such Ceuritie for theire p<sup>r</sup>formance as abouesaid ; and is heerby Impowered to comaund such aide as hee att any time shall Judge requisite respecting the p<sup>r</sup>mises.

Wheras wee haue formerly seen Great Inconuenience of taking Makerell att vnseasonable times wherby there encrease is greatly deminished and that it hath bine proposed to the Court of the Massachusetts that some course

might be taken for preventing the same and that they haue lately drawne vp an order about the same this Court doth enacte and order that henceforth noe makerell shalbe caught except for spending while fresh before the first of July Annually on penaltie of the losse of the same the one halfe to the Informer and the other halfe to the vse of the Collonie; and this order to take place from the 20<sup>th</sup> of this Instant June;

[PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court that whosoever haueing comitted vncleanes in another Collonie and shall come hither and haue not satisfied the law where the fact was comitted they shalbe sent backe or heer punished according to the Nature of the crime as if the acte had bine heer done;

It is enacted by the Court That wheras diuers psons seeke to evade the payment of ten shillings for euery horse that is sold to the Indians that none shall giue lend or hier any horse to any Indian or Indians on the penaltie of paying a fine of ten shillings to the Collonies vse.

It is enacted by the Court That one witnes shalbe sufficient for the Grand enquest to ground a p<sup>r</sup>sentment on but the ptie not to be condemned without a second witnes or concurring cercomstances And that incase any shall publish any matter of a Scandalous nature except vnto a majestrate or grandjuryman; It shalbe accompted a defamation actionable;

And That in all matters p<sup>r</sup>sentable except Capitall noe euidence shalbe receiued either by a Majestrate or grandjuryman from any pson or psons whoe hath or shall neglect to giue in such euidence within one full yeare and a day after his or her knowlidge therof.

Wheras diuers psons haue complained of great wrong for the want of a packer in their Townshipe this Court hath ordered and enacted That whatsoever Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall see cause to desire a packer to repacke meat they may p<sup>r</sup>sent a fitt pson to the Court or to some one of the Majestrates of this Jurisdiction to be Sworne;

\*It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That it shalbe lawfull on speciall occation which shalbe judged on by the Gou<sup>r</sup> and two of the Assistants for any either of our owne Collonie or others to purchase a Court in the Interems of time betwixt the other Courts and that there shalbe att euery such Court the Gou<sup>r</sup> and three of the Assistants att the least; and that any that shall purchase such a Court shall pay the Jury men each three shillings a day for soe long a time as they shall attend that service and beare all other nessesary charges of that Court;

\*119  
1670.  
June.

[PART III.]

It was att this Court voated and generally agreed on by the Court ; that our Confeaderation with two Collonies: viz: Massachusetts and Conecticott shall stand and remaine as It did formerly with three ;

It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that a Comittee be chosen to puse all our lawes ; and to gather vp from them or any other healpes they can gett and compose therfrom a body of Lawes ; and p<sup>r</sup>sent the same to the next election Court for a further settlement therof and the charge therof to be bourne and defrayed by the Treasurer

The Comittee appointed by the court were <sup>the Gour</sup> The Major } and Mr Walley healp  
and Mr Hinckley } to be requested  
and if any of the deputies or others shall propose any thinge to this Comittee for their consideration when they meet together it shalbe well accepted ;

Wheras seuerall p<sup>r</sup>sons haue bine greatly Indangered by seting of Guns It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof that none shall sett any Guns except in Inclosures and that the gun be sufficiently enclosed soe as it be Cecure from hurting man or beast and that hee that seteth the gun doe giue warning or notice therof to all the Naighhours on the penaltie of paying a fine of fwe pounds to the vse of the Collonie for euery default ;

It is enacted by the Court that if there be any p<sup>r</sup>sons that will buy all the Tarr that shalbe made within this Collonie and will pay eight shillings a barrell for itt in mony ; and for euery halfe hogshed twelue shillings for it in mony ; they shall haue it soe ; for the tearme of two yeares from the date heerof ; and to receiue it att a place appointed in euery Township and it is further enacted by the Court that if any others except those that soe engage to buy all the Tarr shall carry or cause any to be carryed out of the Collonie within the afsaid tearme of two yeares they shall forfeite either the Tarr or the vallow therof ; the one halfe to the Cblonie and the other halfe to those that are engaged to buy all the said Tarr.

Repealed June  
9<sup>th</sup> 1671.

\*120

\*fforasmuch as seuerall Townes in this Collonie are alreddy much Straightened for building timber and through Gods providence some other townes are well accomodated to afford them a supply that townes soe straightened be not nessessitated to fech their supplies from another Jurisdiction ; whilst wee haue of our owne ;

June 1672.

Be it Inacted by this Court and the Authoritie therof That noe timber of any sort may or shall within the tearme of seauen yeares next after the first of Nouember next ensueing ; be att any time transported or carryed away by land or water out of any Township in this Jurisdiction into any other



Jurisdiction; other then what is first sawne into boards or wrought into Shingle or wrought vp into Caske boates barques or other vessells of burden; on the forfeite of all such timber plancke Cooper stuffe bolts Claboard &c or the vallue therof; the one halfe to the Countrey and the other halfe to the Informer if duely proued within twelue months after such Transportation made; and that some meet pson be appointed and authorised by the Court in such Townes as they shall see cause for to take care for the due obseruation of this order; and that noe master of any boate or other vessell presume to receiue aboard any such timber plancke or Cooper stuffe &c without first repaireing to such pson appointed and Impowered as aforsaid and giueing in sufficient Securitie for his vnloading and leauing such timber &c in som towne within this Jurisdiction, the dangers of the seas excepted; vnder the penaltie of forty shillings forfeite; the one halfe to the Countrey and the other halfe to the Informer and officer appointed as aforsaid; forthwith to be payed; And that such master of boate &c shewing a Certificate from vnder the Constables hand; or any of the Celect men of the Townes where hee shall vnlod as aforsaid; shall ffree and discharge him from the Securitie giuen as abouesaid;

And that noe barke shalbe transported out of this Jurisdiction vnder the penaltie and forfeiture as aforsaid;

Notwithstanding the former order concerning the Transportation of Timber it is ordered That any pson or psons may transport any timber, out of any Townships that shall grow vpon their owne pticular proprieties, provided that they make it appeer to any one of the Celect men or Constables of the respectiue Townships by the testimony of one pson not Interested therin; and that shipcarpenters be vnder the same restraint as others; and that in defect of any officer neglecting to take notice of the transgression of this order such transgression of the said law shalbe p<sup>r</sup>sentable by the Grand enquest

\*Actes and orders made and concluded the 4<sup>th</sup> of July 1672

\*121

**I**T is enacted by the Court that if any pson or psons that shall att any time heerafter; shipp: or load on board any: ffish into any vessell; which shalbe caught att Cape Cod but such as hee or they shall giue an accountt off to the water Bayley; all such ffishes shalbe forfeite to the Collonies vse;

i672.

And that the Water bayley be heerby Impowered to make seizure of all such ffish as shall att any time become forfeite; and to giue an accountt therof vnto the Treasurer; or such as shalbe appointed by the Majestrates or any four of them; to take the said accountt;

[PART III.]

ffor the Regulateing of the troope It is ordered by the Court that they be deuided into three Squadrons viz: To the Captaine Leiftenant and Cornett to exercise each Squadron twice in the yeare ;

Troopers.

And that they take a list of the troopp and see that they keep horses with Armes Amunition and Acoulterments ffit for that seruice ;

As alsoe that euery trooper shall provide himselfe with a ffix Carbine or horsmans peece betwixt this and the next election Court ; or returne vnto the foot Companie where they dwell ;

An order directed from the Court to the Comission officers of the Milletary Companies of this Jurisdiction as followeth

Gentlemen ;

The Court haueing reason vpon the Intelligence wee haue receiued to feare that wee may haue trouble from the States Generall of the vnitd Belgicke Prouinces or others before the revolution of the yeare ; and how soone wee know not ; doe see reason to take notice of what condition our people are in to defend themselues against an enimie and doe therefore heerby require you speedily and very strictly to make serch how youer men are prouided with ffixed armes and amunition according to order of Court ; and that as well ancient psons that are out of the lists as others ; and that you alsoe enquire into the Townes stocke of Armes and amunition ; and vpon an Impartiall view you cause the Constable by vertue heerof forthwith to Leuy the fine by distresse if not otherwise payed ; The fines of Listed soldiers to the vse of the Companie ; and of others to the Townes vse ; and make speedy returne to the Gour or Major how they find the Townes stocke that they may take course to gather those fines for the Collonie ; and in Generall may <sup>know</sup> know how youer towne are prouided.

And incase of a suddaine assault or approach of an enimy the Court orders you as much as may be to be Guided by the orders of the Councill of Warr that sits att Plymouth the second day of Aprill i667 vntill you shall receiue more pticular orders from the Gour Major or Councill of warr ; and that you doe alsoe take Notice of the troopers as to defect of armes and Amunition in youer Towne and leuy their fines as abouesaid to the vse of the troope ; vnlesse in such Townes wherin any Comission officer of the troop doth reside.

Wee being Informed that it is vpon the harts of our Naighbours of the Massachusetts Collonie to support and Incurrage that Nursary of Learning att harverd Colledge in Cambridge in New England from whence haue through the blessing of God Issued many worthy and vsefull persons for Publique

service in Church and Comonwealth ; being alsoe Informed that diuers Godly and well affected in England are redy to Assist therein by way of contributing considerable sumes prouided the Countrey heer are forward to promote the same ; and that the seuerall Townes in the Massachusetts haue bine very free in theirre offerings thervnto ; wee alsoe being by letters from them Invited and In sighted to Joyne with them in soe good a worke ; and that wee may haue an Interest with others In the blessing that the Lord may please from thence to convey vnto the Countrey ; this Court doth therefore earnestly comend it to the Minnesters and Elders in each Towne, that they takeing such with them as they shall thinke meet ; would p'ticularly and earnestly moue and stirr vp all such in theirre seuerall townes as are able to contribute vnto this worthy worke be it in mony or other good pay ; and that they make a returne of what they shall effect heerin vnto the Court that shall sit in october next whoe will then appoint meet p'sons to receiue the contributions and faithfully to dispose of the same for the ends proposed.

[PART III.]

\*It is ordered by the Court that the charge of the free Scoole, which is three and thirty pounds a yeare shalbe defrayed by the Treasurer out of the proffitts arising by the ffishing att the Cape vntill such Time as that the minds of the ffreemen be knowne concerning it which wilbe returned to the next Court of election ;

\*123  
i673.  
June.

Notwithstanding the former order concerning the Transportation of Timber It is ordered by the Court That any p'son or p'sons may Transport any timber out of any Townships in this Collonie ; that shall grow vpon theirre owne p'ticulare proprieties provided that they make it appeer To any one of the Celect men or Constables of the respectiue Townships by the testimony of one p'son vninterested therein ; and that shipcarpenters be vnder the same restraint as others ; and that in defect of any officer neglecting to take Notice of the Transgression of this order such transgression of the said law shalbe p'sentable by the Grand enquest ;

It is enacted by the Court That whatsoever euidence of Land is or shalbe brought from any Towne booke to be placed in the Court Records shalbe shewed in open Court before it be entered ;

It is enacted by the Court that the one halfe of the Excise due to the Country on the Mackerell to be caught att the Cape bee henceforth abated: viz: that wheras it was twelue pence a barrell to our owne it shall henceforth be but sixpence a barrell from our owne and wheras it was formerly two shillings a barrell to fforraignors it shall henceforth be but twelue pence a barrell to fforraignors ; except any shall come in before the next Court and rent the said priuilege of Cape ffishing ;

[PART III.]

The Court haue ordered that the pay for killing of woulues be lowered from thirty to twenty shillings a head ;

The Court haue ordered that nothing shall stand in force in our written booke of lawes ; but what the printed lawes Refer vnto ;

\*125

\*Acts and orders made and concluded the 4<sup>th</sup> of July 1673

**I**T is enacted by the Court That the Comission officers of each Township of this Jurisdiction as often as they see cause shall make serch and take notice of the defects in Armes and amunition in each Township ; which defects being deliuered to the Constable by the aboue said officers the Constable with the Clarke of that Companie shall leuy the fines by destresse for the vse of the Companie according to order of Court, and that the said Miliary officers, haue the like power ; to make serch and leuy fines for defect on ancient psons, and all Inhabitants altho not of the traine band ; and the fine of such to be to the poor of the Towne or other Towne vse ;

Rules for Aprisments of Goods or other estate to be leuied by destresse or execution ; viz:

That two meet men of good Judgment be chosen apprisors, one of them by the Constable and the other by the p<sup>r</sup>son on whose estate the distresse is made or incase of his default then to be chosen by the Constable ; and where the pty concerned refuseth to sett forth suitable estate both as to nearnes of the sume to be leuied and to the specue due, there the Constable shall seize such goods as may best suite thervnto to be equally and Indifferently apprised according to the specue due and not ouerprised ;

And incase the apprisers refuse to attend that seruice on the Constables warning then such refuser to forfeite fve shillings to the Countryes vse.

It is enacted by the Court That such Indians especially young men as Run in debt to any English for thinges nessesary for them shalbe made to worke it out att reasonable rates if they haue not else to discharge their just debts ;

It is enacted by the Court That whosoever takes any pledge or paune of any Indian for siluer or any sort of drinke shall vpon complaint of the Indian loose both his pledge and the mony payed ;

It is enacted by the Court that noe ordinary keeper or other pson shall henceforth sell any beer to any Indian vpon penaltie of fve shillings for euery quart soe sold to be payed to the Treasurer for the Countryes vse ;

And if any Indian be found destempered with drinke and be brought before the Court ; in Court time or before any majestrate ; or in townes where noe Majestrate is before any of the Celect men of the Towne if as soon as hee

is capable hee will not declare of whom hee had his drinke; hee shalbe forthwith whipt; and his accusation \*of any pson shalbe prooffe against them except they shall clear themselves by their oath, as incase of liquor is provided and if it manifestly appeer that such Indian doth wrongfully accuse any p<sup>r</sup>son, hee shalbe seuerly whipt for his drunkenes and falce accusation.

[PART III.]

\*127

It is enacted by the Court that on the sixt day of the weeke in October Court and July Court; and att noe other Courts or other dayes in those weekes shall Indian busines be attended by the Court to the prejudice of the other Occations of the Court and Countrey;

Indians.

In reference to such that come to vntimely death It is enacted by the Court that noe such pson be buried before such time that a Corroner or Constable wher no Corroner is, be Informed of such death vpon the penaltie of fiue pounds and that such pson or psons that are most nearly related to such psons soe dieing shall forthwith giue notice to a Corroner or Cunstable; and in defect heerof any other pson is heerby bound, haueing knowlidge of it forthwith to giue Information as aforsaid and be payed out of the estate of the pson soe deceased or by the Treasurer where no such estate is found.

Vntimely death.

It is enacted by the Court

That noe pson whatsoever in this Collonie shall haue libertie to keep aboute three horse kind on the Comons; viz: euery housholder Inhabitant or that hath twenty pound rateable estate shall haue libertie to keep one; and hee that hath forty pound ratale estate hath libertie to keep two and such as haue sixty pound rateable estate may keep three; but none aboute three as abouesaid; a colt not to be reckoned for one till a yeare old

Horses.

And if any p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons shalbe found to keep more horse kind on the Comons then this law alloweth him; It shalbee lawfull for any treaspas by such horse kind to kill them;

Horses.

Pay fiue shillings a weeke for euery horse kind more then his number for the Townes vse;

And what horses or horse kind soeuer doe or shall treaspas any in their Corne or other enclosed lands or meddowes after warning giuen; if they continew soe to treaspas It shalbe lawfull for the pson soe treaspassed to kill them.

Horses.

It is enacted by the Court that what is in our written booke of lawes be by vs looked vpon for law and be taken out of the said booke and by a Committee drawne vp into one vollume.

It is enacted by the Court that those that are or shalbe sent from the seuerall Townes for to serue as deputies shall haue a voate with the Majestrates in the purging of the Court vntill by the abouesaid disaccepted.

Deputys.

Gage: Tar. It is enacted by the Court That 15 Gallons beer measure shalbe a settled Gage for tarr barrells ;

1674.

\*129

\*Actes and orderers made and concluded the fourth day of June Ann<sup>o</sup> Dom<sup>i</sup> 1674 as followeth ;

Freemen.

**I**T is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof as to the orderly Admittance of ffreemen ; first that the Names of the ffreemen in each Towne be kept vpon Towne Record ; and that noe mans Name shalbe brought into the Court to be propounded to take vp his ffreedome vnlesse hee haue had the approbation of the Major pte of y<sup>e</sup> ffreemen att home, and the same to be signified to the Court vnder the Towne Clarkes hand by the Deputies ;

Ordinarys.

It is enacted by the Court ; That as to the restraining of abuses in ordinaries, That noe ordinary keeper shall sell or giue any kind of drinke to Inhabitants of the Towne vpon the Lords day ; and alsoe that all Ordinary keepers be required to cleare their houses of all Towne dwellers and strangers that are there (on a drinking accoumpt) except such as lodge in the house ; by the shutting in of the day light vpon the forfeiture of fve shillings, the one halfe to the Informer and the other halfe to the Townes vse ;

Pound keepr.

It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever Neat Cattle horse kind sheep or swine henceforth being Impounded for Treaspas or damage done ; that the p<sup>r</sup>son that owneth the said cattle sheep swine or horskind doe giue to the pound keeper Securitie, to satisfy the damage done by them for which they were Impounded: viz: Ingage before two witnesses or giue vnder his hand to the keeper of the pound to satisfy such Just and legall damages as abouesaid ; and the poundkeeper that releaseth such beasts being alsoe satisfied for his Impounding of them ;

Race<sup>r</sup>.

It is enacted by the Court that whatsoever p<sup>r</sup>son shall Run a Race with any horse kind in any street or Comon Road shall forfeite fve shillings in mony forthwith to be leuied by the Constable or sit in the stockes one houre if it be not payed

Indians.

It is enacted by the Court That Wheras many Controversyes doe arise between the English and the Indians that are brought to tryall of the seuerall Courts of this Gourment ; and it is obserued that the Indians would be greatly disadvantaged if noe Testimony should in such case be accepted but on oath ; This Court orders, that any Court of this Jurisdiction before whom such tryall may come shall not be strictly tyed vp to such Testimonyes ; on oath as the Comon law requires but may therin acte and determine in a way of Chancery ; vallueing Testimonies not sworne on bothsydes according to their Judgment and Consience ;

The order forbiding powder and shott to be sold to the Indians is Repealed; [PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court that wheras Mannamoiett Paomitt and Satuckett haue bin put vnder the Constableness of Eastham; That they shall belonge vnto, and be off the said Township vntill the Court shall see cause otherwise to order and all other places in like Capacitie shall belonge vnto particular townships as the Court shall see meet;

\*This Court haueing receiued by the deputies of the seuerall townes the signification of the minds of the Major pte of the freemen of this Collonie that all the proffitts of the ffishing att Cape Code graunted by the Court for the erecting and Maintaining of a Scoole be still continewed for that end if a competent Number of Scollars shall appeer to be deuoted therunto, which this Court Judges not to be lesse then eight or ten Doe therefore heerby confirme the Graunt of the aforesaid proffitts of the ffishing att the Cape to the Maintainance of the Scoole; and that there be noe further demaunds, besides the said proffitts of the Cape demaunded of the Country for the Maintainance of the said Scoole. \*131  
1674.  
School.

It is enacted by the Court that such Indians as liue Idlely and will not take care to pay their Just debts after conviction, shalbe made to serue either those to whom they are Indebted or some other man vntill the debt be satisfied for twelue pence a day in summer time and six pence a day in winter time and their diet, and if they will not serue but run away; then it may be lawfull to sell them by order from two Majestrates of this Jurisdiction or the Selectmen of the Towne for soe longe a time as they shall see fitt, vntill the debt be satisfied for, and all such charges as shall arise vpon defect as aforesaid; Indians.

And for all younge p'sons of the Indians as spend their time Idlely It shalbe in the power of the Celect men or Constable in each Towne vpon complaint for to put them to some p'sons that shall keep them to worke and not abuse them, but if such p'sons shall or doe run away they shall forfeite double for such time as they are absent; Indians.

It is enacted by the Court that such Indians which shall or doe steale any thing from the English hee or they shall make restitution by payment of four fold either by serneing it out; or some other way or be sold for his theft; att the descretion of two of the Majestrates of this Jurisdiction. Indians.

It is enacted by the Court; that concerning Indian claimes that are or shalbe made to any lands within this Gou'ment; which are now orderly pos- Indians.

[PART III.] sessed by the English those which doe lay claime to them shall orderly comence and procecute their claime as farr as hee or they are able ; within one whole yeare after they be off age ; and noe longer and that care be taken that the Indians haue notice of it ;

Troopers. It is enacted by the Court that it be signified to the Townes that the Court expects that the troopers in each towne be as many in Number as before and that they be provided with armes and other aculterments fitt for that seruice, and that their Names be sent in to the next July Court ;

\*133 \*Actes and orders made and concluded the first of June 1675 by the Generall Court then assembled att Plymouth for the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth as followeth ;

Select men. **W**HERAS through the varietie of Interpretations of sundry orders Respecting the Celect mens Courts ; there may arise such acteings as may be crosse to the maine end of that Constitution For the better Regulateing therof it is ordered by the Court and the authoritie therof ; that the Courts of Celect men nor any of them shall haue power to send forth any precept to seize any estate without their Respective Townships, or to compel any p<sup>r</sup>son that is not found within their respectiue Townships, vnto their obeidience ; nor shall haue power to try any of the Kinges officers respecting the execution of their office for any damage to any p<sup>r</sup>son pretended therby to be receiued ; nor to try any action of defamation battery, or that respects Title of lands ; nor to make allowance for more witnesses then is nessesarie to any case brought before them nor to allow more then eighteenpence a day for one witnes attendance thereon, nor to allow any cost for any Atorneyes nor to hold more then two Courts in a yeer ; viz: one to be kept on the last Tusday in September ; Annually, and the other the first Tusday in february Annually, nor to ajorne any of their Courts longer then vntill the next day Imediately following such respectiue Court saueing their libertie onely to call a speciall Court incase they see vrgent cause therof, onely on the account of a stranger, being concerned in a case, which without much damage can not well be deferred to one of the Cettled Courts ; and further it is ordered that incase where a plaintiffe is Inhabitant of an other Towne ; and neglects to procecute or to signify to the defendant, and to one of the Celect men his leting fall his action ; then appeering, the defendant hee shall haue his cost allowed, which vpon certificate therof to any of the Majestrates ; hee shall Issue forth a warrant to the Constable to Leuy such cost on the goods of the said offending plaintiffe and make payment therof to the said defendant damnified ;



\*This Court voates the Country to repay, within two yeers after the date heerof the fifty pounds to Gou<sup>r</sup> Prence his executrix which hee in his life time payed to the Treasurer in the Countryes behalfe as p<sup>t</sup>e of the purchase of his late dwelling house and lands att Plymouth on condition that if the said Executrix ; together with all the children concerned therin ; which are in this Country, shall resigne vp the deeds which was giuen to the said late Gou<sup>r</sup> Prence by the Treasurer in the Countryes behalfe ; and alsoe shall and doe giue sufficient euidence in law to the Treasurer in the behalfe of the Countrey for the said house and lands ; with warrantice onely from by and vnder them the said executrix and children theire and euery of theire heires and assignes for euer ; and that then vpon theire signeing and sealing euidences vnto the Treasurer aforsaid, hee alsoe in behalfe of the Country signe and seale a generall release to them of all debts dues bills bonds and demaunds whatsoever ;

It is alsoe further ordered by this Court That M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Hinckley Capt: James Cudworth and Leift: Morton are Impowered to acte with the Treasurer in the p<sup>r</sup>mises ; or incase of his neglect or refusall to acte in the p<sup>r</sup>mises or any p<sup>t</sup>e therof ; That then the s<sup>d</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Thomas Hinckley Capt: Cudworth and Leift: Morton be heerby fully Impowered to acte therin in the Countryes behalfe without him as alsoe to dispose of the said house and lands, by seting leasing or selling the same in the Countryes behalfe as they shall see cause.

It being moued by some of the Comissioners which mett this yeer att Indians. Boston That some one of the Majestrats might be appointed and Impowered to be healpfull to the praying Indians in this Jurisdiction in Matters ciuill for theire better Gou<sup>r</sup>ment and the Issueing of such controuersies as may arise amongst them ; This Court being sensible that it may haue a good tendencye to the ciuilliseing of the said Indians ; and that it may be some ease both to this Court and to the Indians doe therefore order and empower the Worsh<sup>l</sup> Thomas Hinckley, to call and keep Courts amongst the said Indians att such times and in such places of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; as hee shall thinke meet ; for such end ; and doe heerby Impower him ; together with the heads or cheife of the Indians In the seuerall places to make orders, respecting the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of the said Indians ; and to punish them for misdemenors except in cases capitall, and to issue amongst them all ciuill controverses prouided that the said Indians, shall haue libertie, to make theire appeales from that power to our Court of New Plymouth if they see reason soe to doe ;

\*It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That if any man haue damage done by horses swine sheep or neat Cattle and the damage don Impounding. is full a mile or more from the Towne pound ; Then it shalbe lawfull for such

[PART III.]

\*134  
1675.

\*135

[PART III.] an one to Impound the beast that hath Treaspassed in a pound house or place of restraint, erected vpon his owne ground twenty four houres and that hee shall within six houres giue Notice to the pson that ownes the beast or cattle, which if the owner will not come and satisfy ; Then hee that hath the Treas- pas don him may driue them to the Towne pound ; and shall haue what is Nessesarie for the driueing of them together with the damage, and hee that Impounds the cattle or beast shall giue oath before a majestrate or Celect man (if required) what cattle or beast did the damage soe farr as hee knoweth ; and that shalbe taken for sufficient proffe when other can not be obtained.

fences. It is enacted by the Court that all fences for ceuring of corne shalbe full four foot high or otherwise sufficient by the judgment of Indifferent men ;

Indians. Wheras it is obserued that some by lending Guns &c to the Indians wherby there Nessesary armes are many times out of Culture or out of the power of the owners for there vse if any exegencye should fall ; the Court haue ordered that henceforth none shall lend any Gun or Guns to the Indians on paine of forfeiting them or the vullue of them to the Collonies vse.

Halberts at Election &c. It is ordered by the Court that foure halberteers be in a reddines to Attend the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Assistants on dayes of election yeerly and two after the election is ouer all the time which that Court contineweth ;

Troopers casheir<sup>d</sup>. Wheras it was ordered by the Court that the Troope were Required to procure Carbines ; and serue as a troop of Dragoners, vnderstanding that they haue Generally declined it ; the Court haue ordered that they returne againe to there foot Companies and doe seruice therin and be subject to such orders as are requisite in that behalfe in the seuerall Townshipes whervnto they belonge ,

Meeting house in each Town. It is enacted by the Court that there be a publicke house erected in euery Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment for the Towne comfortably to meet in to wor- ship God ; and incase any Towne shall apparently neglect or refuse to build the said house ; it shalbe in the power of the Gou<sup>r</sup> and Majestrates to appoint and authorise a pson or psons to build the said house according to the abillitie and Nessesitie of the people and the charge therof to be defrayed by all the Inhabitants and propriators of the Towne ;

\*136 \*It is ordered by the Court that wheras Graunts of land haue bin formerly made vnto sundry freemen ; and many more freemen haue petitioned the Court for land ; and the Court not knowing what lands are yett vndisposed of by reason of former Graunts vnto seuerall Townes whose bounds are not certainly knowne this Court doth order M<sup>r</sup> Constant Southworth and Wil-

fam Paybody with such psons as the respectiue townes shall see cause to Joyne with them to run the line ; and to sett the bounds of all such Townes ; where their bounds border on the Comons or vndisposed lands ; whoe are Impowered together, or where any Towne shall omitt or neglect to send or appoint men as aforesaid to Joyne in runing such line or settleing Townes bounds ; then the aboue said M<sup>r</sup> Constant Southworth and Wiltam Paybody shall haue power to doe it, themselues, as neare as they can ; according to Graunts and Records Respecting the p<sup>r</sup>mises ; and what they shall doe therein to stand valled and vniolable for the future and the charge to be defrayed by the seuerall Townes about which they shalbe Employed ;

Alsoe the Court haue ordered and Impowered the aboue named M<sup>r</sup> Constant Southworth and Wiltam Paybody to Run the line between Bridgwater and Middlebery

Incase of the Treasurers Neglect that then Nathaniell Thomas Leiftenant Morton and John Thompson to supply ;

\*Actes and orders of the Court made and concluded the 4<sup>th</sup> of Nouember 1676

\*138  
1676.

**I**T is ordered by the Court and the Authoritie therof ; That there be a true List taken of the Names of all male psons in each Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment that are betwixt the age of sixteen yeers and sixty yeers whether they doe Judge them able to doe seruice or disabled therevnto ; and those in each towne that are Judged by the Towne or Comission officers to be disabled from seruice that they be listed by themselues after the rest ; and this to be brought to Plymouth vnder the hand of the Clarke of the Company or Comission officers against the next June Court.

It is ordered by the Court that each Towne choose two or three men to take a more p<sup>r</sup>fect and exact list of the Rateable estate of the Inhabitants of each Towne and for the better and more cleare bringing in of an Inventory of the Rateable estate of each Towne, these Rules are to be obserued ;

First That a list of the Rateable estate of this Collonie shalbe taken between the 20<sup>th</sup> of May and June Court ; and p<sup>r</sup>sented to June Court ;

2. That in all townes noe Inpropriated lands lying dorman that is within the Towneshipp is to be listed as Rateable

3. That in takeing of a list That beasts cattle sheep hoggs and the Number of them with the p<sup>r</sup>ticular age shalbe expressed, and not a valluation of the worth of them ; in a lumpe estimated by them that take a list

4. That after the list Taken that the Towne meet together to hear the list red ; that if any be wronged hee may make it appeer that hee may be

[PART III.] righted and if any haue not giuen a true list of his estate it may happily be  
 discovered and made manifest by some Naighbours ;

Indians.           Wheras there is an acte or order made by the Councell of warr bearing date July 1676 prohibiting any male Indian captiue to abide in this Jurisdiction that is aboue fourteen yeers of age att the begining of his or theire captiuity and incase any such should continew in the Collonie after the time then prefixed they should be forfeite to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment this Court sees cause to ratify and confeirme that order ; and acte and doe therefore order ; that all such as haue any such Indian male captiue that they shall dispose of them out of the Collonie by the first of December next on paine of forfeiting euery such Indian or Indians to the vse of the Collonie ; and the Constables of each Towne of this Jurisdiction ; are heerby ordered to take notice of any such Indian or Indians staying in any the respectiue townes of this Collonie, after the time prefixed ; and shall forthwith bring them ; To the Treasurer ; To be disposed off to the vse of the Gou<sup>r</sup>ment ; as aforesaid ;

[<sup>1</sup> Beniamen]       Captaine<sup>1</sup> Church haneing ; for and in the behalfe of the Collonie,  
 Indians.           engaged to seuerall Indians ; about fiue or six ; That incase they did carry well they should abide in this Jurisdiction ; and not sold to any fforraigne p<sup>r</sup>tes ; accordingly this Court doth confeirme the said engagement and doth heerby tollarate their stay as aforesaid ; notwithstanding any law of this Collonie to the contrary ; excepting ; if any of them should appeer to haue had a hand in any horred murder of any of the English p<sup>r</sup>ticularly excepting one Crossman ; whoe is accused to haue had a speciall hand in the crewell murder of M<sup>r</sup> Hezekiah Willett ;

\*139  
 Indians.           \*It is enacted by the Court That noe Indian or Indians of those that came in and submitted themselues to mercye shalbe p<sup>r</sup>mitted they nor any of their posteritie to beare Armes for the future within this Collonie ;

Indians.           It is enacted by the Court That noe Indians that are servants to the English shall be p<sup>r</sup>mitted to vse guns for fowling or other exercyse ; as being Judged that it may proue prejudiciall in time to the English ; and therefore that none shalbe p<sup>r</sup>mitted soe to doe on paine of forfeiting euery such Gun soe vsed to the vse of the Collonie ;

Indians.           fforasmuch as by frequent and sad Experience it is found that selling of armes and amunition to the Indians, is very p<sup>r</sup>nisious and destructiue to the

English It is therefore ordered decreed and Inacted by the Court and the authoritie therof; That whosoever shalbe found to sell barter or giue directly or Indirectly any Gun or Guns or Amunition of any kind; to any Indian or Indians; and the same legally proued against them; euery such pson or psons shalbe put to death; And in defect of full and legall proffe there the printed law prohibiting the same selling guns or amunition &c: To take place;

[PART III.]

this was first ordered and enacted by the Councell of Warr in July 1676 and now conformed by the Court.

See printed booke of lawes Chap: 14 page 43:

The Court haue ordered That the necke of land called Showamett shalbe sold the prise wherof to be Improued for the releiffe of maimed souldiers and others that are in Great Nessesitie in our Collonie whose Pouertie hath bin caused by the late warr; as alsoe for the defraying of such Just debts as the Country stands engaged vnto any.

The Gou<sup>r</sup>: M<sup>r</sup> Hinckley Major Cudworth and the Treasurer or any two of them; are appointed, and Impowered by the Court to make sale of Showamett Mount hope and Pocassett in the behalfe of the Collonie; and to make and seale deeds in the Collonies behalfe; for the confection of the sale of them or any of them; and on receipt of the monies; to giue acquittances and discharges as occasion may require;

And the same psons, viz: The Gou<sup>r</sup> M<sup>r</sup> Hinckley Major Cudworth and the Treasurer, are Impowered; together with one chosen and deputed by each Towne in this Collonie; or as many of them as shall appeer att the time & place appointed; To make distribution of the prise onely of Showamett for the releiffe of maimed souldiers and p<sup>r</sup>sons Impoverished by the warr and poor widdowes such as haue lost their husbands in the warr and others in Great Nessesitie and for the defraying such apparent and just debts as are by the Collonie owing vnto any;

\*Att the Generall Court held att Plymouth the fift of June 1677

\*141

**W**HERAS by frequent and sad Experience great disorder acrewes by the great concourse of Indians vnto Plymouth in Court times in that very oftens they drinke themselues drunke wherby God is much dishonored and sober minded men offended; It is ordered by the Court that all Indians be prohibited from appeering att Plymouth in Court times, except vpon speciall occasions, without order from some one of the Majestrates of this Jurisdiction, or a Celect man, on paine of the payment of a fine of fve shillings; for any that shall appeer without a certificate, as aforsaid or to be publickly whipt;

[PART III.]

Att the 2<sup>o</sup>nd session of the Generall Court holden att Plymouth the 10<sup>th</sup> of July ann<sup>o</sup> Dom̄: 1677 actes and orders made and concluded as followeth ;

Wine Liquors  
&c.

**A**S an addition to former orders of the Court for prevention of the grow-  
ing intollerable abuse by wine stronge liquors &c both amongst the  
Indians and English

It is ordered by this Court and the authoritie therof that the order  
mensioned in the printed booke of lawes Chap: 13: N: 1: of retailling wine  
stronge liquors &c: without lycence is to be construed as intending Strangers  
as Well as others.

Ordinary  
keepers &c.

It is enacted by the Court that Noe ordinary keepers or other pson or  
psons shall sell draw or suffer to be drawne any wine or stronge Liquors to any  
but strangers except incase of manifest sicknes or Nessesitie in that kind ; on  
paine of ten shillings fforfeite for euery such default the one halfe to the  
Country and the other halfe to the enformer.

Ordinary  
keepers.

It is ordered by the Court and the authoritie therof that none shall pre-  
sume to deliuer any wine stronge Liquors or Cyder to any pson or psons whoe  
they may suspect will abuse the same ; or to any boyes Gerles or single psons  
tho pretending to come in the name of any sicke pson without a note vnder  
the hand of some sober pson in whose Name ; they come on paine of fve shil-  
lings for euery such Transgression ; the one halfe to the Country and the other  
halfe to the enformer.

This order was  
repealed No-  
uem: first 1677.

And forasmuch as it is Judged that letting the Indians haue siluer mony  
is a great meanes wherby they are furnished with Liquors to their Great  
abuse through the Inordinate loue of their mony by some couetuous or euill  
minded English It is therefore ordered by the Court that noe English or other  
Nation whatsoever liueing with vs shall Giue trucke or Lend any siluer mony  
to any Indian or Indians on any pretence whatsoever on paine of fve times  
the vallue therof to be forfeite ; the one halfe to the Country and the other  
halfe to the enformer.

The names of the men appointed by the Court in euery Towne to see the  
orders about and against abuse of drinke and liquors put in execution are  
as followeth

Plym. Serjean[t] Harlow	}	Barns. Mr. Huckens	}
Andrew Ringe		Mr. Barnabas Loythorp	
Duxburr. John Wadsworth	}	Swansey John Butterworth	}
Benjamin Bartlett		seni <sup>r</sup>	

Scittu. John Bryant	}	Marsh. Thomas Doghed	}	[PART III.]
Thomas Wade	}	Ephraim Little	}	
Sandw. Mr Edmond ffreeman	}	Reho. Mr Samuel Newman		
Thomas Tupper	}			
Taunton James Walker	}	Easth. Will: Walker	}	
Joseph Wilbore	}	Daniel Cole seni <sup>r</sup>	}	
Yarmouth John Hawes	}	Bridgw. Serj. Cary	}	
Anthony Frey	}	John Haward x x	}	

\*Att the second session of the Generall Court held att Plym the 10<sup>th</sup> of July i677 Actes and orders made and concluded \*143

~~It is enacted by the Court and the authoritie therof That, the order Injoyn- ing the Milletary Commission officers in each Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment: shall againe be put in execution for the Training and Exersyseing of the<sup>r</sup> Companies four dayes in a yeer; and that they not onely traine theire souldiers in theire postures and motions; but alsoe in shooting att Markes &c:~~

It is enacted by the Court That all such p<sup>r</sup>sons in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment whoe Military. haue serued vnder Comission in the late Warr against the Natiues shall not be compellable to serue in the Milletary Companie in any lower capassitie then Comission officers; and those officers whoe serued in lower degree shall returne to theire former stations;

It is enacted by the Court That the order made by the Generall Court Military. October the fourth i675 Respecting carrying of Armes to the Meeting be put in execution by all such p<sup>r</sup>sons as are by the Lawes of this Collonie Required to beare armes viz: the one halfe of the Companie one day and the other the other day; and soe continewd vntill further order to the Contrary from the Gou<sup>r</sup> or Councill;

It is enacted By the Court That the order of Court made Ann<sup>o</sup> i644 Military. allowing Matchcockes be repealed; and that all p<sup>r</sup>sons Required by the Lawes of this Collonie to keep and Maintaine armes; be att all times provided with sufficient fix fier lockes or snaphance Musketts or other servicable peeces not exceeding four foot and an halfe longe; nor vnder Colliuer bore on penaltie of six shillings to be leuied on the estate of all and euery such p<sup>r</sup>son or p<sup>r</sup>sons as by order are appointed to keep and Maintaine the same; and that euery p<sup>r</sup>son required to keep and Maintaine Armes shall for euery fier locke or snap- hance be alwaies provided with thirty ffints on penaltie of twelue pence fine;

[PART III.]

Military.

It is enacted by the Court; that the Comission officers in each Towne of this Gou'ment doe speedily put in execution the order of Court made the fourth of July (73) for serching for defects of armes and amunition;

Military.

It is enacted by the Court that the Order of Court bearing date i640 shall by the Milletary Comission officers of this Jurisdiction, be put in execution againe viz. The order concerning Training; with this, limitation, and addition that wheras formerly the Milletary Companies were required to traine six times in a yeer they are to traine or be exercised but four times in a yeer; and that they not onely traine thire souldiers in their postures and motions but alsoe att shooting att Markes &c

\*145

\*The Generall Court held att Plymouth the first of Nouember Ann<sup>o</sup> i677

Select Courts.

**I**T was enacted;

That wheras complaint is made that the order of Court made June i675 concerning Celect Courts that there should be but two in a towne Annually, proueth very prejudiciall to seuerall of our Inhabitants;

It is therefore ordered by this Court that the Celect men in any of our seuerall Townes may hold one or two Courts more in a yeer in their respective townshipes; one on the first Tusday in the month of December yeerly and on the first Tusday in May; if they see cause soe to doe;

Strangers  
tradeing with  
Indians.

fforasmuch as great inconuenienc doth arise by strangers lying with their vessells in our harbours trading with the Indians wherby such as belonge to the said vessells haue not onely oppertunity by their Trading to defeat such just debts as the said Indians are indebted to our English Inhabitants, by their carrying all they haue to such traders but also being found by experience, that therby the Indians are furnished with prohibited goods contrary to the lawes and peace of this Gou'ment; as liquors guns and amunition &c

This Court doth therefore order that noe fforaignor doe hence forth lye with his vessell in any of our harbours soe as to trade with any of the Indians of this Jurisdiction vnder any pretence whatsoever on paine of the forfeiture of his vessell and goods to the Collonies vse; or the sume of fiue or ten pounds as any of the Majestrates or court may see cause as the matter may be cercomstanced;

Schools.

fforasmuch as the Maintainance of good litterature doth much tend to the advancement of the weale and florishing estate of societies and Republicques



This Court doth therefore order; That in whatsoever Township in this Government consisting of fifty families or upwards; any meet man shall be obtained to teach a Gramer scoole such townshipp shall allow att least twelue pounds in currant marchantable pay to be raised by rate on all the Inhabitants of such Towne and those that haue the more emediate benifitt therof by their childrens going to scoole with what others may voutentarily giue to promote soe good a work and generall good, shall make vp the resedue Nessesarie to maintaine the same and that the proffitts arising of the Cape fishing; heertofore ordered to maintaine a Gramer scoole in this Collonie, be distributed to such Townes as haue such Gramer scooles for the maintainance therof; not exceeding five pounds p anum to any such Towne vnlesse the Court Treasurer or other appointed to manage that affaire see good cause to adde thervnto to any respectiue Towne not exceeding five pounds more p annum; and further this Court orders that euery such Towne as consists of seauenty families or upwards and hath not a Gramer scoole therein shall allow and pay vnto the next Towne which hath such Gramer scoole kept vp amongst them, the sume of five pounds p annum in currant Marchantable pay, to be leuied on the Inhabitants of such defectiue Townes by rate and gathered and deliuered by the Constables of such Townes as by warrant from any Majes- trate of this Jurisdiction shall be required;

[PART III.]

The 5th of June 1678 It was enacted by the Generall Court That in euery place in this Government wher a Township is or that is capeable for a Township being begun to be peopled though not filled with Inhabitants; they or few of them being desirus to promote the publicke worshipp of God amongst them; shall be assisted by this Government, soe as that the charge to gett an able faithfull preacher of Gods word and to Maintaine the same shall be Raised vpon all the Chattles and Lands or other Rateables, of all the Propriators of any such place that is there found;

Few shall be encouraged in getting a minister.

Att the said Court it was ordered that all fines falling by the Transgression of the lawes prohibiting the retailing of wines Liquors beer or cyder without lycence; and all fines for selling of wine beer liquors or cyder to the Indians shall be payed in siluer mony;

Fines p<sup>d</sup> in siluer.

\*Att the Generall Court of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> held att Plymouth for the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth the fift of June i678.

\* 147

**I**T was enacted by the Court that there be a publicke house or houses erected finished repaired and Inlarged as there shall be need; in euery Towne and village; in this Gov<sup>ment</sup>; allowed; to be sett vp the worship of God

Meeting houses built repaired &amp; enlarged.

[PART III.] in ; for the people in such Respective places, to meet together for that end ;  
 and incase the people of any such place shall refuse or neglect soe to doe ;  
 It shall then be in the power of the Court ; to appoint or authorise a pson or  
 psons to build finish Repaire and Inlarge such said house, from time to time  
 as Need may be ; according to the abillitie of the people of any such place ;  
 Requiring men to make a rate or rates vpon all the Inhabitants and propri-  
 ators, of any such Towne or village ; To defray the charge of any such  
 worke ; and alsoe to Require the Constable to gather such Rate or Rates, and  
 make payment therof where it shalbe due for such worke ;

None vote in  
 Towns without  
 takeing y<sup>e</sup> oath  
 of fidellity.

Wheras Complaint is Made that the voateing of p'sons that haue not  
 taken the oath of fidellity, doth much obstruct the carrying on of religion in  
 the publicke weale

It is enacted by the Court that noe pson whoe hath Not taken the oath  
 of fidellitie shall haue libertie to voate in any Towne meeting vntill hee hath  
 taken the aforsaid oathe and that there shalbe a Record of the names of all  
 that haue or doe take the said oath, and kept by the Clarke of euery towne  
 of their owne men that haue taken the same ;

Inhabite with-  
 out leaue  
 warned &c.

ffor the preventing of prophanes Increasing in the Collonie which is soe  
 provoakeing to God and threatening to bringe Judgments vpon vs ;

It is enacted by the Court as an addition to our printed order Chapter  
 9<sup>th</sup> folio 30<sup>th</sup> That none shall come to inhabite without leaue &c: and if any  
 haue or shall att any time Intrude themselues to Inhabite any where within  
 this Collonie, not attending the aforsaid order, shall forthwith be warned to  
 be gon out of the Collonie, which if they shall not speedily doe, then euery  
 such offender shall pay fve shillings p weeke for euery weekes continuance in  
 this Collonie after warning, to be gon ;

Not sell or lett  
 accomdati<sup>n</sup> be-  
 fore accepted  
 on penalty.

And if any of our Inhabitants shall att any time sell or hier out accom-  
 odation in this Collonie To any that haue not according to Court order bin  
 accepted, into this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment, or otherwise entertaine any such Inhabitant  
 they shalbe fined fve or ten pound, or more according to the descretion of  
 the Court ; hoping the Court wilbe carefull ; that whom they accept off ;  
 are psons orthadox in their Judgments ;

\*Att the Generall Court held by adjourment att Plymouth for the Jurisdiction of New Plymouth on the third of July año: Dom̃ 1679 Actes and orders made and concluded as followeth;

[PART III.]

\*149

IT is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof

That the seallers shall make serch within their limitts in any house shopp or ware house where they shall conceiue such defectiue lether is to be sold or deliuered whether made vp into shoes Boots or otherwise as oft as they shall thinke meet; And seize all such lether or shooes And any lether sold or offered to be sold brought or offered to be serched or sealed contrary to the true Intent and meaning of this order; The same to seize and retaine in his or their Custody and if the owner shall not submitt to the Judgment of such officer or officers; shall within three dayes; call to him two or three honest and skilfull men in such ware to view the same in the p'sence of the ptie concerned, or without him (hee haueing notice therof) whoe shall certify vpon their oathes to the Court or some one of the Majestrates, the defect of the said lether;

Imp<sup>r</sup>. This to be aded to the order about lether & shoo-makers Sealers of Lether &c.

And that the forfeiture of such lether or shooes as aforesaid one third therof shall goe to the searcher, and the other two thirds to the Plantation wherin the offence is comitted Ditto.

And if any sealler of Leather shall refuse with convenient speed to seale any leather sufficiently tanned, wrought, and vsed according to the true meaning of this order, or shall seale that which ought not to be sealed according to this order, shall forfeit for euery such default twenty shillings. Ditto.

It is enacted by the Court &c: To the intent; That the Countreyes affaires may be the better carried on att the Generall Courts of election; That the answare to p'sentments and thinges of like nature; that may conveniently; be refered to July Courts;

It is enacted by the Court &c:

That All publicke ciuill officers haue an oath formed for each office and brought to the printed booke. Oaths.

It is enacted by the Court That the Secretary be yeerly vnder oath.

It is enacted by the Court &c: That the deputie Gou<sup>r</sup> be vnder oath as such and therefore annually chosen.

It is enacted by the Court &c. That all evidences p'sented in the Court be kept vpon the file; and that henceforth none be admitted written by the plaintiffe or defendant or either of their Attorneys, but by some Indifferent Euidences on file nor writ by partys.

[PART III.] pson and in the witnesses owne words ; and alsoe strictly examined by Court or Majestrate, as the case may require for the clearing of the truth.

It is enacted by the Court &c:

Cost of Court  
p<sup>d</sup> in mony.

That all costs of Court graunted in any action be payed in siluer mony as hath bine Accustomed.

It is enacted by the Court &c:

That in all executions for the leuying of debts in specue according to contract and gathering of rates and fines as by order of Court is required that where the specue will not be tendered nor can not be found, there other goods leuied or destrained shalbe sold att an outcry to procure the same vpon publicke notice giuen therof.

Constables  
power of Wa-  
ter Bayleys

It is enacted by the Court ; That the Constables are Impowred without warrant to make destresse for all sorts of Rates orderly made and comitted to them to collect And that the Constables in the seuerall Plantations shall haue the power of Water Bayleyes in the respectiue plantations where their is occation for the same.

\*150

\*Att the third session of the Generall Court held att Plymouth the 28<sup>th</sup> of Septem: i680

Indians.

**I**T was ordered by the Court, that it shalbe Lawfull for any of the Majestrates, to giue a lycence to Any English ; to sell to our ffrendly Indians, such smale quantities of powder and shott, and to lend such armes to such of them, as such Majestrates, shall see cause, to lycence thervnto ; vnder ; his hand ; Which tickett shalbe a sufficient Warrant to such English, any order of Court, to the contrary, In any wise Notwithstanding ;

\*151

\*Actes and orders of Court made and concluded by the Generall Court Att their second session att Plymouth the 7<sup>th</sup> of July Ann<sup>o</sup> Doñ: i68i as followeth

Apprisem<sup>ts</sup>.

**F**OR the apprisment of Goods or other estate to be leuied by destresse or execution, it is ordered and enacted by the Court ; That hee whose estate is to be prised, is to choose one aprisor ; and hee that is to receiue the estate prised, is to choose another appriser, and incase either neglect to choose ; Then the Constable or Marshall to choose one for him ; and if they two agree not, Then the Marshall or Constable to be the third man ; and where the p<sup>r</sup>tye concerned refuseth to sett forth suitable estate ; both as to Nearnes of sume to be leuied and to the specy due ; there the Constable or

Marshall shall seize such goods as may best suite thervnto ; To be equally and Indifferently prised according to the specye due and not ouerprised ; [PART III.]

Wheras there was an order to sell goods att an outcry

In reference to the p'mises ; it is now by the Court repealed.

It is ordered by this Court that there shall not be allowed about five shillings cost for any attorney or attorneyes to any one action and where there shall happen to be but one Attorney entertained but one day in any one action ; then to haue two shillings and six pence onely allowed him for cost therin ; Attorneys allowance.

It is ordered by the Court that euery Towne in this Jurisdiction choose three men to be Joyned together with those of the Comission officers to be of their towne Councill ; Three men joyned to Com officers to be y<sup>e</sup> Town Councel.

Concerning Celect Courts Wheras some times it falls out that the plaintiffe Not residing in the same Towne where the case is depending They shall putt in Caution to repaire the defendant if found Inosent before the plaintiffe hath sumons graunted him ;

Wheras the Law saith that the Celect men shall haue their pay att the bringing in of their verdict it is now ordered by the Court that they shall haue their pay att the entering of the action ; Select men.

Wheras wee find Noe prouision in the law to obtaine any Witnes out of any other towne to bringe euidence in any case that is depending out of the Towne where the witnes liues, it shalbe lawfull for either plaintiffe or defendant to require a subpoena of any Celect man of the same Towne where the witnesses liue ; to require any pson to appeer before some one of the Celect men of the same Towne ; To giue euidence before some one or more whoe shall convey it to the Celect Court of that Towne where the case is depending ; Sumons Witness.

If any pson being legally subpoenaed to giue in his euidence before any Celect Court or Celect man, and shall either refuse or neglect to giue in his euidence, being capeable to giue euidence in the case ; shall pay for euery such default ; a fine of twenty shillings, to the vse of the ptie wronged ; for want of such euidence ; Neglect.

\*It is enacted by the Court in reference vnto Milletary discipline That all the Milletarye Companies in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment be made compleat in their officers of as able and fit men as they may be. \*152 Military.

It is enacted by this Court That euery souldier in this Jurisdiction that beares Armes be with all convenient speed furnished with a compleat sword or cutlas ; Military.

[PART III.]

Choice of  
Select men.

It is ordered by the Court and the Authoritie therof that the choise of Celect men be specified in the warrants that are sent downe to the seuerall Townes for the choise of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> officers; and their names to be returned vnto the Court vnder the Constables hand and to be called in Court to take their oath as is in such case prouided; and if incase any prouidence p<sup>r</sup>vent, their appearence then to appeer before some Majestaratate of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment; within one Month after the said Court to take oath vnder the penalty of twenty shillings further it is enacted by this Court That each Towne of this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment doe provide a booke wherin shall be entered all those orders of Court as are or shalbe made for direction of said Celect Courts by the Secretary being first to enter all said lawes in each of the said bookes or send coppys therof to each Towne.

Military.

It is ordered by this Court that the Comission officers of the Milletary Companies of each Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment doe take care That one fourth pte of said Milletary Companies doe bringe their armes fixed to the Meetings euery Lords daye; with euery souldier bearing armes six charges of Powder and shott viz begining from the begining of Aprill to the end of October yearly and euery yeer as well in times of peace as warr; onely in times of danger they shalbe increased as the Milletary Comaunders and Towne Councill shall see cause and that such as palpably neglect or refuse to p<sup>r</sup>forme their duty therein shall forfeite two shillings for euery such Neglect; and ten shillings incase it appeers to be in contempt; To be gathered by order from the Comission officers to the Constable; and where it appeers that any doe ordinarily and p<sup>r</sup>posely keep from meeting because they would not bringe their Armes as aforsaid to be summoned to the Court to haue such reasonable fines as to the Court shall seem meet, saueing such townes wherby agreement amongst themselues they haue such a number of men proportionable to aforsaid order constantly to carry their armes on euery Lords day; to the meetings.

\*153

\*Lawes and orders made by the Generall Court holden att Plymouth July the 7. 1682.

Indians.

**W**ITH reference to the Indians for their better regulateing and that they may be brought to liue orderly soberly and dilligently first It is enacted by this Court And the Authoritie therof That in each Towne of this Jurisdiction where Indians liue; some one able descreet man be apointed by the Court of Assistants; from time to time as oftens as need shall require to take the ouersight and Gou<sup>r</sup>ment of the Indians in the said Towne according to such lawes orders and instructions as are or shalbe made and giuen by the Generall Court;

It is ordered by the Court that the said ouerseer with the Tithingmen in that Towne shall haue power to heare and determine all causes that may happen betwixt Indian and Indian Capitalls and titles vnto lands onely excepted alwaies allowing liberty of appeale to any pty greiued att their Judgment to the Court of Assistants. [PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court; That the said ouerseer shall haue power by warrant vnder his hand to comaund any English Constable in his Township and all Indian Constables whatsoeuer to Arrest attach Summons & serue executions on the body or goods of any of the Indianes for any matter or cause that may in his Court be heard and determined;

That in each towne where Indians doe reside euery tenth Indian shalbe chosen by the Court of Assistants or said ouerseer yeerly whoe shall take the Inspection care and ouersight of his nine men and present their faults <sup>1</sup> Misdemenors to the ouerseer which said ouerseer shall keep a list of the Names of the said Tithing Men and those they shall haue the charge of and the said tithingmen shalbe Joyned to the ouerseer in the Adminnestration of Justice and in hearing and determining of causes and incase <sup>2</sup> Tithingmen doe not agree with the ouerseer in any case that may come before them in Judgment then the said ouerseer shall haue Negatiue voyce and such case shalbe remoued to be determined by the Court of Assistants. [<sup>1</sup> and ]  
[<sup>2</sup> the ]

That the ouerseer and tithing men shall appoint Constables of the Indians yeerly who shall attend their Courts and the said Constables shall obey all the warrants of the ouerseer on such penalty as the Court of Assistants shall inflict.

Euery Indian shall pay such Rates for his head and estate as the Court of Assistants shall appoint from time to time; which Rates shalbe made and proportioned by the ouerseers Court and gathered by their Constables and payed to the Treasurer or his order.

That once euery yeer the ouerseer shall summons all the Indians within his Townshipp to meet together where and when hee shall appoint and there shall hee cause to be read to their vnderstanding all the capitall and criminall lawes of this Collonie that they may know and obserue them;

That euery Indian in this Collonie shalbe subject to all the capitall and criminall lawes that are or shalbe made for the English of this Collonie and for breach of them suffer the same penalty wher noe other law is provided for them;

All Indians for drunkenes shalbe seuerly punished for the first Transgression they shalbe fined fiue shillings or be whipt for the second ten shillings

[PART III.] or be whipt and soe for euery time any of them shalbe convicted of drunkenes before any Court Majestrate ouerseer tithing man or English Constable ;

As an addition to a law made in Nouember 1676 prohibiting all such Indians as were our Enimies to beare armes It is further enacted That the ouerseer of the Indians in each Towne shall take speciall Notice and make Inquiry from time to time whoe of the said Indians haue procured any English armes and seize the same for the vse of the Collonie allowing one halfe of the vallue to the Informer ;

That noe fforaigne Indian of other Collonies or Plantations shalbe suffered to hunt in any Towne or Plantation of this Collonie without a pmitt from a majestrate or the Celect men of that Towne wher they shall desire to hunt shewing for how longe they desire to stay ; on penalty of the forfeiture of all such furrs and skins as they shall theire gett ; Nor shall any fforaigne Indian haue a p'mitt to hunt in this Collonie vnlesse they bring a certificate from the place whence they came ;

\*154  
Indians.

\*Wheras the Indians by their disorderly remoueing from one Place to another liue Idlely and on the Labours of others and spend their time to Noe Profitt It is therefore enacted by the Court that noe Indian whatsoever shall remoue from one place to another without a pmitt in writing, from his ouerseer declaring for what cause or how ; long and whether hee or they are going ; and if any Indian shall remoue from one place to another without his pmitt hee shalbe taken vpp by the Constable of that place where such wanderer shalbe found and carryed before the next ouerseer whoe shall cause him to pay a fine of fve shillings or be whipt ; and sent home to his owne place ; and where Noe ouerseer is to be found the English Constable in that Towne where such Indians are to be found as aforsaid shall execute this office as the ouerseer aboue named might doe nor shall any Indians remoue from one place or Plantation to an other ther to abide aboue three dayes but shall goe to the ouerseer of that towne wher hee is remoued for his pmitt ; declaring for what cause hee came thither and how longe hee or they desire to stay ; and if any Indian shall stay in Any place without a pmitt ; in writing as abouesaid hee shalbe fined fve shillings or be whipt and alsoe sent backe to the place of his former abode.

fforasmuch as the office of an ouerseer is & wilbe burthensome and chargeable It is therefore ordered that hee shalbe allowed out of the publicke Treasury a yeerly sallery.

The said ouerseers and Constables shalbe accomptable to the Treasurer for all Indian Rates and fines ;

And that all Indian and English Constablès shalbe payed by the ouer-



seers for serueing warrants in Criminall cases and Inflicting of Punishments on the Indians out of the Indian fines or Rates ; [PART III.]

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof; that if an Indian whoe is a servant to the English shall run away amongst any Indians such Indians whither such a runaway Indian is come shall forthwith giue notice of the said Run away to the Indian Constable whoe shall Imediatly apprehend such Indian servant; and carry him or her before the Ouerseer or Next Majestrate whoe shall cause such servants to be whipt; and sent home by the Constable to his or her master whoe shall pay said Constable for his service therin according as the Majestrate or ouerseer whoe sent such seruant home shall Judge meet;

This Court doth Request our Honored Gour<sup>r</sup>, that now is; to take the Generall ouersight & Inspection of the whole affaire of the Gour<sup>m</sup>ent of the Indians in such manor; as by law is or shalbe prescribed from time to time and to take care of the Preaching of the Gospell amongst them; and Amitting such of the Indians to preach to them as hee shall thinke fittest for that seruice; and alsoe to distribute amongst them; what for that end comes yeerly from England and is allowed to them by the Comissioners of the Vnited Colonies in such manor as hee shall see meet.

Wheras diuers Marchants Shopkeepers Tradsmen and Handicrafts men haue traded sold and trafficked there goods wares and Marchantice to diuers persons in private and there Costomers oftens sending for such thinges as they Need by children and servants vnder age &c: wherby such Marchants shopkeepers and Tradsmen haue Noe oppertunity to take bonds bills or witnes of the deliuary of there goods yett just it is that such dealers should be duly payed for there wares and Marchantice It is therefore enacted that all and euery Marchant shopkeeper dealler &c: shall keep a booke of there dealing and trading fairely writteng downe therin both debt and credit and the said Marchants there ffactors or servants or any of them that shall deliuer any such wares or Marchandice; makeing oath that the said Booke of accompts is true both for debt and credit; such Booke of accompts shalbe held sufficient in law for the recouery of any debt within four yeers after the deliuary of any such goods; But if the defendant will take his oathe that hee had not those goods charged in the booke or accompt; or that hee hath payed for the same; then the case shalbe tryed and determined according to the best and strongest presumptions the ptyes concerned shall produce;

\*for the settleing and maintaining of Right amongst Naighbors about fences It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof That all such persons as doe or shall make Improument of there land by tilling moweing or

Debts what  
prooffe &c.

\*155

Fences equally  
made &c

[PART III.] grasing which doth or may lye and be adjacent to the lands of any other whoe make Improuement of their land aforesaid; The one propriator or Improuer shall make and Maintaine one halfe of the ffence and the other the other halfe of the ffence in the line or range between the said land;

And where one pson shall Improue his Land before his Naighbour and make the whole ffence himselfe; if afterward his said Naighbour shall Improue his land alsoe hee shall pay his Naighbour for halfe the ffence against his land; according to the present value of it and shall Maintaine the same and if any such p<sup>r</sup>son shall cease to Improue his land as aforesaid then any pson that hath Joyned ffence shall haue liberty to purchase his p<sup>r</sup>te of the fence that seaseth to Improue paying him according to present vallew by Apprisement of indifferent psons;

And when any psons shall make Improuement of their land lying together; and either of them shall refuse or neglect to make or Maintaine one halfe of the ffence between their land lying together as aforesaid; The p<sup>r</sup>tye Making the whole ffence in the line or Range as aforesaid; shall cause the same to be viwed and apprised by psons mutually chosen by him and his Naighbour; but if the Naighbour whoe refuseth to ffence shall refuse to chose any to view and apprise the ffence then hee that made the ffence shall haue liberty to make choise of Indifferent psons to view and apprise the said ffence; and the p<sup>r</sup>ty refusing or Neglecting his halfe of ffence shall pay to him that makes and Maintaines it the full vallue of his cost and charges for said halfe from time to time to be recouered by due course of law in any Court proper for the same provided this law be not binding to such as haue their land lye together in a comon field in such case if any pson ffence in his land Intirly hee shall doe it wholly att his owne proper charge;

As an addition to the printed law allowing libertie to men to cleare themselves by their oath incase of being acused for selling strong drinke to the Indians It is ordered That Noe English pson that is acused by an Indian for giueing selling &c: strong drinke to them shall be put to sweare further then the p<sup>t</sup>icular accusation;

The law made July 1673 about horses: viz: the two latter clauses of it allowing the killing of them is repealed;

The law prohibited the catching of ffish before they haue spauned is to be Reviued by the Comissioners att their next sessions;

Horses.

Wheras complaint is made that diuers p<sup>r</sup>sons in disorderly manor haue taken vp horses as straves which were then Runing in the woods for preven-

tion wherof for the future it is enacted that noe pson shall take vp any horse kind as a stray which is taken Runing in the woods between the first of Aprill and the first of December yeerly on penalty of ten shillings fine to the Collonie besides damage to the owner of such horses. [PART III.]

Wheras in diuers Townes and places of this Collonie there are seuerall Tracts of land which belong to and are held by diuers psons in comon as the propriators therof and noe order hath bine yett made for their orderly meeting together to deuide the said lands or to make orders for the<sup>1</sup> and settlement of the same ; It is therefore enacted that where need doth require in any such place or Towneshipp ; if the matter doe not concern the Towne as a Towne in Generall vpon request made by the said propriators or some of them to any majestrate of this Collonie an order shalbe graunted them to warne all the propriators belonging to any such Towne to come together att some certaine time and place to Transact such matters as may concerne them and what shalbe lawfully acted att such meeting by the propriators or the Major pte of them shalbe vallid and binding ; Divideing lands. [1 well]

\*It is enacted by the Court That in euery case of ciuell Nature between pty & pty where there shalbe soe neare a relation between any Judge and either of the ptyes as father and son by Nature or by Marriage brother and brother Vnkel and Nephew Landlord and tenant such Judge though hee may giue reasonable advice in the case yett shall hee not haue power to censure therein as a Judge ; \*156 Exceptions against Judge or Jury.

It is enacted by the Court and the Authoritie therof that none shalbe allowed to keepe an ordinary or publike house of entertainment but such as first be approued soe to doe by the townes wherein they liue ; Ordinary keepers allowed by y<sup>e</sup> Towns.

Wheras complaint is Made of much damage don by swine Rooting vp meddowes and Inclosures for the preventision wherof it is ordered and enacted that on Notice giuen to the owners of such swine from the pty damnified, said owners shall forthwith Ringe or cause to be sufficient Ringed all such swine ; on penalty of one shilling to be payed for euery such swine that shalbe found vnringed after warning giuen by the wronged pty ; and as often as the owner of such swine shalbe warned to ringe them and Neglect it. Swine.

It is enacted that if any Shipp or other vessell be it frind or enemy shall suffer Shipwracke vpon our Coast there shalbe noe violence vsed nor wrong offered to their psons or goods but their p<sup>r</sup>sons shalbe releued & harboured ; and their

- [PART III.] goods preserved in safety vntill Authoritie may be certified and giue further order therein.
- Ordinarys.  
[<sup>1</sup> weekly] It is enacted that in euery place wher week day<sup>1</sup> lectures are kept, all victuallers and ordinary keepers shall cleare their houses of all psons able to goe to meeting during the time of the Exercyse except in extreordinary cases for the Nessesary releiffe of Strangers vnexpected repairing to them on penalty of five shillings for euery such offence
- Servile worke  
£c. on day of  
Humil: £c.  
[on] penalty  
of five shil-  
lings. It is enacted that none shall p<sup>r</sup>sume to attend servill worke or labour or attend any sports on such dayes as are or shalbe appointed by the Court for humilliation by fasting and prayer or for publicke Thanksgiueing on penalty of five shillings.
- Sabbath. To preuent prophanation of the Lords day by fforaignors or any others vnnesesary traueiling through our Townes on that day; It is enacted by the Court that a fitt man in each Towne be chosen vnto whom whosoouer hath Nessesity of trauell on the Lords day incase of danger of death or such Nessesitous occations shall repaire and makeing out such occations satisfyingly to him shall receiue a Tickett from him to pas on about such like occations which if the traueiler attend not vnto; It shalbe lawfull for the Constable or any man that meets him to take him vp and stop him vntil hee be brought before Authority or pay his fine for such transgression as by law in that case is provided; and if it after shall appeer that his plea was ffalce then may hee be apprehended att another time and made to pay his fine as aforesaid;
- Foraigners &c.  
[<sup>2</sup> strangers] It is enacted that all forraigners<sup>2</sup> that sell Liquors their vessell shalbe confiscate vntil their fine is payed.
- Presse Artifi-  
cers to repair  
prisons &c. It is ordered That the Gou<sup>r</sup> or any of the Assistants shall haue power to presse men Artificers or others to make or repaire prisons or other Instru-ments of Justice and to order their payments att such reasonable rates as for other worke is accustomed and the Court of Majestrates is to order the pay of such as are Employed in any occations for the Countreyes vse;
- Stocks, £c. That euery Towne in this Gou<sup>r</sup>ment shall haue a paire of stockes and a whipping post.
- Witnesses. The order Chapt: 4: Secti; 5 for two shillings six pence p day for witnesses shall be intended onely for such as for the waight of the matter are justly required to make their psonall appeerance att Court; other witnesses on oath are to haue but one shilling £ six pence a day;

It is enacted that noe Indians heerafter shalbe trusted before hand for Indians not trusted. any thing by any English on penalty of being Barred the recouery of any debts by action or plaint;

\*It is enacted by the Court That none shall p<sup>r</sup>sume to buy any guns \*157 tooles clothes or any other goods of the Indians vnder the penalty of his returne of said guns tooles clothes or other goods to the Right owners therof from whom they were borrowed stollen or p<sup>r</sup>loyned by any Indian;

It is enacted by the Court that any debt dew by bill or specialty to Assignm<sup>ts</sup> another shalbe as good a debt to the Assignee as it was to the Assigner and as recouerable by suite provided the Assignment be vnder the Assigners hand; and witnesses thervnto;

It is enacted by the Court and the authority therof That all deceightfull Fraudulent conveyances. or ffraudulent allianations of lands or other estate shalbe of noe vallidity to defeat any man from any due debts just clame title or possession of that which is so fraudulently; gotten;

It is enacted by the Court That noe conveyance deed or promise shalbe Duress. valled which is gotten by illegall violence Imprisonment threats or fforcible compultions;

It is ordered by the Court

That euery Towne doe procure their bounds<sup>1</sup> to be sett out within Town bounds. twelue monthes after the end of this Court by such p<sup>r</sup>sons as the Court [of land.] of Assistants shall appoint to lay out the Same; wher such bounds are not alreddy layed out and to deside any difference where they are alreddy layed out that may arise between any p<sup>r</sup>ties concerned therin; whether the Townes Country or any other p<sup>r</sup>sons to whom any lands are graunted saucing to the greiued p<sup>r</sup>ty his remedy Att law And that in euery Towne the Towne or Celect men appoint two or three p<sup>r</sup>sons whoe on notice giuen to or by the adjacent Townes shall once in euery two or three yeers goe to the bounds between them to view and renew their bound which shalbe a heape of stones or a trench of six foot longe a foote and an half deep and two foot wide vpon paine of fve pounds for euery Towne that shall neglect the same; and that each propriator of lands in any Comon feild or lying vnfenced that shall not once in the yeer or in two yeer; on warning giuen him by his Naighbour attend the meeting to keep vp the bounds betwixt them which shalbe sufficient meet stones shall forfeite ten shillings for such

[PART III.] default ; the one halfe to the p<sup>ty</sup> moueing and the other halfe to the Country and that two or three men shalbe appointed by each Towne to deside the controuersy or difference between the naighbours or between the Towne and any of the Inhabitants about the bounds of their lands ; Sauing to the greiued p<sup>ty</sup> his remedy in law ;

# GENERAL INDEX.





# GENERAL INDEX.

<p><b>A</b>CCOUNTS for public services to be settled, 61, 93, 171</p> <p>Accushenett, Acushenett, advised to procure a minister, . . . . . 141, 210</p> <p>Actions, not to be tried at June court, . . . . . 93</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">limitations of, . . . . . 48, 49, 225, 226</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">appeals regulated, . . . . . 227</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">entered as soon as commenced, . . . . . 44</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">charges paid before entry, 63, 74, 93, 130, 167, 251</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">to be entered upon the warrants or summons going out, . . . . . 94</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">penalty for bringing in any other jurisdiction, 64</p> <p>Address, by Court to the inhabitants, . . . 72, 148</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">to His Majesty, for confirmation of patent, . 186</p> <p>Administration of estates, . . . . . 15, 112</p> <p>Adultery punished, . . . . . 12, 95, 172</p> <p>Alarm, how given, . . . . . 26, 106</p> <p>Alden, John, . . . . . 25</p> <p>Alewives, wears for, . . . . . 34</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">penalty for stopping them, . . . . . 49</p> <p>Allerton, Isaac, . . . . . 20, 23, 74, 146</p> <p>Allotments of lands, . . . . . 4</p> <p>Annable, Anthony, . . . . . 6</p> <p>Apaum, alias Patuxet, Indian name of Plymouth, 20, 151</p> <p>Appraisalment of goods taken by execution, 234, 250</p> <p>Arms, allowed for service, . . . . . 41, 104, 180</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">fines of such as are defective in, 43, 44, 104, 180, 234, 245</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">each town to have a stock of, . . . 51, 105, 181</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">each person to be provided with, 14, 17, 181, 251, 252</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">penalty for repairing for Indians, . . . . . 185</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">penalty for lending to Indians, . . . . . 185</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">matchlocks not allowed, . . . . . 245</p>	<p>Arms, superintendents appointed, . . . . . 49, 180</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">inhabitants instructed in the use of, . . . 30, 31</p> <p>Arson, punished with death, . . . . . 12, 95, 172</p> <p>Assignment of debts valid, . . . . . 259</p> <p>Assistants to be chosen, . . . . . 7, 58, 156</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">their power and duty, . . . . . 8, 82, 83, 159</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">their oath, . . . . . 9, 83, 160</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">paid for services, . . . . . 212, 219</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">fine for not serving, . . . . . 10</p> <p>Attorneys, their allowance, . . . . . 251</p> <p>Atwood, Mrs., her weights and scales to be the standard for Plymouth, . . . . . 47</p> <p><b>B</b>ACON, NATHANIEL, . . . . . 187</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">Bangs, Edward, . . . . . 5</p> <p>Bark, exportation prohibited, . . . . . 222, 231</p> <p>Barlow, George, . . . . . 130, 133</p> <p>Barnes, John, . . . . . 25, 61</p> <p>Barnstable, 31, 37, 38, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202, 224, 244</p> <p>Bartlett, Benjamin, . . . . . 187, 244</p> <p>Basse, Edward, . . . . . 23, 153</p> <p>Beans, exportation prohibited, . . . . . 4</p> <p>Beauchamp, Beachamp, John, . . . . . 23, 153</p> <p>Beer, price regulated, . . . . . 17, 113, 195</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">to be kept by retailers of liquors, . . . . . 222</p> <p>Births and burials recorded, . . . . . 52, 53, 189</p> <p>Blackemore, John, . . . . . 31</p> <p>Bluefish River, . . . . . 34</p> <p>Boards, duty on, . . . . . 59, 118, 119, 132, 203</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">price fixed, . . . . . 222</p> <p style="padding-left: 2em;">exportation prohibited, . . . . . 222</p> <p>Book debts recoverable, . . . . . 48, 49, 255</p>
---	--

- Boston, . . . . . 132  
 Bounds of Plymouth Patent, . . 21, 75, 76, 151, 152  
     between Plymouth and Massachusetts, Com-  
     missioners appointed to set, . . . . . 34  
     between Middleborough and Bridgewater, . . 241  
     between Plymouth and Connecticut, . . . . . 55  
 Bourne, John, . . . . . 187  
 Bradford, William, 5, 20, 23, 25, 26, 32, 33, 35, 55,  
     74, 146  
     Commissioner for setting the bounds between  
     Plymouth and Massachusetts, . . . . . 34  
 Brewster, Jonathan, . . . . . 6, 25, 26  
     ferryman at North River, . . . . . 28  
     William, . . . . . 6, 20, 23, 74, 146  
 Bridges at Jones, South, and Eel Rivers, . . . . . 28  
 Bridgewater, 89, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202, 222,  
     245  
     and Middleborough line to be run, . . . . . 241  
 Browne, John, . . . . . 25, 55  
     Mr., . . . . . 25  
 Bryant, John, . . . . . 245  
 Bullocke, Richard, . . . . . 187  
 Burning houses punished with death, . . . 12, 95, 172  
 Bushel, standard established, . . . . . 46, 49, 50, 61  
 Butterworth, John, Sen., . . . . . 244
- C**AGES in each town, . . . . . 11, 126, 166, 205  
 Cambridge College, contribution for, 232, 233  
 Cape Cod fishery, regulated, . . . . . 228, 229, 231  
     duty paid by foreigners, . . . . . 131, 206  
 Capital offences, . . . . . 12, 94, 95, 172  
 Card playing prohibited, . . . . . 66, 96, 173  
 Carpenter, William, . . . . . 133  
 Carver, John, . . . . . 20, 74, 146  
 Carey, Sergeant, . . . . . 244  
 Casks, regulations about, . . . . . 59, 60, 116, 199  
 Cattle, trespassing, to be impounded, . . . 17, 65, 116  
     marks to be recorded, . . . . . 12  
     herding regulated, . . . . . 16  
 Cawsumsett, lands at, not to be bought of the In-  
     dians, . . . . . 221  
 Charles I., . . . . . 21  
     II., proclaimed King, . . . . . 129, 144  
 Charter, granted January 13, 1629, referred to, . . 6  
 Children born in the colony, their privilege, . . 16, 188  
     of poor persons, orders relating to, 38, 120, 193,  
     194  
 Church, Captain [Benjamin], . . . . . 242  
 Churches, none to be established without leave of  
     government, . . . . . 57  
 Cider, penalty for selling without license, . . . 218  
 Clerk, to be chosen, . . . . . 7  
     his salary and oath, . . . . . 35, 37, 85, 161  
 Clerk, his fees, . . . . . 85, 86, 161, 162  
 Coahasset, alias Conahasset, . . . . . 21  
 Cobb, Henry, . . . . . 187  
 Cobbisecontee, alias Comasecontee, . . . . . 21, 76, 152  
 Cohannett, . . . . . 31  
     called Taunton, . . . . . 34  
 Cole, Job, . . . . . 133  
     Daniel, Sen., . . . . . 244  
     James, Sen., . . . . . 222  
 College at Cambridge, contributions for, . . . 232, 233  
 Collyer, Collyare, Colyare, William, 25, 55, 56, 79, 155  
 Colony, right to it maintained, . . . . . 186  
 Comasecontee, alias Cobbisecontee, . . . . . 21, 76, 152  
 Combination, made at Cape Cod, November 11,  
     1620, referred to, . . . . . 6  
 Commissioners of United Colonies, to be chosen, 62, 81,  
     123, 157, 161  
 Common lands, timber to be preserved, . . . . . 13  
     meetings of proprietors, . . . . . 257  
 Confederation of United Colonies to be continued, 230  
 Connecticut bounds to be settled, . . . . . 55  
 Constables to be chosen, . . . . . 7, 157  
     their oath, . . . . . 10, 164  
     to see that highways are made and kept in  
     repair, . . . . . 11  
     their powers, . . . . . 30, 88, 89, 164—166, 250  
     may appoint deputies, . . . . . 33, 43, 90, 165  
     to have staves, . . . . . 122, 165  
     to collect fines, . . . . . 67, 89, 143, 165, 211  
     to serve executions issued by selectmen, . . . 223  
     to warn town meetings, . . . . . 36, 88, 165  
     their duty in collecting rates, . . . . . 215, 216, 220  
     their fees, . . . . . 214  
     fined for not serving, . . . . . 127, 165, 166  
     fined for not taking oath, . . . . . 64, 90  
 Constitution, . . . . . 20—24, 74—78, 150—154  
 Conviction, two witnesses requisite for, . . . 93, 168, 229  
 Cooke, Francis, . . . . . 5  
 Corn, exportation prohibited, . . . . . 4  
 Coroner, his duty, . . . . . 7, 81, 158, 235  
 Costs, paid in money, . . . . . 250  
 Council for New England, charter of New Plym-  
     outh granted by, . . . . . 21  
     of war, their powers, . . . . . 102, 178, 179  
 Courting without parents' consent prohibited, 29, 108  
 Courts, General, see General Court.  
 Courts of Assistants, 11, 37, 39, 57, 79, 156, 216, 249  
     hours for meeting, . . . . . 39, 49  
     special courts purchased, . . . . . 93, 171, 229  
     extent of jurisdiction, . . . . . 13, 41  
     may try small causes without jury, . . . . . 128  
 Courts for small causes, . . . . . 12, 83, 103, 158, 214  
     of selectmen, see Selectmen.  
     for Barnstable, Sandwich, and Yarmouth, . . 34  
     for Rehoboth, . . . . . 55  
 Crimes, capital, . . . . . 12, 94, 95, 172

Crimes, inferior, 12, 18, 46—48, 95, 172—177, 236, 237  
 See Fines.  
 Cromwell, Oliver, . . . . . 80  
 Crossman, . . . . . 242  
 Cudworth, James, . . . . . 6, 56, 79, 155, 239, 243

**D**AMAN, JOHN, . . . . . 187  
 Dartmouth rated for support of minister, 227  
 Deaths, untimely, to be inquired into, . . . . . 235  
 Debts, paid in the specie agreed on, . . . . . 216  
 may be assigned, . . . . . 259  
 Declaration of rights, . 6, 20—24, 74—78, 150—154  
 Deeds to be acknowledged and recorded, 52, 187, 188, 216  
 Defamation punished, . . . . . 229  
 Deputies sent by towns to General Court, 31, 54, 79, 91—93, 155, 169, 170  
 to vote in same body with magistrates, 57, 155, 156, 235  
 may be sent home for incapacity, . . . . . 92, 170  
 Deputy Governor to be sworn, . . . . . 249  
 Dimmack, Dimmacke, Dimacke, Thomas, 31, 56, 79, 155  
 Distillers to render an account of liquors distilled, 135, 136  
 Distress, goods taken by, to be appraised, . . . . . 234  
 goods to be sold, . . . . . 250  
 sale of goods taken by, . . . . . 250  
 law repealed, . . . . . 251  
 Division of lands, . . . . . 4  
 Doghed, Thomas, . . . . . 244  
 Done, John, . . . . . 6  
 John, Jun., . . . . . 186  
 Mr., . . . . . 26  
 Dormant lands, in what town rated, . . . . . 142, 211  
 Dower, . . . . . 13, 131  
 Drunkards disfranchised, . . . . . 177  
 Drunkenness punished, 17, 50, 96, 101, 113, 123, 173, 197, 218, 219  
 Dunham, John, Sen., . . . . . 56, 79, 155  
 Duress, deeds, &c., obtained by, void, . . . . . 259  
 Duty, on liquors, . . . . . 131, 136, 186, 207, 222  
 on fish and oysters, . . . . . 131, 132, 206  
 on iron, boards, and whales, . . . . . 132, 133, 207  
 on tar, . . . . . 132  
 on mackerel, . . . . . 228, 233  
 Duxbury, 31, 37, 38, 41, 107, 124, 126, 133, 182, 187, 202, 222, 244  
 Dwelling-houses to be covered with board or pale, 4

**E**AGLES' NEST, . . . . . 34  
 East Greenwich, tenure adopted, . 12, 21, 187  
 Eastham, . . . . . 89, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202, 245  
 made a township, . . . . . 59, 237  
 Eel River, . . . . . 34  
 bridge, . . . . . 28  
 Election of Governor and other officers, 7, 10, 59, 78—81, 154—157, 212, 240  
 English statutes to be procured, . . . . . 137, 139, 208  
 Errors, circumstantial, not to abate writs, . . . . . 224  
 Estates of deceased persons settled, 13, 15, 112, 133, 188, 195  
 insolvent, divided among creditors, . . . . . 15, 188  
 Evidence, to be in writing and filed, 130, 206, 249, 250  
 to be given within a year after fact, . . . . . 229  
 Excise, on wines, &c., 51, 131, 135, 136, 186, 207, 215  
 payment enforced, . . . . . 56  
 collectors appointed, . . . . . 133, 186, 187  
 their oath, . . . . . 133, 187  
 penalty for insulting them, . . . . . 54  
 to be let, . . . . . 58, 218  
 Execution, goods taken on, delivered to plaintiff, 45, 65, 94  
 levy, how made, . . . . . 45, 94, 171, 234, 250, 251  
 Executions from the General Court or Court of Assistants, to be executed by the marshal, . . . . . 94  
 Exportation of hides, and other articles, prohibited, . . . . . 119, 222, 230, 231

**F**AIRS held at Duxbury, . . . . . 32  
 Families inspected by selectmen, . . . . . 223  
 Fast days to be appointed, . . . . . 18  
 labor and sports on those days prohibited, . . . . . 258  
 Fees of clerk, . . . . . 85, 86  
 of messenger, or marshal, . . . . . 19, 87, 88, 204  
 of jurors, . . . . . 93, 167  
 of witnesses and constables, . . . . . 214  
 for recognizances, . . . . . 221  
 Fences to be divided between neighbors, . . . . . 255, 256  
 regulated, . . . . . 61, 116, 200, 255, 256  
 to be four feet high, . . . . . 240  
 penalty for breaking or burning, . . . . . 47, 97, 174  
 Ferry at Joanes River, . . . . . 28  
 at North River, . . . . . 28, 30  
 Fines for stopping alewives in Sandwich River, . . . . . 49  
 not having arms and ammunition, 14, 43, 44, 245  
 not bringing arms to meeting, . . . . . 67, 127, 252  
 Assistants, not serving in office, . . . . . 10  
 sawing boards out of town bounds, . . . . . 59

- Fines for selling boards for more than fixed prices, 222, 223
- burying persons killed without an inquest, . . . 235
- card playing, . . . . . 66
- constables not serving or taking oath, 64, 90, 127
- coopers making unsuitable casks, . . . 59, 60
- corrupting public officers, . . . . . 48
- Court, members leaving, . . . . . 13
- denying the Scriptures, . . . . . 64
- fences, breaking or burning of, . . . 47, 97, 174
- firing woods, . . . . . 28, 54
- forgery, . . . . . 48
- fornication, . . . . . 46
- freemen not attending Court, . . . 10, 84, 127
- Governor's not serving, . . . . . 10
- grand juror's not serving, . . . . . 43
- guns, setting them for traps, . . . . . 119
- highways, not working on them, . . . . 44
- horse racing, . . . . . 236
- horses, keeping more than one's share on  
commons, . . . . . 235
- Indians appearing at Plymouth during Court, 243
- wandering from place to place, . . . . 254
- selling them horses, boats, &c., 65, 66, 222, 229
- selling them liquors, . . . 54, 218, 219, 234, 235
- trading with them, . . . . . 32, 33
- buying their lands, . . . . . 41
- mending Indians' guns, . . . . . 43
- furnishing Indian servants with guns, . . . 58
- innholders keeping disorderly houses, 50, 222, 236, 258
- selling liquors, except to strangers, . . . 244
- insulting marshal or receiver of excise, 53, 54, 88
- selling liquors without license, . . . 52, 128, 195
- Lord's day, profaning of, . . . . . 57, 58, 224, 225
- taverners selling liquors on, . . . . . 137
- travelling on, . . . . . 100, 138, 258
- neglecting public worship, . . . . . 57, 58, 122
- lying, . . . . . 63, 84, 126, 136
- military officers neglecting duty, . . . . 50
- soldiers, absence from training, . . . 137, 139, 185
- disposing of trooping horse, . . . . . 185
- millers not having sealed toll dishes, . . . 47
- marshal, not obeying him, . . . . . 119
- not taking oath of fidelity, . . . . . 68, 129, 138
- not recording marriages, births, and burials, . . 53
- not ringing swine, . . . . . 15, 27
- pound breach, . . . . . 200
- Quakers, attending their meetings, . . . . 101
- harboring them, . . . . . 68, 127
- altering records, . . . . . 48
- removing landmarks, . . . . . 47
- residing here without leave, . . . . . 248
- smoking on Sabbath, . . . . . 224, 225
- in streets, &c., . . . . . 27, 36, 52
- sealers of leather, neglect of duty, . . . . 249
- Fines, selectmen not taking oath of office, . . . 252
- selectmen not serving, . . . . . 227
- servants embezzling goods, . . . . . 47, 48
- shooting in night, . . . . . 26
- swearing, . . . . . 33
- tar, making more than allowed by law, 214, 215
- towns, not choosing deputies, . . . . . 54, 92
- not choosing selectmen, . . . . . 217
- not renewing bounds, . . . . . 259, 260
- not having stock of arms, . . . . . 51
- not having brands for horses, . . . . . 123
- not having wolf traps, . . . . . 214
- vilifying ministry, . . . . . 57
- selling by unsealed weights and measures, 47, 49, 50
- wearing visors, . . . . . 48
- witnesses refusing to attend Court, . . . . 251
- how levied, . . . . . 119, 220, 221
- how appropriated, . . . . . 42, 89, 166
- collected by Treasurer's warrant to constables, . . . . . 67, 83, 88, 160
- how collected of towns, . . . . . 121, 166
- not to be levied before conviction, . . . . 219
- payment to be secured, . . . . . 214
- paid in current country pay, or silver money, 63, 223, 247
- Finney, John, . . . . . 133
- Fire, alarm, how given, . . . . . 26, 106
- Firing of woods prohibited, . . . 27, 28, 54, 97, 98, 174
- Fishing to be free, . . . . . 5, 16, 114, 198
- Fish, regulations for taking them, . . . . . 220
- not to be caught before they have spawned, . . 256
- six score reckoned to the hundred, 27, 114, 198
- packers to be chosen, . . . . . 60
- duty paid by foreigners fishing at Cape Cod, 131, 206
- Fishery at Cape Cod regulated, . . . . . 228, 229, 231
- Flax to be cultivated by every householder, . . . 32, 36
- Foreigners may purchase a special court, . . . 93, 171
- not to be brought here without leave, . . . 30, 108
- Forfeitures. See Crimes, Duty, Excise.
- Forestalling prohibited, . . . . . 29
- Forgery punished, . . . . . 48, 96, 175
- Form of grant of land, . . . . . 24
- Fornication punished, . . . . . 12, 46, 95, 172, 219, 229
- Fowling to be free, . . . . . 5, 16, 114, 198
- Frame of government, . . . . . 20—24, 74—78, 150—154
- Fraudulent conveyances void, . . . . . 259
- Freeman, Edmund, . . . . . 245
- Lieutenant, . . . . . 209
- Freemen's oath, . . . . . 8, 80, 156
- their admission regulated, 65, 68, 79, 155, 236
- Freemen, what persons excluded, . . . . . 177
- all required to attend Court, to make laws, &c., 10, 54, 78—81, 92, 155, 156, 170
- may vote by proxy, . . . . . 59, 80, 81, 127, 157
- fined for not attending Court, . . . . . 10, 84, 157

Freemen to send deputies to the General Court, 31, 91, 169, 170  
 they insist on maintaining their rights, . . . 186  
 Frey, Anthony, . . . . . 245

**G**ENERAL COURT, . . . . . 11  
 when held, . . . . . 41, 44, 79  
 how constituted, . . . . . 56, 57, 78, 155, 156  
 to be held at Plymouth, . . . . . 11  
 their powers, . . . . . 91—93  
 business of deputies to be first attended to, 56, 92, 170  
 General training, . . . . . 137, 185, 208, 220, 224  
 Government to be held at Plymouth, . . . . . 11, 13  
 House, (formerly Governor Prence's,) sold, . . . 239  
 of families attended to, . . . . . 223  
 Governor and Assistants chosen, . . . . . 7, 80, 156  
 to try causes under 40s., . . . . . 12, 83, 158  
 Governor, his power and duty, . . . . . 7, 10, 81, 158  
 his oath, . . . . . 8, 82, 159  
 fine for not serving, . . . . . 10  
 his salary, . . . . . 33, 212  
 his guard, . . . . . 27, 44, 240  
 Grand Jury, their powers, . . . . . 11, 18, 90, 91, 167, 168  
 their oath, . . . . . 85, 169  
 fined for not serving . . . . . 43, 120, 169  
 to be chosen, . . . . . 157  
 paid by towns, . . . . . 121, 168  
 day to attend Court, . . . . . 124, 168  
 to inspect weights, &c., . . . . . 54, 91  
 complaints to them to be on oath, 11, 37, 93, 168  
 Grants of land restricted, . . . . . 55  
 form of, . . . . . 24  
 Greens Harbor, . . . . . 34  
 cut enlarged, . . . . . 25  
 made a township, . . . . . 37  
 See Marshfield.  
 Guns allowed for military service, . . . . . 41, 180, 245  
 not to be set as traps, . . . . . 230

**H**ALBERTS to be provided by towns, . . . 105  
 Harlow, William, . . . . . 187  
 Sergeant, . . . . . 244  
 Hatch, William, to train Scituate inhabitants, . . . 31  
 Hatherley, Timothy, . . . . . 25, 55  
 Harvey, William, . . . . . 133  
 Haward, John, . . . . . 244  
 John, Jun., . . . . . 133  
 Hawes, John, . . . . . 245  
 Mr., . . . . . 187  
 Herding cattle regulated, . . . . . 16, 117, 200

Herring wears, . . . . . 34  
 Hides, exportation prohibited, . . . . . 119  
 law repealed, . . . . . 124  
 Highways to be laid out, . . . . . 11, 112, 122, 194  
 to be forty feet wide, . . . . . 221  
 repaired by inhabitants, . . . . . 44, 45, 56, 112, 194  
 surveyor's duty, . . . . . 44, 45, 112, 219  
 Hinckley, Thomas, . . . . . 239  
 to keep courts among the Indians, . . . . . 239  
 Mr., . . . . . 230, 243  
 History of God's dispensation towards New Eng-  
 land, printed by contribution, . . . . . 220  
 Holidays, . . . . . 18  
 Holmes, Lieutenant, . . . . . 31  
 Hopkins, Stephen, . . . . . 25  
 Mr., . . . . . 25  
 Horses provided for military service, . . . . . 68  
 impressed, . . . . . 44, 106, 178, 182  
 to have brandmarks, . . . . . 117, 123, 124, 200  
 forfeited to the country, . . . . . 222  
 those forfeited to the country disposed of, . . . 122  
 not to be driven out of town without own-  
 er's consent, . . . . . 218  
 strays not to be taken up at certain seasons, 256,  
 257  
 none to keep more than three on the com-  
 mons, . . . . . 235  
 when no proof of ownership is made, to be-  
 long to the country, . . . . . 202  
 trespassing, may be killed, . . . . . 235  
 trespassing, &c., this law repealed, . . . . . 256  
 law for improving breed, . . . . . 225  
 racing prohibited, . . . . . 236  
 House of correction, . . . . . 120, 126, 203, 204  
 Housekeepers to be provided with arms, 17, 105, 181  
 to be approved by the Governor, . . . . . 17, 108, 191  
 Howland, John, . . . . . 5  
 Huckens, Mr., . . . . . 244  
 Hunt, Lieutenant, . . . . . 187, 209  
 Hunting to be free, . . . . . 5, 16, 114, 198

**I**DLENESS prohibited and punished, 32, 90, 91,  
 144, 168  
 Impounding cattle, 15, 17, 65, 116, 117, 202, 203, 236,  
 239, 240  
 Impressment of soldiers and horses, 13, 44, 106, 178,  
 182  
 of messengers, . . . . . 121, 206  
 of tradesmen, . . . . . 88, 164, 258  
 Indian name, Kanetaquet, (Connecticut,) . . . . . 55  
 Indians, penalty for buying their lands, 41, 183, 185, 222  
 penalty for receiving land of them by gift, 129, 183  
 trading with them prohibited, . . . . . 33, 65, 184, 246

Indians, penalty for selling them liquors, powder, &c., . . . 54, 184, 185, 218, 234, 235, 256  
 penalty for selling them guns, &c., 32, 242, 243  
 penalty for lending them guns, . . . . . 240  
 penalty for mending their guns, . . . . . 43  
 penalty for furnishing Indian servants with guns, . . . . . 58, 59, 185, 242  
 law against selling them powder repealed, 215, 225, 237  
 law against selling them powder revived, . . 219  
 persons may be licensed to sell them powder, 250  
 penalty for furnishing them with money, . . 244  
 horses may be sold to them, . . . . . 221  
 horses may not be sold to them, . . . . . 229  
 penalty for selling them mares, . . . . . 222  
 none to buy goods of them, . . . . . 259  
 not to be trusted, . . . . . 259  
 prohibited from using horses, &c., belonging to the English, . . . . . 219  
 prohibited from discharging guns at night or on the Sabbath, . . . . . 66, 184  
 paid for killing wolves, 58, 63, 117, 131, 140, 206, 209  
 forbidden to bear arms, . . . . . 242  
 their bounds to be settled, . . . . . 220  
 their planting grounds to be fenced, . . 143, 213  
 assisted in fencing, . . . . . 219  
 foreign, excluded from the colony, . . 128, 183  
 captives sold out of the colony, . . . . . 242  
 several captives permitted to remain, . . . 242  
 forbidden to come to Plymouth during Court, 244  
 not allowed to mark their swine, . . . . . 218  
 trespasses on their grounds prevented, 123, 137—140, 202, 208, 209  
 punished for drunkenness, 140, 209, 234, 235, 253, 254  
 liquors found with them to be seized, 140, 209, 215  
 days of Court assigned for their affairs, . . 235  
 disputes among them settled by selectmen, 227, 228  
 trial of their actions, how conducted, . . . 236  
 overseers of them appointed, . . . . . 252—255  
 tithingmen and constables, . . . . . 253  
 measures taken to civilize them, . . . . . 239  
 Courts established among them, . . . . . 239  
 forbidden to work on the Lord's day, . . . 60  
 not allowed to course or take up horses, . . 201  
 to be rated, . . . . . 253  
 subject to punishment for crimes, . . . 253, 254  
 their arms seized, . . . . . 254  
 hunting regulated, . . . . . 254  
 idleness and vagrancy prohibited, . . . . 254  
 overseers and constables to be paid for services, . . . . . 254  
 required to give up runaway servants, . . . 255

Indians, Governor to have the superintendence of them, . . . . . 255  
 youths living idly bound out, . . . . . 237  
 sold for stealing, . . . . . 237  
 their claim to lands, how prosecuted, . . 237, 238  
 bound to pay their debts in work, . . . 234, 237  
 taking pawns of them prohibited, . . . . 234  
 order concerning persons who have given money to, insinuating that they have been wronged, . . . . . 124  
 Inhabitants, list of males between sixteen and sixty years old to be taken, . . . . . 241  
 three months' residence required to gain a settlement, . . . . . 40, 44, 111, 193  
 none admitted till approved by Governor or Assistants, . . . 26, 109, 118, 191, 204, 248  
 law for warning out, . . . . . 248  
 Inheritance of real estate, . . . . . 187  
 Inns, regulated, 137, 195—197, 207, 222, 234, 244, 258  
 See Ordinaries.  
 Irish required to bear arms and train, . . 65, 106, 182  
 Iron, exported, duty on, . . . . . 132  
 Iron-bound bushel of Massachusetts to be the standard for Plymouth, . . . . . 49

**J**AMES I., . . . . . 21  
 Jenkins, Edward, . . . . . 187  
 Jenney, Jenny, John, and others, their corn seized, 25  
 allowed to erect a mill at Plymouth, . . . 26  
 Joanes River, bridge over, . . . . . 28  
 Joint tenancy, law against, . . . . . 42, 189  
 Judges, not to sit when related to either party, . 257  
 Jury, not necessary for small causes, . . . . 128  
 one juror from each town, . . . . . 131  
 trial by, established, . . . . . 3, 12, 93, 167  
 persons required to serve, . . . 11, 90, 167, 168  
 their fees, . . . . . 43, 93, 167

**K**ANETEQUET. See Connecticut.  
 Kennebeck, Kenebeck, Kenebecke, Kenebeke, Kenebekike, Kennebecke, Kenebekicke, . . . . . 21, 152  
 sale of, confirmed, . . . . . 137, 208  
 Keyne, Keine, Robert, . . . . . 23, 153

**L**ABORERS' wages fixed at 18d. a day, . . . 30  
 Ladders to be owned by each householder, 26, 54, 91

Lands, divided, . . . . . 4  
 reservation for purchasers and children, . . . 16  
 original allotments surrendered, . . . . . 14  
 unimproved lots surrendered, . . . . . 18  
 held in partnership not to go to survivors, 42, 189  
 to be recorded, in order to give a title, . 63, 189  
 commissions to purchase, revoked, . . . . . 214  
 grants of, restricted, . . . . . 220  
 out of town bounds, how rated, . . . . . 223  
 bounds of every inhabitant to be settled, . . 188  
 penalty for removing landmarks, . . . . . 47, 97  
 in Plymouth, granted by Governor and As-  
 sistants, . . . . . 35  
 by what tenure held, . . . . . 21  
 Laws, preamble to, . . . . . 6, 72, 148  
 must be made by the freemen, 6, 11, 78—81, 154  
 to be revised, compiled, and printed, 230, 234,  
 235  
 each town to have them, . . . . . 121, 140, 209  
 proposition to repeal those of 1657 and 1658, 122  
 Leather, to be searched and sealed, . . . . . 249  
 Lecture days, innholders to clear their houses of  
 guests during divine service, . . . . . 258  
 Lettice, Thomas, . . . . . 222  
 Liars disfranchised, . . . . . 101, 177  
 Limitation of actions to recover lands, . . . 225, 226  
 for hook debts, . . . . . 48, 49  
 Liquors, penalty for selling without license, 128, 218,  
 244  
 penalty for selling to children or servants, . 195  
 for selling on Lord's day, . . . . . 137, 207  
 laws to prevent smuggling, 135, 136, 195, 196, 258  
 excise on, . . . . . 131, 136, 186, 207, 215  
 tax on licenses, . . . . . 222  
 price fixed, . . . . . 124, 195  
 importation regulated, . . . . . 224  
 Little, Ephraim, . . . . . 244  
 London gauge, cask to be made according to, . . 116  
 Lord's day, penalty for profaning it, . 57, 99, 100, 176  
 penalty for neglecting public worship, . . . 122  
 for travelling, . . . 100, 137, 139, 177, 209, 258  
 for setting up meetings, . . . . . 209  
 for selling liquors on, . . . . . 137, 207, 236  
 for playing or sleeping in meeting, 214, 224,  
 225  
 persons compelled to attend meeting, 217, 218,  
 228  
 arms to be brought to meeting, 38, 67, 68, 106,  
 107, 127, 128, 245, 252  
 none to travel without a permit, . . . . . 258  
 Indians not allowed to work, . . . . . 60, 184  
 Loythorp, Barnabas, . . . . . 244  
 Lying punished, . . . . . 63, 95, 96, 128, 138, 173  
 order about, repealed, . . . . . 128

**M**ACKEREL fishery regulated, . . . 228, 229, 233  
 Magistrates chosen by freemen, . . . . . 58  
 to try small causes, . . . . . 12, 83, 143, 158, 213  
 exempt from rates, . . . . . 122  
 taxed, . . . . . 218  
 table, . . . . . 58, 212  
 See Assistants.  
 Major's commission and instructions, 102, 103, 178, 179  
 Mannamoiett annexed to Eastham, . . . . . 237  
 Markets and fairs, . . . . . 32  
 Marriages regulated, . . . 13, 29, 52, 53, 103, 190, 191  
 births, and deaths to be recorded, . . . 52, 53, 189  
 Marshal, messenger to be styled, . . . . . 45  
 office, oath, and salary, 53, 86, 87, 162—164, 204  
 penalty for insulting him, . . . . . 53, 88, 164  
 his power in levying executions and fines, 45, 46,  
 119, 171  
 fees for collecting fines, . . . . . 53, 163  
 wages, law repealed, . . . . . 122  
 Barlow ordered to apprehend Quakers, . . . 130  
 Marshfield, 31, 37, 38, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202,  
 245  
 cut enlarged, . . . . . 25  
 made a township, . . . . . 37  
 to have two constables, . . . . . 42  
 Masks, penalty for wearing them, . . . . . 48, 96, 97  
 Massachusetts and Plymouth Commissioners ap-  
 pointed to settle bounds between, . . . . . 34  
 General Court, message to be sent to, in rela-  
 tion to fishing, . . . . . 220, 228, 229  
 Massasoiett, Massassowat, alias Woosamequin, 74, 150  
 gives lands to the English, . . . . . 20, 146  
 Masters of boats not to bring in foreigners with-  
 out leave of government, . . . . . 30, 108  
 Mattacheese, or Yarmouth, . . . . . 28  
 Measures, standard of, . . . 46, 47, 61, 115, 195, 198  
 sealers of, . . . . . 61, 115, 134, 198, 199  
 Meat, packers to be chosen, . . . . . 60  
 Meeting house in each town, . . . . . 240, 247, 248  
 Merchants, their accounts admitted as evidence, . 255  
 Messenger, styled marshal, . . . . . 45  
 Messenger's oath, duty, salary, and fees, . . 18, 19, 35  
 impressed for public service, . . . . . 121  
 Middleborough and Bridgewater line to be run, . 241  
 Military instructions given to inhabitants, . . . 30, 31  
 officers to be approved by Court, . . . 50, 103, 179  
 penalty for resigning, . . . . . 50, 103, 179  
 for not training their men, . . . . . 103  
 troopers fined for absence from general train-  
 ing, . . . . . 185  
 soldiers fined for absence, . . . . . 137, 139, 208  
 discipline established, 38, 39, 43, 44, 103, 104,  
 179, 180  
 foreigners required to train, . . . . . 65, 106, 182  
 six trainings in a year, . . . . . 36, 104, 180  
 four trainings in a year, . . . . . 245, 246

- Military, firing at marks, . . . . . 245  
 minors or servants not to vote, . . . . . 219  
 horses to be provided, . . . . . 68  
 towns to provide pikes, . . . . . 127, 181, 183  
 attention paid to choice of officers, . . . . . 251  
 soldiers to have swords or cutlasses, . . . . . 251  
 soldiers to have arms and ammunition, . . . . . 245  
 See Arms.  
 matchlocks not allowed for service, . . . . . 245  
 privileges of officers serving in Indian wars, . . . . . 245  
 persons exempt from service, . . . . . 223  
 inspectors of towns' arms, &c., . . . . . 49, 180  
 oath and duty of clerk, 105, 106, 142, 181,  
 211  
 orders to prepare for war, . . . . . 232  
 troopers not allowed to dispose of their  
 horses, . . . . . 185  
 general muster, no business by sea or land to  
 excuse non-appearance thereat, . . . . . 185  
 fine for non-appearance at general trainings, . . . . . 185  
 Mill at Plymouth, . . . . . 26  
 at Scituate, . . . . . 30  
 Millers' toll regulated, . . . . . 26, 30, 116, 199  
 to have scales and weights, . . . . . 41  
 to have sealed toll dishes, . . . . . 47, 116, 199  
 Mines, regulations about, . . . . . 37  
 Ministers, towns required to raise money for their  
 support, . . . . . 64, 67, 98, 175, 224, 226  
 part of profits of whales to be set apart for  
 them, . . . . . 135, 207, 208  
 provision for them in small settlements, . . . . . 247  
 for them in new plantations, . . . . . 140, 141,  
 210, 226, 227  
 penalty for defaming them, . . . . . 57, 97, 176  
 Morton, John, . . . . . 133, 187  
 Nathaniel, . . . . . 73, 149  
 Lieutenant, . . . . . 239, 241  
 Morton's Hole, . . . . . 34  
 Mount Hope, lands at, not to be bought of the In-  
 dians, . . . . . 221  
 to be sold, . . . . . 243  
 Murder to be punished with death, . . . . . 12, 94, 172
- N**ARAGANSETT, Naragunsett River, . . . . . 21  
 Nawsett, called Eastham, . . . . . 59  
 Navigation acts, Governor sworn to observe  
 them, . . . . . 159  
 Nequamkicke [Naumkeag] Falls, . . . . . 152  
 Newman, Samuel, . . . . . 244  
 New England, History of God's Dispensations to-  
 wards, to be printed, . . . . . 220  
 New Plymouth, Indian name Apaum, alias Pa-  
 tuxet, . . . . . 20
- New Plymouth, see Plymouth.  
 North River Ferry, . . . . . 28, 30  
 Nuncupative wills, . . . . . 195
- O**ATHS, administered to all public officers, . . . . . 249  
 form of, 8—10, 19, 56, 80, 82—88, 105, 107,  
 109, 133, 181, 187, 190, 198, 217  
 Oath of allegiance and fidelity to be taken, 9, 12, 29,  
 43, 68, 101, 109, 122, 129, 138, 177, 178,  
 191, 192, 248.  
 list made of persons sworn, . . . . . 248  
 of freemen, . . . . . 8, 80, 156  
 Offences, capital, . . . . . 12, 94, 95, 172  
 criminal, . . . . . 12, 18, 46—48, 95, 172  
 Officers of government, . . . . . 7—11, 18, 19, 80, 81, 156  
 how paid, . . . . . 60, 62, 87, 88, 164  
 Old comers, see Purchasers.  
 Old pathways to be still allowed, . . . . . 4  
 Ordinaries regulated, 31, 50, 113, 195—197, 236, 244,  
 258  
 keepers to pay excise on liquors, . . . . . 131, 136, 207  
 Orthodox persons, Court advised to admit none  
 others to be inhabitants, . . . . . 248  
 Overseers of the poor, . . . . . 111, 120, 194  
 of Indians, . . . . . 253—255  
 Oysters, exported, duty on, . . . . . 132
- P**ACKERS of fish and meat in each town, 116, 229  
 Paddy, William, Treasurer, . . . . . 37  
 Paine, Thomas, water bailiff, . . . . . 228  
 Palmer, William, . . . . . 31  
 Paomitt annexed to Eastham, . . . . . 237  
 Partrich, George, . . . . . 133  
 Patent, application to the King to confirm it, . . . . . 186  
 Patuxett, alias Apaum, the Indian name of Plym-  
 outh, . . . . . 151  
 Paybody, Payboddy, William, . . . . . 241  
 requested by the General Court to attend  
 Quaker meetings, . . . . . 130  
 Peas, exportation of prohibited, . . . . . 4  
 Peirce, Peirse, John, . . . . . 23, 77, 153  
 commissions granted to, by the Council for  
 New England, . . . . . 21  
 Physicians and others, having foreigners under  
 their care, bound to secure towns from  
 their support, . . . . . 40, 110, 111, 193  
 Plantations, their settlement regulated, 210, 226, 227  
 provision by them for support of ministry, 140, 141  
 Plymouth, 14, 18, 31, 37, 38, 91, 107, 124, 133, 182,  
 187, 202, 220, 221, 222, 244



Plymouth to be the seat of government, 11, 78, 154  
 to make by-laws and dispose of lands, . . . 18, 25  
 to send but two deputies to General Court, . . . 55  
 original allotments surrendered, . . . . . 14  
 mill, . . . . . 26  
 wear, . . . . . 14  
 and Massachusetts, commissioners appointed  
     to set bounds between, . . . . . 34  
 Pocasset to be sold, . . . . . 243  
 Pocock, John, . . . . . 23, 153  
 Pokenacutt, Puckenkick, alias Sawaamset, . . . . 21  
 Poole, Captain, to train inhabitants of Cohannet, . . 31  
 Poor persons provided for, 40, 41, 111, 112, 192—194  
     children bound out, . . . . . 38, 120, 193, 194  
 Pounds in each constablerick, . . . . . 16, 116, 123, 200  
 Pound, breach punished, . . . . . 200  
     keepers' fees, . . . . . 200  
 Powder and lead, each town to provide a barrel, 38,  
     105, 181  
 Pratt, Jonathan, sworn as under marshal, . . . . 164  
     Joshua, . . . . . 5, 38  
 Prence, Thomas, . . . . . 25, 35, 56, 79, 155, 230  
     Governor, his salary, . . . . . 239  
     his house to be surrendered, . . . . . 212  
 Presentments to grand jury to be on oath, 37, 93, 168  
 Prison erected at Plymouth, . . . . . 35, 94, 171  
 Prisons, persons impressed to repair them, . . . . 258  
 Prisoners' allowance, . . . . . 52, 94, 171  
 Profligate persons punished, . . . . . 143, 144, 206  
 Proxies of freemen, . . . . . 81, 157  
 Public meetings not to be set up unless approved  
     of by the Court, . . . . . 177  
 Purchasers or old comers, treaty with . . . . 34, 35  
     land granted them, . . . . . 16, 34, 35, 60

**Q**UAKERS to be apprehended and banished, 100,  
     101, 129  
     disfranchised, . . . . . 101, 177  
     to be imprisoned, . . . . . 125, 126, 205  
     to be sent to House of Correction, . . . . . 120  
     to be whipped, . . . . . 129  
     to be put in stocks or cage, . . . . . 125  
     books to be seized, . . . . . 121, 205  
     their horses to be seized, . . . . . 126, 205  
     committee sent to reclaim them, . . . . . 124, 130  
     proposals made to them to remove, . . . . . 122  
     penalty for attending their meetings, . . . . . 101, 125  
     penalty for harboring or encouraging them, 68,  
         100, 101, 121, 125, 127, 130, 177, 205  
     fines no longer exacted of them, . . . . . 129, 206  
 Quest, see Grand Jury.

**R**APE, punished with death, . . . . . 12, 95, 172  
     Raters to be chosen, and their powers, 42, 89,  
         166  
 Rates, payment enforced, 42, 89, 166, 215, 216, 219, 220  
     on what property assessed, . . . . . 142, 211  
     list taken of ratable estates, . . . . . 241  
     assessed on unimproved lands, . . . . . 142, 223  
     apportioned on the several towns, . . . . . 37  
 Receivers of excise freed from their office, . . . . 218  
 Recognizances, fees for, . . . . . 221  
 Record of sales of land, . . . . . 12, 52, 187, 188, 216, 233  
     of marriages, births, and deaths, . . . . . 52, 53  
 Records, penalty for altering them, . . . . . 48, 98, 175  
     penalty for corrupting the keepers, . . . . . 48, 98, 175  
 Regrating, law against, . . . . . 29  
 Rehoboth, 89, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202, 222, 245  
     made a township, . . . . . 46  
     privileges granted to, . . . . . 55  
 Religious worship, penalty for neglecting, 58, 64, 99,  
     100, 176  
     penalty for assembling in illegal meetings, 58, 100,  
         101, 176  
 Rexham, called Marshfield, . . . . . 37  
 Retailers not to sell liquors without license, 17, 50,  
     195  
     to keep good order, &c., . . . . . 50, 113, 114, 222  
     to pay tax for licenses, . . . . . 222  
     to pay excise on liquors, . . . . . 51, 131, 136, 207  
 Rhode Island, letter sent to, . . . . . 186  
 Ringe, Andrew, . . . . . 244

**S**ACONEESETT advised to procure a minis-  
     ter, . . . . . 141, 210  
 Sales of lands acknowledged and recorded, 12, 52, 187,  
     188, 216, 233  
 Sandwich, 31, 37, 38, 41, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202,  
     222, 245  
     advised to procure a minister, . . . . . 141, 210  
     River, alewives not to be stopped, . . . . . 49  
     and Yarmouth to build a bridge, . . . . . 28  
 Satucket annexed to Eastham, . . . . . 237  
 Schools in each town, . . . . . 142, 211  
     profits of Cape Cod fishery appropriated for, 233,  
         237  
     provision for grammar school, . . . . . 246, 247  
 Scituate, 37, 38, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202, 222, 245  
     privileges granted to, . . . . . 18  
     plantation granted to, . . . . . 25  
     required to make a rate, . . . . . 55  
     to have two constables, . . . . . 38  
     miller's toll, . . . . . 3  
     to build a bridge over the South River, . . . . 28  
 Scots residing here required to train, . . . . . 65, 106, 182

- Scriptures, denial of, punished, . . . . 64, 98, 175  
 Seacunc, called Rehoboth, . . . . . 46  
 Secretary to be chosen and sworn, . . . . 7, 249  
     See Clerk.  
 Selectmen to be chosen and sworn, 143, 213, 217, 227,  
     252  
     their courts and jurisdiction, 217, 223, 227, 238,  
         246, 251  
     to settle disputes between English and In-  
         dians, . . . . . 227, 228  
     to regulate families, . . . . . 223  
     to prosecute intruders into towns, . . . . 217  
     to compel persons to attend meeting, 217, 218,  
         228  
 Servants required to serve out their time, 33, 108,  
     191  
     punished for embezzling goods, . 47, 48, 96, 173  
     not to be housekeepers till provided with arms, 17,  
         108, 191  
     land granted to, . . . . . 17, 188  
 Sheep, exportation of prohibited, . . . . . 14  
 - Sherley, James, . . . . . 23, 153  
 Shipwreck, relief afforded to sufferers, . . . . 257  
 Shooting in night prohibited, . . . . . 26, 104  
 Showamett, sold for relief of soldiers, . . . . 243  
 Skiffe, James, . . . . . 187  
 Smith, Francis, . . . . . 187  
     Ralph, . . . . . 6  
 Smiths required to repair arms, . . . . 40, 107, 182  
 Smoking in streets or on Sabbath forbidden, 27, 36, 53,  
     224, 225  
 Soldiers fined for want of arms, . . 43, 44, 104, 180  
     impressed, . . . . . 13  
     those wounded to be maintained, . . . . 106, 182  
 Soule, George, . . . . . 56, 79, 155  
 South River, . . . . . 28, 42  
     Bridge, . . . . . 28  
 Souther, Nathaniel, his salary as elerk, . . . . 35  
 Southworth, Constant, . 56, 79, 155, 239—241, 243  
     requested by the General Court to attend  
         Quaker meetings, . . . . . 130  
 Sowamsett, Sawaamsett, . . . . . 21, 182  
 Standard of weights and measures, . 13, 61, 115, 198  
 Standish, Miles, . . . . . 55  
     Captain, . . . . . 31, 35  
 Stealing punished, . . . . . 12, 96, 173  
 Stocks in each town, . . . . . 11, 95, 172, 258  
 Strays, regulations about, . . . . . 131, 201, 202  
 Summons may be issued instead of attachment, 43,  
     94  
 Surveyors of highways to be chosen, . . . . 11, 157  
     of land, their compensation and names, . . . . 5  
     to be sworn, . . . . . 56, 189  
 Swansey, . . . . . 202, 244  
 Swearers disfranchised, . . . . . 177  
 Swearing punished, . . . . . 33, 95, 101, 172, 173  
 Swift, William, . . . . . 222  
 Swine to be ringed and yoked, . . . 15, 27, 30, 257  
     of Indians not to be marked, . . . . . 218  
  
**T**AR, duty on, . . . . . 132, 134  
     size of barrels, . . . . . 236  
     regulations about making, . . . . . 214, 220  
     privilege of making, sold, . . . . . 230  
 Taunton, 37, 38, 89, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187, 202, 221,  
     222, 245  
     incorporated, . . . . . 27, 34  
 Taverns regulated, . . . . . 30, 50, 113  
     See Inns.  
 Taverner, see Victuallers.  
 Taxes, see Duties, Exeise, Rates.  
 Tayler, Richard, . . . . . 133, 187  
 Tenure of estates, . . . . . 42, 187  
     See East Greenwich.  
 Testimony to be in writing, . . . . . 130, 206  
 Thanksgiving days to be appointed, . . . . . 18  
     labor and sports forbidden, . . . . . 258  
 Thomas, Nathaniel, . . . . . 241  
     to train Marshfield inhabitants, . . . . . 31, 38  
 Thompson, John, . . . . . 241  
 Timber, exportation of prohibited, 2, 14, 119, 203, 230,  
     231  
     growing on public lands to be preserved, . . . . 14  
     cut on private lands may be exported, . . . . 233  
     cut and not used to be forfeited, . . . . . 119, 203  
 Tithingmen among Indians, their powers, . . . . 253  
 Title to lands secured and quieted, . . . . . 63, 221  
 Tobacco, importation of prohibited, . . . . . 38  
     penalty for smoking in the streets, 27, 36, 53, 97,  
         174  
     penalty for jurors smoking, . . . . . 36  
     penalty for smoking on the Sabbath, . . . . . 224, 225  
 Tobey, Thomas, . . . . . 187  
 Towns, bounds to be settled, . . . 36, 112, 194, 240  
     to renew their bounds every two or three  
         years, . . . . . 259  
     every inhabitant's land to be bounded, . . . . . 188  
     to make by-laws and rates, . . . . . 32, 36, 110, 192  
     fines on them, how collected, . . . . . 121, 166  
     secured from intruders, 30, 40, 41, 110, 118, 193,  
         217  
     to provide for their poor, . . . . . 41, 111, 112  
     three months' residence required to gain a  
         settlement, . . . . . 40, 44, 111, 193  
     to have a stock of arms, . . . . . 51, 105, 181  
     to have a stock of powder and lead, 38, 105, 181  
     to provide drums and halberts, . . . . . 104, 105, 181  
     to provide pikes, . . . . . 105, 127, 181, 183  
     to be fortified, . . . . . 62

- Towns, to provide book of records for lands, . . 63, 182  
 to keep a record of marriages, births, and  
 deaths, . . . . . 53, 54, 189  
 to have book of laws, . . . 121, 140, 209, 252  
 to provide wolf traps, . . . . . 38, 214  
 to have brandmarks for horses, 117, 123, 124,  
 200—202  
 to choose searchers of casks and packers of  
 meat and fish, . . . . . 60  
 to choose raters, . . . . . 42, 89, 166  
 to send deputies to the General Court, 31, 54, 79,  
 80, 91, 92, 155, 156, 169, 170  
 to choose selectmen, . . . . . 143, 213  
 to provide schools, . . . . . 142, 211  
 to support ministers, . . . 67, 96, 97, 175, 176  
 to build meeting houses, . . . 240, 247, 248  
 requested to contribute for college, . . . 232, 233  
 allowance to, for raising a troop of horse, . . 122  
 council, . . . . . 251  
 clerk, his duty and oath, . . . 52, 107, 189, 190  
 meetings, how warned, . . . . . 36, 88, 165  
 none to vote but freeholders, . . . . . 223  
 Trade, treaty with owners of, . . . 25, 26, 33—35  
 Tradesmen prohibited from working for foreigners, 4  
 impressed for public service, . . . . . 88  
 Traps not to be set near highways, . . . . . 17  
 Treason punished with death, . . . . . 12, 94, 172  
 Treasurer to be chosen and sworn, 7, 83, 84, 157, 160,  
 161  
 may issue warrants for fines, . . . . . 67  
 his duty in collecting public debts, . . . 63, 160  
 his accounts to be recorded, . . . . . 44, 84, 160  
 accounts of, towns may choose auditors, 142, 211  
 William Paddy, . . . . . 37  
 Trespasses by cattle prohibited, 15, 200, 202, 208, 209,  
 239, 240  
 on colony lands prevented, . . . . . 186  
 Trial by jury, . . . . . 3, 12  
 Trials by jury to be in October or March, . . . 128  
 Troop of horse in Duxbury, order relating to, . . 126  
 to be raised, . . . . . 68, 107, 182  
 its regulations, . . . . . 232, 238  
 privileges of members, . . 137, 139, 182, 208, 223  
 members fined for neglect of duty, . . . . . 185  
 disbanded, . . . . . 240  
 Tupper, Thomas, . . . . . 245  
 Turner, John, Jun., . . . . . 133
- U**NDER MARSHAL, his oath and salary, 87,  
 122, 123, 127, 163, 164  
 United Colonies, confederation to be continued, . . 230
- V**AGABONDS punished, . . . . . 206  
 Valuation ordered, . . . . . 241  
 Valuation, how taken, . . . . . 42, 89  
 See Rates.  
 Vassall, William, to train inhabitants of Scituate, 31  
 Victuallers not to harbor children or servants, 17, 113,  
 195, 197  
 Vizors, wearing of prohibited, . . . 48, 96, 97, 173  
 Voters in town meetings must be freeholders, . . 223  
 required to take the oath of fidelity, . . . 248
- W**ADE, THOMAS, . . . . . 245  
 Wadsworth, Christopher, . . . . . 6, 25  
 John, . . . . . 244  
 Walker, James, . . . . . 187, 245  
 William, . . . . . 187, 244  
 Walley, Mr., . . . . . 230  
 Wampampage not to be received as money, . . 57, 128  
 War not to be declared without consent of freemen, 13  
 preparations for, . . . . . 232  
 Warrants to issue in the name of his Majesty, 10, 80,  
 81, 129, 156  
 Warwick, Robert, Earl of, . . . . . 75, 151  
 signs the Charter of New Plymouth, . . . . . 20  
 Watch established, . . . . . 27, 43, 106, 180  
 Water bailiffs, . . . . . 228, 250  
 Watson, George, . . . . . 25  
 Way to the water to be allowed to every man, . . 4  
 Ways laid out and established, . . . 5, 11, 112, 194  
 Wear at Plymouth, . . . . . 14  
 in Jones and other rivers, . . . . . 34  
 Wearing of vizors prohibited, . . . 48, 96, 97, 173  
 Weights and measures, standard of, 12, 38, 46, 47,  
 115, 198  
 penalty for selling by those unsealed, . . . 199  
 Whales, duty on, 61, 66, 114, 132—134, 136, 207, 208  
 Whipping post in each town, . . . . . 11, 95, 172, 258  
 Widows' thirds, . . . . . 13, 133, 188  
 Wilbore, Joseph, . . . . . 245  
 Willet, Willett, Hezekiah, murdered by Indians, . 242  
 Thomas, . . . . . 25, 26  
 Willis, John, . . . . . 187  
 Jonathan, . . . . . 41  
 Wills to be proved, . . . . . 15, 112, 195  
 nuncupative, . . . . . 46, 113, 195  
 Wine, excise on, . . . . . 51  
 law to prevent smuggling, . . . . . 135, 137  
 retailing regulated, . . . 64, 113, 114, 198, 244  
 or strong waters, any person allowed to sell  
 in case of sickness, . . . . . 114  
 See Liquors, Retailers.  
 Winslow, Winslowe, Wynslow, Edward, 5, 20, 23—  
 25, 56, 74, 146, 155, 230

- Winslow, Edward, commissioner for setting the  
bounds between Plymouth and Massa-  
chusetts, . . . . . 34
- Winslowe, [Winslow,] John, . . . . . 25, 26  
Josiah, . . . . . 56, 79, 155, 230
- Witchcraft punished with death, . . . . 12, 95, 172
- Witnesses, two necessary for a conviction, 93, 168, 229  
required to attend Selectmen's Courts, . . 251  
their fees, . . . . . 214, 258
- Wives to acknowledge sales of land, . . . 52, 188
- Wolf traps in each town, . . . . . 38, 214
- Wolves, bounty for killing, 17, 58, 63, 117, 131, 140,  
206, 209, 234
- Woods, firing them prohibited, . . . 28, 97, 98, 174
- Woosamequin, alias Massasoiett, . . . . 20, 74
- Writs, to issue in the name of his Majesty, 80, 81,  
129, 156  
not abated for trifling errors, . . . . . 224  
summons may be issued, . . . . . 43, 94, 171
- Y**ARMOUTH, 31, 37, 38, 107, 124, 133, 182, 187,  
202, 221, 245  
Yarmouth and Sandwich to build a bridge, . . . 28













